00035401

00035401

Digitized with financial assistance from

H T Parekh
FOUNDATION

An Initiative by
HDFC
WITH YOU, RIGHT THROUGH

on 08 January, 2019

A
PLAIN AND SHORT
HISTORY OF ENGLAND,

١٥٤٠٢ ع

IN A SERIES OF LETTERS FROM A FATHER TO HIS SON:

WITH

35401
૩૫૪૦૧
ac

A SET OF QUESTIONS AT THE END OF EACH LETTER—

IN ENGLISH;

TOGETHER WITH

A GOOJRATTEE TRANSLATION.

BY

SHEREEARJEE PESTONJEE.

REVISED BY,

NOWROZJEE FURDOONJEE.

BOMBAY.

Printed at The Portugueze Press of Pregoeiro da Liberdade,
By P. P. de Souza.

1839.

Guj.d
942
Pes/Pla
35401

શ્રી• ઈંગલંડ• દેશની•
મુખતેશર• અને• શેહેલ• વારતા*

મિ• ધ્રુગીડ• પોતાનાં• છોકરા• ઉપર• કાગજ• પતરોની• મારફતે•
લખી• મોકલેલી*

તે શાથે•
હરેક• પતરની• શેવટે• કીધેલા• શવાલો•
અંગરેજી • ભાશામાં *

તેહેનાં• ગુજરાતી• ભાશાંનતર• શુધાં*

ભાશાંનતર• કરીને• છપાવનાર•
શેહરીઆરજી• પેશતંનજી*

તપાશીને• શુધારનાર*
નવરોજજી• ફરદુનજી*

શ્રી• મુંબઈ• મધે• "પરીગોઈર દા• લીબરદાદ" •નાંમનાં• પોરટુગીશ• પરેશમાં• પી• પી• દે• શોજાઈ• છાપી છે*

શને• ૧૮૩૯ ઈશાવી*

To

THE HONORABLE

SIR JAMES RIVETT CARNAC, BARONET,

GOVERNOR OF BOMBAY.

&c. &c. &c

As a token of high respect for his character, grateful regard for his laudable zeal in the cause of Education, and his benevolent and kind attachment to the Natives of this Presidency—

This History of England, together with its Goojrattee Translation—

Is, by Permission,

Most respectfully dedicated.

By

His Excellency's Most Obedient
Humble and Faithful Servants
The Authors.

નાંમદાર•શાર•જેમશ•રીવેટ•કેઆરનાક•બારોનેટ•
શ્રી•મુમબઈનાં•ગવરનર•શાહેબ•જોગ*

ʃ•નાંમદારની•મોહોટી•આબરૂને•માંન•આપવા•શારૂં•તથા•શરવ લોકોને•વીદેઆની•ફેરવણી•અપાવવા•શારૂ•ʃ•નાંમદાર•દીલશોજીથી•મેહેનત•લીધી•અને•આʃ•હુકુમતનાં•દેશમાં•વશનારા•ગાંમડીઆને ʃ•નાંમદાર•મેહેરબાંનગીથી•અને•માઆલુપણાંથી•ચાહેચ•તેહેની•ઈઆદગારીને•વાશતે•આʃ•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડ•દેશની•વારતા•તથા•તેહેનુ ગુજરાતી•ભાશાંનતર•ʃ•નાંમદારની•રજામંદીથી•નજર•કીધુછે•

ʃ•નાંમદારનાં•મોહોટી•નમનતાઈ•ભરેલા•
આધીન•અને•વીશવાશીક•શેવકો•
ʃ•પુશતકનાં•બનાવનારાઓ•ʃ*

PREFACE.

A small work on History, written in a plain and simple style in English, together with a Goojrattee version adapted to the wants of the young Natives of this Presidency, who are engaged in studying the English Language and Literature, has long been felt a great desideratum in the Seminaries of Learning here, and has even impeded, in some degree, the progress of those Native youths who are not qualified to comprehend difficult works, without the help of a Translation in their own vernacular tongue. To supply this deficiency, in part, the Translation of a " Plain and short History of England " by the Editor of the Cottager's Monthly Visitor, printed in London in 1835, is now offered to the Public along with the Original.

We entered upon this undertaking with the view of benefiting our Countrymen, facilitating their progress in the acquisition of English, and, at the same time, of giving them a brief outline of the History of the Rise and Progress of a Nation, that, at present, rules the destinies of India.

The Translation is compiled with great care, and is rendered as literal as possible, in order that it may be more useful. Where a more ample explanation has been thought necessary to illustrate the English text, notes have been added or words and sentences introduced in parenthesis, that the meaning in Goojrattee be not ambiguous or defective. No alterations or omissions have been made in the original matter contained in this History.

No pains or expence have been spared to make the work acceptable to the Public; and should it meet with a kind reception, and prove a useful manual in the English Schools here, our trouble will be amply rewarded. Much attention has been paid to the printing of this History, and, it will be seen, that the best and neatest types that can be had, have been made use of. An Errata is added at the end of the work.

With regard to the accuracy of this Translation we insert the following certificate from Major General Vans Kennedy, the Oriental Translator, a gentleman well known for his superior qualifications in the Languages and Literature of the East.

" Bombay 2d. December 1839.

"I do hereby certify that Shereearjee Pestonjee has shewn "me a Goozerattee translation of a small work entitled—" a "plain and short History of England; " and that, from my "examination of it, it appears to me to be translated with much "accuracy and in a clear and idiomatical style. This transla-"tion, therefore, will, in my opinion, not only tend to facilitate "the learning of Goozerattee and English, but also to convey to "the Natives a knowledge of the principal events in English His-"tory.

(Signed) Vans Kennedy."

In conclusion we beg to offer our best acknowledgements to the worthy Members of the Bombay Government, and the respectable European and Native Gentlemen who have patronised this work, and whose names appear in the List of our Subscribers which we subjoin at the end of this little Volume.

દીબાચો*

અતરેજી•હુકુમતનાં•રેહેનારા•જવાંન•ગાંમઠીઓ•જેવો•અંગારેજી•ભાશા•તથા•વીદેઆ•શીખવાનો•અભેઆશ•કરેચ• તેવોને•ગોઠતુ•વારતાનુ•ઈક•શેહેલ•અને•આશાંન•ઈબારતમાં•લખેલું•નાંધેલું•પુશતક•અંગારેજી•ભાશામાં•તથા•તેહેનું•ગુંજરાતી•ભાશાંનતર•અતરેની•વીદેઆ•શીખવવાની•મદરેશાઓમાં• ઘણું•જ• જોઈતું• હતું—અને•જવાંન•ગાંમઠી•શીખનારાઓ•કે•જેવો•માહેવારત•અને• મુશકેલ•અંગારેજી•પુશતકોને• પોતાની• બોલીમાં•તરજુમો•થાઈઆ•વીનાં•શમજી•શખતા•નથી•ને•(ગુજરાતીની•ભાશામાં• હેવું•પુશતક• તઈઆર•નહી•થાઈઆનાં•શબબથી•)તેવોને•શીખવામાં•ઘણી• અડચણ•પડેચ*માંટે•હવેથી•હેવી•અડચંણ•કમથાઈ•ઈટલા•શારૂં•“શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશની•શેહેલ•અને•મુખતેશર•વારતા”•કે•જે•“કાટેજરશ•મંથલી•વીજીટર•” નાંમનાં પુશતકનાં•આધીપતીઈ•બનાવીને•શને• ૧૮૩૫ નાં•વરશમાં•શ્રી•લંનડંનમાં•છાપી છે•તે•આશલ•પુશતક• તેહનાં•ગુજરાતી•ભાશાંનતર•શ્રુધાં•હમો•છાપી•પરગટ•કરીઈચ*

હમારા• ગાંમઠી•દેશીઓનાં•હકમાં•ફાઈદો•થાઈ•તથા•તેવોને•અંગારેજી•બોલી•વેહેલી•તથા•આશાંનીઅતથી•આવડે•અને•વલી•(ઈંગલીશ•)લોકો•જેવો•શ્રી•હીનદોશતાંનની•હાકમી•કરેચ• તેવોની•કોમનાં•વધારાની•તથા•ઉપજ•નીપજની•વારતાનો•ટુક•શાર•હમારા• દેશીઓને•જાહેર•કરવા•શારૂં•હમોઈ•ઈ•કાંમ• માંથે•લીધું•હતું*

ઈ•પુશતકનો•તરજુમો•ઘણીજ•મેહેનત• લઈને•અશલ• (અંગારેજી•) નાં•જેહેવો• થી હોય•કે•તે• શરવ•કોઈને•વધારે• કાંમ•આવે*જેજે•જગોઈ•અંગારેજી•ઈબારતનો•માંઈનો• ઉઘાડોકરી•શમજાવાની ગરજ•પડી• તે•ઠેકાંણે•કાંઈક• નોટો•આપીચ• અથવા• વલાઈઆમાં•શબદો•તથા•વાકેઆવો•વધારેલાછે•કે•ગુજરાતીમાં• તે•ઈબારતનો• અરથ•શાફ•શમજ•પડે•અને•તે•અરથમાં•કશી•ખાંમી•રેહે• નહી* આઈ• વારતામાં•જે•કાંઈ• અશલ•લખેલી•ઈબારતછે• તેહેમાં•કશી•રીતે•ફેરફાર•કીધું•નથી•ગગવા•કાંઈ•વાત•છોડી પણ•દીધી•નથી*

એ•પુશતક•શઘળાવોને•લાએક•થાએ•એટલા•શારું•હેમાં• શરવે• વાતે•મેહેનત•લીધામાં•અથવા•ખરચ•કીધામાં•કશી•પાંતીની•ખાંમી• રાખી નથી• અને• અગારજો•એ•પુશતક•શરવ• કોઈને• પશંદ•પડશે• અને•અતરેની• અંગરેજી•નીશાલોમાં•કાંમ• આવશે તો• હમારી• મેહેનતનો• બદલો•હમને•પુરો•મલશે*એ•વારતા•છપાવવામાં•ઘણીજ•મેહેનત• લીધીય•અને• જે•કાંઈ•શરવેથી•શારા•અને•શફાઈદાર• ટીબાં• મલી•શકેઆં તેથી•છાપીછે*એ•પુશતકને•છેડે•શૂધ• અશુધની•એક•ટીપ•દાખલકીધીછે*•

એ•પુશતકનું•ભાશાંનતર શીરીતે•બરોબર•અને•ખરેખરું•કીધુંય•તેહેની•શાખશીને•વાશતે• મેજર• જેનરલ•વાંનશ• કેનેડી• જે• શાહેબ•પુરવ•દેશની•ભાશાઓનો•તરજુમો•કરનારછે•અને• જે•ઉગમંણપરાંતની• બોલીઓમાં•તથા•વીદેઆમાં•મોહોટી• કાબેલીઅતને•લીધે વખાણાએ લોછે•તે•શાહેબની• આપેલી•શરટીફીકેટ•હમો•હેઠલ• પરગટ•કરીએ*

“શ્રી•મુમબઈની•તારીખ•૨ જી•ડીજેમબર• ૧૮૩૯

“હું•માહારી•શાખશી•આપુય•જે•“શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશની•મુખતે‘શર•અને•શેહેલ•વારતા•”હેવે•નાંમનાં•એક•નાંધેલા•પુશતકનું•શેહેરી ‘આરજી•પેશતંનજીએ•મહને•ભાશાંનતર•દેખાડેઉં•અને•મેં•તેહેને•તપા‘શેઉ•તે•ઉપરથી•હેવું•માલંમ•પડેય•કે•એ•તરજુમો•ઘણોજ•ખરો•અ‘ને•શાફ•અને•શૂધ•એ બારતમાં•કીધેલોછે*માંટે•માહારા•વીચારમાં• ‘આવેય•કે•એ•તરજુમાંથી•માતર•ગુજરાતી•તથા•અંગરેજી• વીદેઆ•શી‘ખવી•શેહેલ•પડશે•એટલું જ•નહી• પણ•તે•શંગાથે•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશ‘ની•વારતાની•મુલ•હકીગતથી•અતરેનાં•ગાંમઠી•લોકો•વાકેફ•થાશે*”

(શહી•)વાંનશ•કેનેડી”*

આએ•(દીબાચો•)બંધ• કરતી• વેલાએ•આપણી• શ્રી• મુમબઈની•શરકારનાં•અધીકારીઓ•તથા•આબરૂ•વાલા• ઈઉરોપીઆંન•તથા ગાંમઠી•શાહેબો• જેવોએ• આએ•પુશતકને• આશરો• આપેઓય•અને • જેવોનાં•નાંમ•કેતાબ•આગાઉ• ખરીદ•કરનારાવોની•ટીપમાં• જોએઆમાં•આવશે•તેવોનો•હમારા•ઉપર•ભારે•આભાર•થએઓય•તે•હમો•અતરે•જાહેર•કરીએ*

LETTER I.

MY DEAR BOY,

As you are likely to be absent from me for a considerable time, I know you will be glad to hear from me frequently;—and, that my letters may not be entirely unprofitable to you, I intend to send you something like a History of England,—our own country: it will be but a short one, yet it may do instead of a longer, till you grow bigger. Now, as you are, at present, but a very little gentleman, you must expect me to tell you about some very little matters,—such, however, as little people are not always acquainted with.—And first I shall tell you that Great Britain is an "island," which perhaps you know very well already; and you know also that an "island" means "a piece of land wholly surrounded by water."

By "Great Britain," we mean England, Scotland, and Wales. Look at your map, and you will see that *Scotland* is the most northern part of the island, and that *Wales* is on the western side. *Ireland*, too, makes a part of our nation, but *that*, you will see, is a distant island, lying across the sea, on the left hand, or west of us: so that, if you or I wanted to go to Scotland, or Wales, we might go in a stage-coach: but, if we wanted to go to Ireland, we must go in a ship.

France lies to the south of us, across that part of the sea which is called the "British Channel," within a few hours' sail. The French were formerly called Gauls; and the Roman emperor, Julius Cæsar, who was a great warrior more than eighteen hundred years ago, got possession of the greater part of France, or Gaul; and, not content with that, he must needs send over his troops to take possession of our little island too. This was the beginning of the Roman power in England. The Britons were, in those days, a very different sort of people from what they are now. They had nothing better for clothing than the skins of beasts; and such of their limbs as were not covered, they painted blue. Some people may, perhaps, tell you that they were a very mild, and gentle, and harmless set of people;—

but don't believe a word of it. These good dispositions do not come naturally; they come from right education, and true religion; and, as these people had neither, you may depend upon it that they were a very fierce and savage race.

But still they were a brave people; and the *Romans*, you may be sure, did not get possession of our island without a great deal of struggling and fighting; however, they kept a sort of possession here for about four hundred years.

Then, after the Romans, came the *Saxons*, a people from Germany. The English had, very foolishly, sent for the Saxons to help them against their troublesome neighbours, the Picts and the Scots, who lived in the northern part of the island; and when once these Saxons had got into England, they were not willing to go out again, liking our fruitful country better than their own. These people, after a time, divided England into seven different kingdoms, which were called the *Saxon Heptarchy*. Things continued in this state for about four hundred years more; and then Egbert, the king of the West Saxons, united all the seven together, and made them one kingdom.

I shall now write down the names of the Saxon kings, that followed. It will be useful for you to try to remember these kings, though I do not mean to say much about them: but we must be more particular in our account of those kings who lived in times nearer to our own.

SAXON KINGS BEFORE THE CONQUEST.

1 Egbert
2 Ethelwolf.
3 Ethelbald.
4 Ethelbert.
5 Ethelred I.
6 Alfred.
7 Edward I.
8 Athelstane.
9 Edmund I.
10 Edred.
11 Edwy.
12 Edgar.
13 Edward II.
14 Ethelred II.
15 Edmund II. *(Ironside.)*

During the reign of all these Saxon kings, the *Danes*, a people inhabiting the north of Europe, kept making continual encroachments on the English; and there were a great number of bloody battles fought between them and the English. At length, during the reign of Edmund *Ironside*, the fifteenth of the

Saxon kings, Canute, king of the Danes, was so successful, that he forced Edmund to give him half the kingdom; and, after the death of Edmund, Canute got the whole. After him his two sons reigned in succession. Thus we got three Danish kings.

1 Canute.
2 Harold.
3 Hardicanute.

The English were, however, soon tired of these Danish kings, and were very glad to have one of the old Saxon race again. This was

Edward (*the Confessor*).

He died without children, and then followed

Harold (*the Second*).

Harold had no just title to the throne; but as, at first, there was no one to oppose him, he was quietly crowned king. He did not, however, reign long without interruption: his opponent was no less a person than William duke of Normandy, who was afterwards called *William the Conqueror.*

Normandy, you perhaps know, is a province in France, and of this province William was duke; and he had often entertained Edward *the Confessor* in his court, and he declared that Edward had left the crown of England to him by his will. Be this however as it might, he thought proper to try a surer way of getting it. He raised an army and crossed the channel, and landed at Pevensey Bay, on the coast of Sussex; and there, after a bloody battle with Harold, near Hastings, he gained the victory. Harold was killed, and William then became king of England. This is called the *Conquest*; and we trace all our race of kings from William the Conqueror. The battle of Hastings was in the year 1066. You will do well to remember this date, and to give great attention to all such particulars as may now occur in the History of England.

The knowledge of the Christian religion had been introduced into England during the time of the Romans:—but the Saxons, by their persecutions, had almost destroyed it, and the nation had become heathen again. It was during the time of the Saxon kings that Pope Gregory sent missionaries to teach Christ's religion to these ignorant pagans. It is said that Gregory, before he was pope, had seen some beautiful children set up for sale in the slave-market at Rome; and, having asked what country they came from, he was told that they were *Angles*, (English). "They would," said he, "not be *Angles*, but *Angels*, if they were but Christians." From that time he was struck with a great desire to convert the heathen English to the religion of Christ; and he sent over several Christian teachers* for the sake of accomplishing that Christian work. Since that time, there has always been a profession of Christianity in England:—may God grant that there may always be the *power* of it! How thankful ought we to be that the knowledge of the Gospel, which is still kept from many nations, has been given to *us*! and how anxious ought we to be to shew ourselves worthy of so great a gift, by the effect that it produces on our lives and practices! How thankful ought we to be that we have churches to go to; and how regular ought we to be in our attendance there; and how desirous of becoming better by the opportunities of good thus put in our power! How stedfast ought we to be in the faith which is publicly and regularly preached to us! And how diligent ought we to be in seeking to bring others to the knowledge and the love of the same faith, whether they be the ignorant and the profane, in our own land, or the unconverted and unenlightened among the heathen, who have never yet heard those "glad tidings of great joy," which were intended to be made known to "all people!"

I am your affectionate Father.

P. S.—Pray don't read over this little history in a hurried manner, but consider it well as you go along. And, that you may remember it the better, I shall generally put a few questions at the end of my letters; and you must get somebody to ask you these questions, to see whether you can give the proper answers to them. In looking at a map, remember that the top is the north, the bottom south, the right hand east, and the left-hand west.

A. D. 577.

શ્રી•ઇંગલંડ•દેશની•વારતા*

પતર• ૧

માહારા•પેઆરા•છોકરા*

તમો•માહારેથી•ઘણોકિ•વખત•શુધી•જુદા• રેહેશો•માટે•હું• જાંણઉંચ•કે•તમો•માહારા• કાગલો• ઘડીઘડી•વાંચવાને• ખુશી•થશો•અને•માહારા•પતરોથી•તમનેગુણ•થાઈ•કિટલાશારૂં•આપણાં•પોતાનાં•શ્રી ઇંગલંડ•દેશની•વારતા•હું•તમને•લખી•મોકલવા•ધારૂંચ•અને•તે•વારતા થોડામાં•લખીશ•પંણ•જાંહાંશુધી•કે• તમે•મોટા•થાઓ•તાંહાંશુધી• લંબાંણ•ને•ઠેકાંણે•ટુક•વારતા•તમને• બશ•થશે* હવડાંતો• તમો•ઘણાંજ•નાંહાંનાંછેવો•માટે•તમો• હેવું•જાંણજોજે•હું• પંણ•તમને•નાંહાંની•નાંહાંની•વાતો•કેહેતો• જઉશ• પંણ•તે•હેવી•વાતો•કહીશ•કે• જે•નાંહાંનાં•આદમીઓને•હમેશાં•માલંમ•નહી•હોઈ• તેહેવી*અને• પેહેલાંતો•હું•તમને•કહુચ•કે•શ્રી•ગરેટ•બરીટેનનું•દેશ•કિ•ટાપુછે•કેજે હને•કદાચીત•તમો•હવડાં•જાંણતા•હશો• ને•તમો•જાંણોછો• કે•જે• દેશને• ફરતો•શમુદર•હોઈછે•તેહેને•ટાપુ•કરી•કેહેછે*

શ્રી•ગરેટ•બરીટેન•કિટલે•જે•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડ•તથા•ઇશકાટલંડ•તથા વેલશનાં•દેશો• (ઈઆને•શ્રી•ગરેટ•બરીટેનમાં• હેવાં•નાંમનાં•તરંણ પરાંતછે*) તમો•પોતાનાં•નકશા•ઉપર• જોશોતો• તમને• માલંમ•પડશે•કે•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડ•ઈ•ટાપુનાં•છેક•ઓતરનાં•ભાગમાંછે•અને•શ્રી•વેલશ•પશચંમની•તરફ છે* શ્રી•આઅરલંડ•પંણ•આપણાં• લોકોનું•દેશછે• પંણ• તે•કિ•તદંન•જુદો•ટાપુછે• કિમ•તમને• (તે•નકશામાં•) દેખાશે• અને• તે•આપણાં• ડાબા•હાથની• તરફ•ઇઆને• આપણી•પશચંમની• તરફ•શમુદરની• પેલી•મેરેછે•કિમાટે•અગારજો•તમને•અથવા•મહને•શ્રી• ઇશકાટલંડ•અથવા•વેલશ•જવું•પડેતો •આપરે•ગાડીમાં•(આ૦પગ•મારગે•) જઉશકીઈ•પંણ• અગારજો•આપંણને•આઆરલંડમાં•જાવું•હોઈતો•આપણને•વાંહાંણમાં• (આ૦જલ•મારગે•) જવું•જોઉઈ*

આપણી·(ઈઆને·ગારેટ·બરીટેનની·)દખંણનીબાજુ·બીરીટીશ ચેનલ·(ઈટલે·જે·શ્રી·ઈંગાલંડનો·શમુદર·) તેહેની· પેલીમેરે· ફરાંસ· દેશ·છે·જાંહાં· (ગારેટ·બરીટેનથી·જલમારગે·)થોડા· કલાકમાં·જવાઈ છે* ફરેંચ·(ઈઆને·ફરાંસ·દેશનાં· લોકો·) ને·અગાઉ·ગાલ·લોકો· કરી·કેહેતા·હતા·આશરે· અઢારશો· વરશ·અગાઉ·શ્રી·રૂમનો·પાદશાહ જુલીઅશ·શીજર·કરીને· ઈક·મોટો· પેહલવાંન· હતો·તેણે· ફરાંસ· આ૦ગાલનું·ઘણુંખરૂં·દેશ· લીધું·પંણ·તે·લીધાથીબી·તે·ધરાઈઓ·નહી·ઈટલાશારૂ·આપણો·નાંહાંનો·ટાપુ·(ગારેટ·બરીટેન·)પંણ·લેવાશારૂં તેણે· પોતાનું·લશકર·મોકલેઉં*ઈ·(દીવશ)થી·શ્રીઈંગાલંડમાંશ્રીરૂમનાં પાદશાહનો·અખતીઆર·શરૂ·થઆ*બરીટેનશ(ઈટલે·જે·શ્રી·ઈંગાલંડ·પરાંતનાં·રેહનારા·લોકો)જેહેવા·હવડાંછે·તેહવા·તે·વેલાઈ·નોહતા*તાહારે·તેવોનાં· પેહેરવાશ·પશૂનાં·ચાંમડાં·શીવાઈ·બીજો·તેથી·વધારે· શારો·નોહતો·અને·જે·બદંનનાં·ભાગકે·ઉઘાડા·રેહેતા·તેહેને· તેવો· આશમાંની·રંગાથી·ચીતરતા* કેટલાઈક·લોકો· કદાપી·તમોને· કેહેશેકે· તેવો·(ઈઆને·બરીટેનશ·લોકો·) ઘણાંજ·નરંમ·તથા·ભલાં·તથા·નીરદોશ·લોકો·હતા·પંણ·તેમાંનો·ઈક·બોલ·શાચો· માંનવો·નહી* ઈ· શારા·ગુણ·પોતાની·મેરે·આવતા·નથી·તે·શારી· કેરવણીથી·તથા·ખરા·ધરંમથી· આવેછે·અને·ઈ·લોકો·ઈમાંનુ·કંઈ·નહી· જાંણતા·(ઈઆને·શારી·કેરવણી·તથા· ખરા·ધરંમથી· બેખબર·હતા·) ઈ·માટે·તમે· હેવું· ખચીત·જાણજો·કે·તેવો·તદંન·કરુર·અને·જંગાલી· લોકો·હતા*

તોપંણ·તે·લોકો·બાહાદુર·હતા·(ઈમાટે·)તેવોનો·ટાપુ·લેવા શારું·રોમંન·લોકોને·ઘણી·મેહેનત·પડી·અને· લડવુંપડેઉ· તોબી· તે·(રોમંન)લોકોઈ· શૂમારે·ચાહારશો· વરશ· શૂધી· પોતાનો·કાબુ· ચલાવેઆ*

રોમંન·લોકો·પછે·શ્રી·જરમેની·દેશથી·શાકશંનશ· લોકો·આવેઆ*ઈંગાલીશ·લોકોઈ· ઘણીજ·બેવકુફીથી·શાકશંનશ·લોકોને·પોતાની·મદતે·બોલાવેઆ·હતા· ઈટલા·વાશતે·જે·તેવોનાં·મેહેનત· આપનારા·પરોશીઓ·પીકટશ·તથા·ઈશકાટશ·લોકો·કે· જેવો·ઈ· ટાપુની·અંતર·પરાંતમાં·રેહેતા·હતા·તેવોની·શાંમણે·થાઈ·અને·જેવારે ઈ·શાકશં

ન·લોકોએ·એકે·વખત·શ્રી·ઈંગલંડમાં·પગ·મુકેઆ· તેવારે· તેવોને·પાછું જવું·ગમેઉં·નહી·શાવાશ તે·જે·આપણૂં·ફલવાંન· દેશ· તેવોને· પોતાનાં·દેશનાં·કરતાં·વધારે·શારૂં·નજર·આવેઉં*એ·લોકોએ· થોડીએક·મુદત·શૂધી·શ્રી·ઈંગલંડ·દેશનાં·જુદા·જુદા·શાત·ભાગ·કીધા·તેહેને·શાકશંન·હેપટારકી· (આ·શાકશંનનાં·શાત·રાજ·) કરી·કેહેતા· હતા*એ પરમાંણે·શૂમારે·ચાહારશે·વરશથી·વધારે·ચાલેઉં·અને·પછે·પશચંમ પરાંતનાં·શાકશંન·લોકોનો·એક· બરટ·પાદશા·હતો· તેણે· તે·શારવ·શાતે·રાજ·એકઠાં·કીધાં·અને· તેહેનું·એક·રાજ·કીધું*

હેનાં·(ઈઆને· એકબરટ· પાદશા·)પછી· જે·શાકશંનનાં· પાદશા થઆ· તેવોનાં·નાંમ· માતરે·કહું છેઉં* એ· પાદશાવોને·ઈઆદ·રાખવા જોઈએ·ને·હું· તેવો· વીશે·કાંઈ·ઘણૂં· બોલવાનું· ધારતો·નથી·પંણ· આપણાં· વખતની· નજદીકનાં· વખતમાં·જે· પાદશાવો·થાઈ· ગીઆ· તેવોનો·એહેવાલ· આપણાને·ચોકશ·કેહેવો·જોઈએ*

શ્રી·ઈંગલંડની·ફતે·થઆની·અગાઉનાં· શાકશંનનાં·પાહાદશાઓ*

૧ એકબરટ*
૨ ઇથેલ·વોલફ*
૩ ઈથેલ·બાલડ*
૪ ઈથેલ·બરટ*
૫ પેહેલો·ઇથેલ·રેડ*
૬ આલફરેડ*
૭ પેહેલો·એડવરડ*
૮ આથેલ·ઇશટેન*
૯ પેહેલો·એડમંડ*
૧૦ એડરેડ*
૧૧ એડવી*
૧૨ એડગાર*
૧૩ બીજો·એડવરડ*
૧૪ બીજો·ઇથેલ·રેડ*
૧૫ બીજો·એડમંડ· આઇરનશાઈડ*

એ·શઘલા· શાકશંન·પાદશાનાં·વખતમાં· શ્રી·એરોપ·ખંડની·ઓતરની·તરફ·ડેનશ·લોકો·રેહેતા· હતા· તેવો·ઈંગલીશ· લોકો·ઉપર·હલો·કરેઆ·કરતા·હતા· અને· તેવો·તથા·ઇંગલીશ·લોકો·વચે· ખુનાં·મરકીની·લડાઈઓ·થાતી·હતી*અંતે·શાકશન·પાદશાવોમેનો·પંદરમો· પાદશા·એડમંડ·આઇરંનશાઈડ·હતો· તેહેનાં· રાજમાં·ડેનશ·લોકોનો પાદશા·કેનીઉટ· હેવોતો·ફતે·પાંમેઓકે· તેણે·એડમંડ·પાશેથી·અરધું રાજ·જુલંમથી·લીધું·અને·એડમંડનાં·મુઆપછે·કેનીઉંટ·બાકીનું·શઘલું

(રાજ•)લીધું*તેહેનાં• (ઇઆને•કેનીઉટ•) પછી•તેહેનાં•બેએ• છોકરાવો•એ•એક•પછે•બીજાએ•રાજ•કીધું*એ•પરમાંણે•ડેનશ•લોકોમાંથી•આપણાં•તરંણ•પાદશા•થઆ•તેવોનાં•નાંમ*

1. કેનીઉટ*
2. હારોલડ*
3. હારડી•કેનીઉંટ*

પણ•તરતજ•એ•ડેનીશ•પાદશાવોથી•ઈંગલીશ•લોકોને•કંટાલો• આવેઓ•માટે•પેહેલાંનાં•શાકશંનની•ઓલાદનાં•એકને•મોટી•ખુશીથી (તખત•ઉપર•)બેશાડેઓ• તેહેનું•નાંમ

એડવરડ•કંનફેશર*

એ•(પાદશા)ને•છોકરાં•થઆ•વીનાં• તે•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ• તેહેનાં• પછે•આવેઓ• તે

બીજો•હારોલડ*

હારોલડને• તખત•ઉપર• બેશવાનો•હક• હતો•નહી•પંણ• પેહેલાંતો• તેહેની•શાંમે•થનાર• કોઇ•હતું•નહી•વાશતે• તે•આરાંમથી•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો*પંણ• તેણે•હરકત•થાઆ•વીનાં•ઘણાં•દીવશ•શુધી•રાજ•કીધું •નહી•કાંકે•શીનારમંડીનો•ડીઉક•(એટલે•જે•અમીર•)ઉલીઅમ• જેહેને•તેહારપછે•ઉલીઅમ•કનકુએરર•(એટલે•જે•ફતેમંદ•) કેહેતા•હતા• તેજ•તેહેનો•શતરુ•થઆ*

તમે•કદાચ•જાંણતા•હશો•શીનારમંડી•ફરાંશ•દેશનું•એક•પરગણું છે•અને•તે•પરગણાંનો• ડીઉક• ઉલીએમ•હતો•અને•તેણે•એડવરડ•કંનફેશરને• પોતાની•દરબારમાં•ઘણી•વેલા•રાખેઓ• હતો•અને• તેણે•કહુંકે•એડવરડે•(મરતી•વખતે•)વશીએત•નાંમાંમાં•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનું રાજ•મહને•આપેઉં છે*હવે•ગમે•તેમ•હોએ•પંણ• તેણે•એ• રાજ•લેવા•શારું•પકી•રીતે•તજવીજ•કરવાનું•મુનાશેબ•જાંણેઉં*તેણે• ફોજ એકઠી•કરીને•બરીટીશ•ચેનલનાં•શમુદરને• પેલેપાર•જઇને•શ્રી•શશેકશ• (પરાંત)ને•કાંઠે•પીવેનશીબે• (ઇઆને•બારી•)હતી•તાંહાં•ઉતરેઓ•અને•શી•હેશટીગશ•આગલ•હારોલડની•શાથે• મોટી•લડાઇ•કરીને•ફતેહે•પાંમેઓ*હારોલડ•મારેઓ•ગેઓ• અને•ઉલીઅંમ• શ્રી•ઇંગલંડ

નો•પાદશાહ• થાઓ*ઈને•શ્રી•(ઇંગાલંડની•)ફતેહ•કેહે છે•અને•ઉસીઅંમ• કંનકોઈરરથી•આપણાં• શઘલા•પાદશાહાવોની• ઓલાદ•ચાલતી આવીછે* શ્રી• હેશટીગાની• લડાઇ• (ઇશવી•શને•) ૧૦૬૬ નાં•વરશમાં•થઇ*ઈ•તારીખ•તમારે• ઇઆદ•રાખવી•જોઇઈ• અને•હેવી•બીજી•શઘલી•બીનાં•જે•શ્રી•ઇંગાલંડની•વારતામાં•હવેપછે•આવે•તે•ઉપર•તમારે ઘણુંજ•ધેઆંન•રાખવું•જોઇઈ*

રોમંન•લોકોનાં•વખતમો•શ્રી•ઇંગાલંડમાં•ખરીશટી•ધરંમ•પરગાટ•થઓ•પંણ•શાકશંન• લોકોઈ•પોતાનાં• જુલંમથી•તે• ધરંમને• તોડેઓ•અને•(ઇંગાલીશ•)લોકો•ફરીથી• પાછા• બુતપરશ•થઇ• ગીઆ*માટે•શાકશાંન•પાદશાહાવોનાં•વખતમાં•આઈ•અંનશામજ•બુતપરશતોને કરાઈશટનો•ધરંમ•શીખવાને•વાશતે• પોપગારી•ગોરીઈ• પાદરીઓ•મોકલેઆ*ઈમ•કેહે છે•કે•ગારીગોરી• પોપ• † થઆની•આગમચ•તેણે•શ્રી રોમ•શેહેરનાં•બજારમાં•(જાંહાં•ગોલાંમો•વેચાતા•હતા•તાંહાં•)કાંઇ• ખુબ•શુરત•છોકરાં•વેચવા•મેલેઆં•હતાં•તેવોને•જોઇને• (ગારીગોરઈ•)પુછેઉં•કે•આ•છોકરાં•કીઆ•દેશનાંછે•તે•ઉપરથી•તેહેને•જવાબ દીધો•કે•તેવો•આંગલશ•લોકો છે(ઇઆને•ઇંગાલીશ• લોકો છે•)તેઆરે• તે•બોલેઓ•કેજો•આ•છોકરાં•ખરીશટી•ધરંમમાં•હતે તો• તેવો•આંગલશ•નહી•પણ•ફરેશતા•હતે*તે•દીવશથી•બુતપરશત•ઇંગાલીશ•લોકેને•કરાઇશટનાં• ધરંમમાં• લાવવાની•તેણે•ઘણીજ• મોહોટી• ઇછા થાઇ•અને•તે• ખરીશટી•ધરંમનુ•કાંમ•પુરૂં•પાડવા•શારૂં• તેણે•શ્રી ઇંગાલંડમાં•કેટલાઈક•ખરીશટીઆંન•ગુરૂ• (ઇઆને•પાદરીઓ•) મોલેઆ* તે•દીવશથી•શ્રી•ઇંગાલંડમાં•હમેશાં•ખરીશટી•ધરંમ•ચાલેઓ છે•નેપરમેશવર•કરેને•તે•ધરંમનું•બલ•હમેશાં•રેહે*આંપણે•(પરશવરનાં•)શુકરાંનાં•કરવા• જોઇઈ•કે•આપણને•ધરંમ•શાશતર•આઉંચ•કે•જે• બીજી•કોમનાં• લોકોને• મલેઉં• નથી*અને• આપરેવી•બખશેશને•લાઈઅક• થવું•જોઈઈ•કાંઈ કે• તે•આપણાં•જનમાર ઉપર•ને•આપણાં•કરંમ•ઉપર•કેહવા• ફાઈદા•કરેચ* આપણને•કેહ શુકરાંનાં•કરવા• જોઇઈચ• કે•આપણને•જવાને• વાશતે• દેવલો• : પેઆંચ•ને•તાંહાં•આંપણને• નીત•હાજર•રેહવું•જોઇઈ*જે• ધરંમ

નીત•જાહેરાંત•ભાશણ•કરીને•આંપણને•શંભલાવેચ• તે•ધરંમ•ઉપર• આપણને• કેહેવુ• ચુશાત• રેહવું• જોઇએ* અને• જે• આપણાં• દેશ માં•આગાનેઆંની• તથા• અધરમી•લોક• હશે• તેહને• અથવા• જુતપરશત•લોકોમાં• નહી•વટલેલા• અને•અંણ•શમજુ• લોકોછે•તેવોને• ખરીશટી•ધરંમનાં• શારા•વરતમાંન•કે•જે•શઘલાઓને•જાણઇઆ• જોઇએ•તે•શંભલાવીને•જે•ખરીશટી• થઆ•નહી• હોએ•તેહેને• આ•ધરંમ• દેખાડીને•શારો•ભાગોતો•આપણે•ઉદીઓગ•કરવો*

હું છું•તમારો•પેઆરો•બાપ*

તાજે•કલંમ*આએ•નાંહાંની•વારતા•ઉતાવલેથી• વાંચી• જતાનાં• પંણ•જેમ•તમે•વાંચો• તેમ•શારી• પઠે•વીચાર• કરતા•જજો* અને•તમને•એ•શારી•પઠે•ઇઆદ• રેહે•એટલા•શારૂં• માહારા•પતરને•છેડે• થોડા એક•શવાલો•લખીશ• તેથી•મહને•નજર•આવશેકે•તમે• તે•શવાલોનો•ઘટારત•જવાબ•દઈ•શખશો•ઇઆ•નહી*(પુરુથવીનો•નકશો)જોતી•વેલાએ•ઇઆદ•રાખજો•જે•તેહનો•ઉપરનો• ભાગ•ઉતરછે•તથા•હેઠલનો•ભાગ•દખણ•જમણાં•હાથની• તરફ•ઉગામંણ• અને•ડાભા•હાથની•તરફ•આથમંણ•બાજુછે*

† પોપ•એટલેજે•રોમન•કાથોલીક•લોકોનો•વરો•પાદરી•કે•જે• બીજા•શઘલા•પાદરીઓ•તથા•દેવલનાં•અધીકારીઓનો•મોહોટો•ગુરૂ થાએછે•ને•જેહેનો•હોકંમ•અગાઉનાં•વખતમાં• હેવોતો•ચાલતો•હતો• જે•અદનાથીતે•આલા•અને•રાજાવો•તથા• પાદશાહો• શરવે• તેહનાં• હોકંમને•તાબે•હતા•ને• પોપ•જેહને•ચાહાતો• તેહેને•તખત•ઉપર•બેશાડતો*પોપની•ગાદી•શ્રી•રૂમ•શેહેરમાંછે*

LETTER II.

MY DEAR BOY,

I told you, in my last Letter, that the Romans, and the Saxons, and the Danes, at different times, had possession of England. I told you, likewise, that, in the year 1066, William the Conquer

or came over from Normandy in France, and that he conquered king Harold at the battle of Hastings. I shall now go on to tell you a little of what happened *after* this conquest; and you must now give great attention to remember these things, and you must be very particular about the dates: and, that you may not be puzzled, I shall tell you but a little at a time: and, I think, you will then recollect what I tell you, and so get a little knowledge of the History of England; as much perhaps, as you will want just at present.

Remember, then, that William the Conqueror landed near Hastings, in the year 1066. After conquering Harold, he marched immediately to London, and was crowned king at Westminster, by the Archbishop of York, and took the usual oaths to defend the Church, and observe the laws, and govern the people with impartiality. William was glad to find that the people received him willingly, and he chose to make them think that *they* had given him his power. The truth was, however, that he had taken it by force,—and he soon made them to feel this. He plundered many of the English of their property, for the sake of giving it to his Norman officers and soldiers, and he thus reduced the old inhabitants to the greatest distress, and gave all his benefits to the new comers! This is generally the case with invaders; and, therefore, every man who knows what he is about, will do all he can to defend his country from their attacks.

William, with all his power and greatness, had a very troublesome life. The people were continually rebelling against him, and the English and Normans were perpetually quarrelling. William took part with his Normans; and, however ill the English were used by them, there was no remedy to be had by law; and the English were, therefore, constantly seeking some method of private revenge; and this miserable state of things made many of the Normans wish themselves well back again. Then William, to tempt them to stay, increased their possessions; and, for this purpose, he again plundered the English, and thus added to their burden. Miserable times these must have been! How thankful ought we to be that we live under a mild king, and are governed by just and equal laws! William the Conqueror was a cruel king. He was so angry because the people did not submit quietly to him, that he at one time ordered the county of Northumberland to be laid waste, and all the inhabitants to be turned out of doors, and all their furniture and tools to be burned; it is said that above a hundred thousand persons were thus destroyed, either by sword or famine.—So much for what many people call "good old times!"

But, besides these public troubles, William was very unhappy in his own family. He had three sons living, Robert, William, and Henry. Robert was a bold, daring youth, but of a very bad and angry temper. One day, when the brothers were playing together, the two younger ones threw a can of water upon Robert, and thus put him into a violent passion; and such was his violence, that he took a sword and rushed upon his brothers to take revenge. See the dreadful effects of anger! This youth might, in his passion, have shed the blood of his brothers, and have thus made himself miserable for ever. How careful then ought we to be, to govern our tempers, and to seek to bring them to that *gentleness* which we read of in the Scriptures, as one of the "fruits of the spirit." Robert was, however, prevented from killing his brothers by the old king, who heard the disturbance. He next turned his anger against his father; and after this, he rebelled against him, and fought against him: and, on one occasion, he was very near killing the king, his father, without knowing him. In those days it was the custom to have the body almost wholly covered with plates of steel armour; and their helmets covered their heads and faces, so that they could not know one person from another. The king and his son met in battle. They fought for a long time: at length Robert beat down the old king, and was just going to kill him, when the king's helmet fell off,—and Robert saw that it was his father. Robert fell on his knees, and begged that his father would forgive him, and promised, for the future, to behave like a good son. William was, however, very angry with him,—though, after a time, he became reconciled.

William was a great lover of *hunting*, and he actually destroyed all the villages in Hampshire for thirty miles round, and turned out the inhabitants, for the sake of making himself a forest to hunt in; and, that he might not be interrupted in his hunting, he made very cruel laws to prevent any body from hunting in this forest besides himself. In those days, if any one killed a deer, or a boar, or a hare, he was punished by having his eyes put out; and they thought less about the life of a *man*, than of one of these animals. People might well talk of tyranny and oppression in those days; and when we think of such times, we have great reason to be thankful for the liberty and protection which we experience now.

William died in France, by an accident, in the year 1087. He had got into a quarrel with the king of France, and was attacking one of his towns, when his horse happened to put his forefeet upon some hot ashes, which caused him to plunge so violently, that the injury which the king received was the cause of his death.

His eldest son Robert became duke of Normandy, and William became king of England. But I must leave the account of this second William till my next letter. Remember that William the First, (called the Conqueror,) reigned twenty-one years; having come to the throne in 1066, and having died in 1087.

Short character of William the Conqueror,
(*from Goldsmith's History*).

" William was a prince of great courage and capacity; ambitious, politic, cruel, revengeful, and rapacious. He was fond of glory, and was saving at one time, that he might be ostentatious at another. Though sudden and impetuous in his enterprises, he was cool, deliberate, and unwearied in times of danger. He is said by the Norman writers to have been above eight feet high, his body strong-built, and well-proportioned; and his strength such, that none of his courtiers could draw his bow. He talked little; he was seldom affable to any, except to Lanfranc, Archbishop of Canterbury; with him he was ever meek and gentle; with all others stern and austere. Though he rendered himself formidable to all, and odious to many, yet he had policy enough to transmit his power to posterity; and the throne is still occupied by his descendants."

Now think well of what you have read, and try whether you can answer these

QUESTIONS.

In what year did William the Conqueror come to England?
What part of the world did he come from?
In what part of England did he land?
Who was king of England at that time?
Was a battle fought?
Where?
How did William behave to the English?
What cruel act did he do in the county of Northumberland?
How many sons had William?
What were their names?
Do you remember any anecdote respecting these brothers?
How did the eldest son behave to his father?
What dreadful consequences had almost followed from the eldest son's rebellious conduct?
What amusement was the king particularly fond of?
What tyrannical act did he commit to enable him to pursue this amusement?
Where did William die, and what was the cause of his death?
In what year was this?
Who became king of England after William?

પતર• ૨

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

માહારા• પેહેલા• પતરમાં• મેં •તમને•લખેઉં •હતુ•કે•રોમંન•તથા શાકશંન•તથા•ડેનશ•એ•લોકોએ• જુદી•જુદી• વેલાએ• શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનો• અખતીઆર•લીધો*અને•મેં•એ•પંણ•લખેઉં •હતું •કે•૧૦૬૬ નાં•વરશ માં•ઉલીએમ•ફ.તેમંદે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાંની•નારમંડી• પરાંત•થકી•આવી ને•તેહેને• હારોલડ• પાદશાહને• હાશટીંગશની• લડાઈમાં• જીતી•લીધો* હવે•એ•ફતે•થઆપછે• જે• થઈ• તેહનાં•વીશે•હું•તમને•થોડુંક•કહીશ•અને•એ•વાતો•તમોને• ઈઆદ•રાખવાને• ઘણું•ચીત•લગાડીએ•જોઈએ•અને•તમોને•ઘણું•કરીને•તારીખ• ચોકશ•ઈઆદ• રાખવી•જોઈએ•અને•તમો•ઘભરાવો•નહી•એટલા•શારૂં•હું•તમને•થો

ડું•થોડું•હરેક•વખતે•લખતો•જઇશ•અને•હું•ધારુંચ• કે•ઈ•પરમાંણે•હું•તમને•કહીશ• તે•તમો•ઇઆદ•રાખશો•અને•ઈમ• તમને•શ્રી ઇંગલંડની•વારતાનું•થોડું•ગનેઆંન•મલસે•પંણ• જેટલું•તમને•હવડાં•જાંણીઉં•જોઈઈચ• તેટલું*

ઇઆદ•રાખજો•કે• ૧૦૬૬ નાં•વરશમાં•ઉલીઈમ•ફતેમંદે•શ્રી હાશટીંગશની•પાશે•આવીને•મુકાંમ•કીધું*તે•હારોલડને•જીહીતેઆપ છે•તરતજ•શ્રી•લંડન•શેહેરમાં•ગીઆ•અને•શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરનાં•દેવલમાં•ઇઆરકનાં• આરચ•બીશપે•(ઇઆને•મુખીઅ•પાદરીઈ•)તેહને તખત•ઉપર•બેશાડેઓ•અને• (ઉલીઈમે•) ખરીશટી•ધરંમનું•રખરાંણ•કરવાને•અને•રાજનીતી•પરમાંણે•ચાલવાને•તથા• લોકોનો•અદલ•ઇનશાફ•કરવાને•રીત•પરમાંણે• શોગાંદ•ખાધા*લોકોઈ• પોતાની ખુશીથી• તેહને•કબુલ•કીધો• તે• જોઇને•ઉલીઅંમ• ખુશી•થઈઓ•અને• તે• લોકોને• હેવું•શમજાવા•લાગો•કે•ઈવોઈજ• તેહેને•રાજ•આપેઉંછે*પંણ• હેમાં•ખરી•વાત•ઈછેજે•ઉલીઅંમે• તે•રાજ•જુલંમથી•લીધું•અને•તે•જુલંમ• લોકોને•જલદી•માલંમ•થઓ*કાંઈજે•પોતાનાં•(દેશનાં•)નારમંન•શરદારોને•તથા• શીપાઇઓને• આપવાને•વાશતે• તેણે•ઘણાંકિ•ઇગલીશ• લોકોનો•માલ•મીલકત• લુટી• લીધો• ઈ•પરમાંણે• તેણે•તાંહાંનાં•અશલ•રેહેનારાવોને• ઘણાંજ• દુખમાં•નાંખીને•બાહેરનાં•આવનારનું•શારું•કીધું*જેકાંઇ•હલો• કરનારા•પાદશાવો•આવેછે• તેવોની•ચાલ•ઘણી•કરીને• હેવીજ•હોઈછે•અને•ઈટલા•શારૂ•હરેક•શખશ•કે•જે• પોતાનો• ઓહોદો• જાંણેચ• તેહેને• પોતાનાં•દેશને•પારકાઓનાં•હલાંવોથી• બંચાવાને•વાશતે•જેકાંઇ• તેહેનીથી• મેહેનત•થાઇ•શખે• તેટલી•કરવી• જોઇઈ*

ઉલીઅંમનું•હેઉં•બલ•તથા• મોટાઈ•હતી• તોપંણ• તેણે•ઘણોજ• દુખ•ભરેલો•જંનમારો• ભોગવેઓ*(કાંકે• તેહનાં•રાજમાં) લોકો•હંમેશાં•દંગો•કરતા•હતા•અને•ઇગલીશ•તથા• નારમંન• લોકોમાં•હમેશાં•કજીઆ•થાતા•હતા*ઉલીઅંમ• પોતાનાં•નારમંન• લોકોની•તરફ•થાતો•અને•નારમંન• લોકો• ઇગલીશોને• ગમે• તેટલું•દુખ•દીઈ• તોઈ•પંણ•નીતીપરમાંણે• તેવોનો• નેઆઈ•થાઈ•નહી•મા

ટે• ઇગાલીશ• લોકો• કાંઈ• છુપીઉં• વેર• લેવા• શારૂં• ઘડી• ઘડી• ઉપાઈ શોધતાં• હતાં• અને• હેવી• ખરાબ• અવશતાને• લીધે• ઘણાંઈક• નારમંન લોકોઈ• (પોતાનાં• દેશ•)પાછા• જવાનું• બેહેતર• જાંણેઉં* તેવારે• ઉલીઅંમે• તેવોને• (શ્રી• ઇંગાલંડમાં•)રાખવા• શારૂં• તેવોની• મીલકતો• વધારી• અને• તે•માટે• તેણે પૂરીથી• ઇગાલીસોને•લુટેઆ• અને• તેવોનું• દુખ• વધારેઉં*ઈ• કેહેવો• દુખનો• જમાંનો• થઈગીઓ• હશે*હાલમાં• આપણને• (પરમેશવરનો•)કેહેવો ઉપકાર• માંનવો• જોઈઈ• કે આપણે• મામાલુ• પાદશાનાં• શાઆતલે• વશીઈએ• અને• અદલ• તથા• વાજબી• કાઈદા• પરમાંણે• ચાલીઈએ*ઉલીઅંમ• ધાતકી• પાદશા• હતો* લોકોઈ• હેનાં• કઆપરમાંણે• કબુલ• કીધું• નહી• ઈટલા• શારૂં• તે• ઈક• વેલાઈ• હેવો તો• ગુશે• થઓ• કે• શ્રી• નારથબરલાંડનાં• પરગણાંને• ઉજંર કરવાનો• તથા• તાંહાંનાં• શંઘલા• લોકોને• ઘરમાંથી• બાહેર• કાહાડીને તેવોનો• શઘલો• શાંમંન• તથા• હથીઆર• બાલી• નાખવાનો• હુકંમ• કીધો• હેઉં• કેહે છે• કે• તે• વખતે• ઈક• લાખથી• વધારે• લોકો• તલવારથી અથવા• દુકાલથી• મરંણ• પાંમેઆં*"ઘણાં• લોકો• કેહે છેકે• આગલનો• શારો• જમાંનો• હતો•"તે• વીશે• ઈટલુંજ• કહેલું• બશ છે*

રાજ• ચલાવાની• મેહેનત• શીવાઈ• ઉલીઅંમ• પોતાનાં• કુટંમબમાં• ઘણો• દુખી• હતો* તેહેનાં• તરંણ• છોકરા• જીવતા• હતા• (તેવોનાં• નાંમ•) રાબરટ• ઉલીઅમ• તથા• હેનરી*રાબરટ• ઘણો• બલવાંન• અને• હીમત• વાલો• છોકરો• હતો• પંણ• તેહનો• શવભાવ• નરશો• તથા• ગોશાદાર• હતો*ઈક• દીવશે• ઈ• તરંડે• ભાઈઓ• ઈકઠા• રંમતા• હતા• તે• વેલાઈ• તે• બેઈ• નાંધલા• ભાઈઓઈ• રાબરટ• ઉપર• પાંણી રેડેઉં• અને• તેથી• તેહેને• અતી• ઘણો• ગુશો• લાગો• તે• હેવો• લાગો કે તે• વેર• લેવાને• વાશતે• ઈક• તલવાર• લઈને• પોતાનાં• ભાઈઓ• ઉપર• દોડેઓ*જુવો• ગોશાથી• કેહેવાં• ભઈઅંકાર• કાંમો• થાઈ છે*આઈ જવાંન• છોકરાઈ• પોતાનાં• ગોશામાં• પોતાનાં• ભાઈઓનું• ખુંન• કીધું• હતે•અને• હેઉં• કરીને• પોતાનાં• જીવને• શદાકાલ• દુખી• કરતે*ઈટલા શારૂં• આપણે• કેહેવી• ચોકશાઈથી• આપણાં• શવભાવને• શંભાલવો• જોઈએ• અને• ધરંમ• શારાતરમાં• પાક• આતમાંની• જેવી• નરમાઈ• લખીછે

તેહેવીજ•આપણી•પંણ•કરવી*પંણ•જઇફ• પાદશાહે•ઈ•ગારખરાટ•શાંભલી•તેથી• રાબરટને• પોતાનાં•ભાઈઓને•મારવા•દીધો•નહી*પછે• રાબરટ•પોતાનાં•બાપ•ઉપર•ગોશે•થઓ•અને•તે•પછી તેણે•દંગો•કરીને•તેહેની•શાંમબે•લડાઇ•કીધી•અને•કઈ•વેલાઈ•તેણે•પાદશાહાને•(ઇઆને•)પોતાનાં•બાપને•નહી• ઓલખેઆનાં•શબબથી•તેહેને•મારી•નાંખતો•હતો*કાંઈકે•તે• જમાંનાંમાં•શંઘલા•બદન•ઉપર•બખતર•પેહેરતા•અને•ટોપથી•મોહોડું•ઢાંકેલું•રેહેતું તેથી•કઈ•માંણશ•બીજાને•નહી•ઓલખી•શકતું*પાદશા•અને•પોતાંનો•છોકરો•લડાઇમાં•બંધે•આંમણાશાંમણા•થઆ*અને•ઘણીકઈ વાર•શુધી•તેવો•લડેઆ•અંતે•રાબરટ•જઇફ•પાદશાહાને• હેઠલ પાડીને•મારી•નાંખતો•હતો•ઈટલામાં•પાદશાહની•ટોપ•માથાપરથી•પડી•ગઇ•તીઆરે• રાબરટે•જાંણેઉં•જે• પોતાનો• બાપછે*પછે•રાબરટ• પગે•પરેઓ•અને•પોતાનાં•બાપ•પાશે• વીનતી•કરીને•માફ•માંગી•અને•કબુલ•થઓકે•હવે•પછી• ઉદાર•છોકરાની•માફક ચાલીશ*ઉલીઅંમ•તેહનાં•ઉપર•ઘણોજ•ગોશે• થઓ•તોબી•થોડા•દીવશ•પછે•તે•મંનાઈઓ*

ઉલીઅંમને•શીકાર•કરવાનો•ઘણો•ઇશક• હતો•તેથી• તેણે શ્રી•હાંમપશીઅર•પરાંતમાં•તીશ•માઇલનાં•ઘેરાવા•શુધી•જેકાંઇ•ગાંમો હતાં•તે•શઘલાં•ભાંગી•નખાવેઆં•અને•શંઘલા•રેહેવાશીઓને•કાહાડી•મેલેઆ•ને•પોતાંને•શીકાર•રંમવાને•વાશતે•કઈ•જંગલ•કીધું•અને•શીકાર•રંમતી•વેલાઈ•કોઇ•હરખત•કરે•નહી•ઈટલા•શારૂં•તેણે•ઘણાંજ•શખત•હોકંમ•કીધા•કે•પોતે•વતરોગ•બીજો•કોઇ•,પોતાના જંગલમાં•શીકાર•કરે•નહી*તે•વખતમાં•જો•કોઈ•કાડુ•હરંણ•ડુકર•અથવા•શશો•મારે•તો•તેહની•આંખો•કાહાડીને•શજા• આપતા•અને•માંણશનાં•જીવ•કરતાં•જનાવરનો• જીવ•તેવો•વધતો• ઈમ•ગાંણતા•હતા*તે•જમાંનાંમાં•જુલંમ•તથા•જબ રદશતી•હતી• ઈમ•લોકોને•કેહેવું•શજાવારછે•અને•જેહેવારે• આપણે• હેવા•વખતને•ઇઆદ•કરીઇ•તેહેવારે•આપણને•હવડાંનાં•વખતમાં•જે• છુટાપણું તથા•જે•આશરો•મલેઅ•તેહેનાં•શુકરાંનાં•કીધાં•જોઇઇ*

ઉલીઅંમ•શ્રી•ફરાંશમાં• ૧૦૮૭ નાં•વરશમાં•એકાએક•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*તેણે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશનાં•પાદશાહની• શંગાથે•લડાઈ•કીધી•અને• તેહનાં•એક•શેહેર•ઉપર•હલો•કરતો•હતો• તે• વેલાએ•ઉલીઅંમનાં• ઘોડાનાં•આગલનાં•પગ• ઉંની•રાખનાં•ઢગલા•ઉપર•પડેઆ• તેથી• તેણે હેવીતો•ભારી• ઘોડા•ઉપરથી• પટકી•ખાધી•કે પાદશાહાને•જખંમ•થઓ• તેથી• તે•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

તેહેનો•વડો•છોકરો• રાબરટ• શ્રી•નારમંડી• પરાંતનો• ડીઉક• થઓ•અને•(તેહેનો•બીજો•છોકરો•) ઉલીઅંમ• શ્રી• ઈંગાલંડનો•પાદશા•થઓ*પંણ•આએ•બીજા•ઉલીઅંમની•વારતા•હું• તમને•મારા•આવતા•પતરમાં•શંભલાવીશ*ઇઆદ•રાખો•કે• પેહેલો•ઉલીઅંમ• (કે•જે•કેહવાએચ•ફતેમંદ•)તેણે• એકવીશ•વરશ•શુધી•રાજ•કીધું•અને તે• ૧૦૬૬ નાં•વરશમાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો•અંને•તે• ૧૦૮૭ નાં•શાલમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

“ઉલીઅંમ•ફતેમંદ”ની•આબરૂનો•ટુક•હેવાલ

(“ગોલડઈશમીથ”ની•બંનાવેલી•વાત•માંહેથી.)

ઉલીઅંમ•પાદશાહા•ઘણોજ•દલેર•તથા• શક્તીવાંન•તથા• લોભી•તથા•શેઆંણો•તથા•ઘાતકી•તથા•કીનાંખોર•તથા• જુલંમગાર•હતો*તે•કીરતી•મેલવવાને•ચાહાતો•હતો•અને• તે•એક•વખત•પઈશો•બંચાવતો•હતો•એટલા•શારૂં જે•બીજી•વખતે•ધુમધાંમથી•ખરચ•ઘણો•કરે*તે• પોતાનાં•કાંમ•એકાએક•અને•ઉતાવલાં•કરતો•હતો•તોબી• તે•લડાઈની•વખતે•ઠંડો•તથા•શાવચેત•અને•મેહેનતુ• હતો*શ્રી•નારમંડીની•(વારતા•)લખનારાઓ•હેનાં•વીશે•કેહેચ•કે• તે•આઠ•ફુટથીબી•વધારે•ઉંચો•હતો•અને• તેહેનું•શરીર• જોરાવર•અને•એક•શરખું•તથા•શોભીતું•હતું•અને• તેહેનું•જોર•હેવું•હતું•કે•તેહેની•કચેરીનાં•કોઈ•શખશથી• તેહની•કંમાંન• ખેંચી•શકાએ•નહી*તે થોડીજ•વાતચીત•કરતો•અને•લાંનફરાંક•એટલે•જે• શ્રી•કેનટરબરીનો આરચબીશપ•(ઇઆને•મુખીઆ•પાદરી•)શીવાએ•બીજા•કોઇ•ઉપર• તે માઆલુ•નહી•હતો• તેહેની•શંગાથે• તે•નરંમ•મીજાજનો•તથા•ભલો

રેહેતો• અને• બીજા• શંઘલાઓ• શાથે• શખત• તથા• કઠંણ• મીજાજનો હતો* તે• શંઘલાઓનો• દુશમંન• થઓ• હતો• તોપંણ• તેહેને• પોતાની• હોશીઆરીથી• પોતાનો• હધીકાર• પોતાની• ઓલાદને• આપી• ગીઓ• અને• એ• તખત• હજુર• શુધી• તેહેની• ઓલાદનાંજ• હાથમાં છે*

હવે• જેકાંઇ• તમે• વાંચેઉં ચ• તે• શારી• પઠે• ઇઆદ• રાખો• અને તમે• આએ• શવાલોનાં•જવાબ• દેઇ•જોવો•

શવાલો*

ઉલીઅંમ• ફતેમંદકી• આ• વરશમાં• શ્રી• ઇંગલંડમે•આવેઓ*
તે• કીઆ• દુનીઆનાં• દેશમાંથી• આવેઓ*
તે• શ્રી• ઇંગલંડનાં•કીઆ•ભાગમાં• આવી• ઉતરેઓ*
તે• વખતે• શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનો• પાદશા• કોંણ• હતો*
શૂં• લડાઇ• થઇ• ઇઆ• નહી*
કાંહાં• થઇ*
ઉલીઅંમ• ઇંગલીશ• લોકો• શાથે• કેમ• ચાલેઓ*
શ્રી• નારથંબરલાંડ• પરાંતમાં• તેણે• શૂં•જુલંમનું• કાંમ• કીધું*
ઉલીઅંમને• કેટલા• છોકરા• હતા*
તેવોનાં• નાંમ• શૂં•હતાં*
એ• લાઇઓ• વીશેની• એકાદી• કાંહાંણી• તમને• માલંમ છે*
તેમાંહાંનો•વડો• છોકરો• પોતાનાં•બાપની•શાથે• શીરીતે• ચાલેઓ*
વડા• છોકરાંનાં• ફીશાદથી• કેહેવા• અંનરથ• થતા• હતા*
પાદશાને• કેહી• રંમુજ•ઘણી• પશંદ• હતી*
આએ•રમુજ• કરવાને•વાશતે• તેહેને• શૂં• જુલંમનું• કાંમ• કીધું*
ઉલીઅંમ• કાંહાં• મરંણ• પાંમેઓ• અને• તેહનાં• મરંણનું• કારંણ• શૂં•હતું*
એ• (મરંણ•)કીઆ• વરશમાં•થઉં*
ઉલીઅંમની• પછી• શ્રી• ઇંગલંડનો• પાદશાહ• કોંણ• થઓ*

LETTER III.

MY DEAR BOY,

In my last letter, I told you that William the Second came to the throne in the year 1087.

This William was called *Rufus*, because he had red hair, *rufus* being the Latin word for *red*.

You know that *Robert* was the eldest son of William the Conqueror, and therefore *he* ought to have been king of England; but his father refused to leave him the kingdom, on account of his bad behaviour: William Rufus, however, was not, in the least, better than his brother, but he had the art to conceal his bad disposition.

The two brothers had frequent quarrels, and many battles, about the possession of the kingdom; but William generally was victorious.

It is in this reign that we first hear about the *Crusades*: and these seem to have occupied the thoughts of all the great Christian warriors of those days.—But perhaps you never have heard of these Crusades.

You must know then, that there was, in France, a man called Peter the Hermit, and he had gone on a pilgrimage to Jerusalem; and, there, his spirit was grieved within him to think that the land which our Lord had trod, should be in possession of the pagan enemies of the cross; and that these enemies should harass and persecute the Christian believers. He therefore thought that it would be a good Christian work to deliver the Holy Land from the hands of these unbelieving persecutors, the Saracens, and to get it into the possession of the Christians. This Peter, therefore, went about all Europe, exhorting kings and warriors to engage in this pious cause, and he was so successful, that people of all ranks seemed ready to join in the undertaking. Robert, duke of Normandy, was so eager for this holy war, that he became perfectly careless about getting the kingdom of England from his brother William; and he was so indifferent too even about his dukedom of Normandy, that he mortgaged it to William for a sum of money, and then set off for the holy war.

When I think of the Crusades, I never can help admiring the zeal and devotion of those warriors who went forth in the cause of the Christian religion. At the same time, I think that they were quite mistaken in their notions of religion, in expecting to propagate the mild spirit of the Christian faith by means of war and bloodshed. Still, however, these great soldiers showed a zeal and earnestness in the cause of the Gospel, which may well make *us* ashamed of our carelessness and indifference in the same cause.

The warriors who went on these Crusades wore a red cross on their right shoulder: and you see that many noblemen and gentlemen who are descended from these ancient soldiers, have, at this day, red crosses on their coats of arms. I do not expect that they will now draw their swords, as their forefathers did, in the cause of the Gospel; but many of them are encouraging the knowledge of it by means much more likely to succeed, and much more likely to be favoured with the Divine blessing. But, not to keep you too long, I shall hasten to the end of the reign of William Rufus.

William was, like his father, a great lover of hunting: and, as he was one day taking his favourite diversion in the New Forest, attended by Sir Walter Tyrrel, a French knight, who generally accompanied him, the king wounded a stag with an arrow from his bow. And as he was pursuing the animal, in hopes of seeing him fall, Tyrrel let fly an arrow at the stag, which, glancing from a tree, struck the king to the heart. He dropped down dead on the spot, and Sir Walter Tyrrel, fearful of the consequences, put spurs to his horse, and galloped away to the sea-shore, and set off for France, and joined a Crusade, which was then just going to Jerusalem. William's body, being found by some countrymen, was laid across a horse and carried to Winchester, where it was buried the next day in the cathedral without any marks of respect, as nobody had any regard or value for this king. The death of William Rufus was in the year 1100.

Character of William Rufus, (from Smollett).

"William the Second had neither learning, principle, nor honour: he was haughty, passionate, and ungrateful; a scoffer at religion, a scourge to the clergy; vain-glorious, talkative, rapacious, lavish, and dissolute. He took all opportunities to fleece and enslave his English subjects, and, at one time, imprisoned fifty of the best families in the kingdom, on the pretence of their having killed some deer. He was likewise a great profligate."

QUESTIONS.

In what year did William the Second come to the throne?
What was this William called?
Why was he so called?
Was William the eldest son of the Conqueror?
What was the name of the eldest son?
Why was not this eldest son king?
What country did he rule over?
What do you mean by the Crusades?
Who was Peter the Hermit?
Did the king's eldest brother join the Crusades?
What particular badge did the warriors in the Crusades wear on their dress?
What particular amusement was William Rufus fond of?
What was the cause of his death?
Who shot him?
In what year was this?
Was he buried with due marks of respect?
Why not?
Where was he buried?
In what year did he die?
Was he a good or a bad king?

પતર• ૩

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

માહારા• આગલનાં• પતરમાં• મે• તમને• શંભલાવેઉ• હતું• કે• ૧૦૮૭ નાં• વરશમાં• બીજો• ઉલીઅંમ• તખત• ઉપર• બેઠો*

એ• ઉલીઅંમને• રુફશ• કરી• કેહેતા• હતા કાંએજે• એહેને• લાલબાલ• હતા• અને• "રુફશ• "એટલે જે• લાટીનબોલીમાં• લાલ• રંગને• કેહે છે*

તમો• જાંણો છો• કે• ઉલીઅંમ• ફતેમંદનો• વડો• છોકરો• રાબરટ• હતો• એટલા• શારૂં• તેહેને• શ્રી• ઈંગલંડનો• પાદશાહા• થાવું• જો

ઈગું•હતું•પંણ• તેહેની•નરશી•ચાલને•લીધે• તેહેનાં•બાપે• તેહેને• એ•પાદશાહી•આપી•નહી• —ઉલીઅંમ•રૂપશબી• હેનાં•ભાઈ•કરતાંજે કાંઈ•વધારે•શારો•નોહતો•પંણ• તેહેનાંમાં• પોતાનો• ભુંડો•શવભાવ•શાંતી•રાખવાની•અકલ•હતી*

એ•રાજ• લેવાને•વાશતે•એ•બંધો•ભાઈઓએ• ઘણી• વખત•કજીઆ•તથા•લડાઈઓ•કીધી•પંણ•ઘણું•કરીને•ઉલીઅંમ• ફતેહે•પાંમતો*

એ•પાદશાહનાં•વખતમાંજ•પેહેલાં•કરૂશેડ• (એટલેજે• ધરંમ•બાબતની•લડાઈઓ• પેદા•થાઈઓ•)તે•વીશે•આપણ• વાંચીએ—અને• તેજ•વખતનાં•ખરીશટીઆંન•શંઘલા• મોહોટા• ગોહોટા• લડનારાઓએ• એ• હેવી•લડાઈ•કરવાનો•વીચાર• કીધો*પંણ•કદાચ• એ•ધરંમ•બાબતની•લડાઈ•વીશે•તમે•કદી•શાંભલેઉં•નહી• હશે*

તેવારે•તમને•જણાવવુ•લાજંમ છે•કે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ• દેશમાં•પીટરશાધુ•કરીને•એક•શખશ•હતો•અને• તેણે•શ્રી જીરૂશાલેમની• હજ•કીધી•હતી•અને•તાંહાં• તેણે• જોઉં કે• જે• જગોમાં• ઈશૂખરીશટ• પેદા•થઓ• હતો• તે•જગો•ખરીશટીઆંન•ધરંમનાં• દુશમનો• તથા• જુદદી•નવાબ• લોકોનાં•હાતમાં•હતી•અને•એશાતરૂઓ• ખરીશટીઆંન• લોકો•ઉપર•જુલંમ•તથા•જબરદશતી•કરતા•હતા• તે• જોઈને•તે પોતાની•મેલે•ઘણો•દલગીર•થઓ*એટલા•શારૂં• તેણે• જાંણેઉં કે•આએ•કાફર•અને•જુલમગાર• લોકોનાં•કબજા• માંથી• તે• ખરીશટીનાં•ધરંમની•જગા• છોડાવીને• તે•ખરીશટીઆંન• લોકોનાં• પોતાનાં શવાધીન•રેહેતો•ઘણુંજ•શારૂં•પુનનું•કાંમ•થાશે*માટે•એ• પીટર•શાધુ બધા•શ્રી•ઈઉરોપખંડનાં•પાદશાઓને•તથા• લડનારાઓને•એ•પુનનું કાંમ•કરવાને•વાશતે•ઉશકેરતો•ફરેઓ•અને• તે• હેવોતો•જએ•પાંમેઓ•કે•શંઘલે•વાંધેનાં• લોકો•એ•લડાઈમાં• શાંમેલ•થાવાને• વાશતે તઈઆર•થઆં*શ્રી•નારમંડીનો•ડીઉક•રાબરટ• એ•ધરમ•બાબતની લડાઈ•કરવા•શારૂં • હેવોતો•ચાહાતો•હતો•કે• તેણે• પોતાનાં•ભાઈ•ઉલીઅમ•પાશેથી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડની•પાદશાહી•લેવા• શારૂ• તદન• મેહેનત•કીધી•નહી•અને•શ્રી•નારમંડીનીબી• તેહેને• કાંઈચીનતા• કીધી•નહી•અને 'ઉલીઅમ•પાશેથી•કાંઈ•પઈશા•લઈને• તે•પરાંતબી

તેણે•ધરંણે•મુકેઓ•અને•પછે• તે•ધ્રંમ•બાબતની•લડાઇને• શારૂં•નીકલેઓ*

જેઆરે• કે• હું•ઈ•લડાઇઓ•વીશે• ધારૂચ• તેવારે•ખરીશટીઆંન ધ્રંમને•વાશતે•લડાઈ•કરવા•શારૂં•જે•બાહાદુરો•(પોતાંનાં• દેશ માંથી•નીકલીને•)ગીઆ• તેવણની•કોશેશ•અને• મેહેનત•તથા•જગાતીને•જોઇને• હુ•અચરત•થાઉંચ*પણ•વલી• હું•ધારૂંચ•કે• તે•બાહાદુરોઈ•ધ્રંમ•વીશે• મોહોટો•જુલાવો•ખાધો•કાંઈ કે•લડાઇ•તથા• ખુન•કીધાથી•નરંમ•ખરીશટી•ધ્રંમ•વ ધારેઓ*તોઈ પંણ•ખરીશટી•ધ્રંમને•વધારવા•શારૂં•જેકાંઇ•ઈ• મોહોટા• મોહોટા• બાહાદુરોઈ• મેહેનત•તથા•કોશેશ•કીધી•તેથી•આપણને•શરંમ•લાગેચ•કાંઈકે હાલમો• તેજ•કારંણશર•(ઇઆને•ખરીશટી•ધ્રંમ•વધારવા•શારૂં) આપણ•પરવા•કરતા•નહી•અને•શ્રૂશત•છઇઈ*

જે• પેહેલવાંનો•કે•ઈ•ધ્રંમની•લડાઇ• કરવા•જતા• હતા• તેવો• પેતાની•જંમણી•બાજુઈ•ઈક•કરૂશ•(ઇઆને•ઇશ્રૂ ખરીશટની•નીશાંની•)રાખતા•હતા•અને•તમો•પંણ•જોતા•હશો•કે• ઘણાંઈક•અમીરો•તથા• મોહોટાં•માંણશો•કે• જેવો•ઈ•પુરાતંન•વખતનાં• પેહેલવાંની• ઓલાદનાં છે• તેઓ•આજ•દીન•શ્રૂધી•પોતાનાં•લશકરી• પેહેરવાશમાં•ડગલાવો•ઉપર•લાલ•કરૂશની•નીશાંની• રાખેચ*હુ•ઈમ•નથી•ધારતો•કે• પોતાનાં•વરવાઓની•માફક•ખરીશટી•ધ્રંમ•વધારવાને•વાશતે• તેવો•પંણ•હવડાં•તલવાર•બાંધીને•લડાઇ•કરશે•પંણ• તેવો•માંહેનાં•ઘણાં•શખશો•ખરીશટી•ધરમનું•ગનેઆંન•વધારવાને વાશતે•હેવી•રીતે•આશરો•કરેચ•કે•તેથી•કાંમ•બર•આવે•અને• તેથી•પરમેશવર•ખુશી•થાઈ*પંણ•તમને• હું•ઘણીવાર•શ્રૂધી• ખોટી• નહી•રાખીશ• —ને•હવે•ઉલીઅમ• રૂફશની•પાદશાહી•શીરીતે•તમાંમ•થાઇ• તે• હું•ઉતાવલેથી•કહુંચ*

ઉલીઆંમને• પોતાનાં•બાપની•માફક• શેકાર•રંમવાનો• ઘણો• શોક•હતો•અને• તે•ઈક•દીવશે•શરવાલટર-ટીરેલ•કરીને•ઈક•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશનો•શરદાર•હતો•કે•જે•ઘણુંકરીને•પાહાદશાહાનો•શોબતી હતો• તેહેની•શાથે•ઉલીઅમ•શ્રી•નીઉફારેશટનાં•જંગલમાં• શેકાર• રંમતો•હતો• તે• વેલાઈ•પાહાદશાઈ•તીર•મારીને•ઈક• હરણને•ઘા

ઈક્ષ• કીધુ*અને• તે• હરંણ•કાહાં• પરેઉ• તે• લેવા• શારૂં• તે• તેહની• પછવાડે• જતો• હતો• ઈટલાંમાં• ટીરેલે• તે• હરંણ• ઉપર• ઈક• તીર• ફેકેઓ• તે•તીર•જાહડની•શાથે• છટકીને•પાહાદશાહાની•છાતીમાં•વાગો। તેણે•કરીને• પાદશાહા• ભોંઈપર• પરીને• મરંણ•પાંમેઓ• અને• તેથી શરવાલટર•ટીરેલને•લઈ•લાગો• કે હવે• શૂં•બુરૂ•થાશે•ઈ•માટે• તેણે• પોતાનાં• ઘોડાને• ઈર• મારીને• દોડાવતો• ઠેઠ• સુદરને•કાંઠે• આવેઓ• અને• તાંહાંથી• શ્રી• ફરાંશદેશમાં• જઇને• જે• લોકો• ધરંમની• લડાઇ•કરવાને• વાશતે• શ્રી•જીરૂશલેમ•જાતા• હતા• તેનાંવોની•શાથે•થઇ• ગીઓ*ઉલીઅંમનુ• મુરદુ• કોઇ• ગાંમ• વાલાઓને• મલેઉં• તેવોઈ તેણે• ઘોડા• ઉપર• નાંખીને•શ્રી• વીનચેશટરમાં• લઇ• ગીઆ• અને• તાંહાંજ• બીજે• દીને• દેવલમાં• દફનાંવેઉ• પણ• તે• પાહાદશાહાનાં• મુરદાંને• માંન• ઘટારત છે• તે• કાંઇ• લોકોઈ• આપેઉ• નહી• કાંઈ કે• આઈ• પાહાદશાહાને• કોઇ• માંનતુ• અથવા• ગાંણતુ• નોહતુ*ઉલીઅંમ• રૂફશ ૧૧૦૦ નાં•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

(ઇશમાલેટની• બનાવેલી• હકાઈતમાંથી•)ઉલીઅંમ•રૂફશની• આબરૂ
વીશેનો•શાર*

“બીજા• ઉલીઅંમને• વીદીઆ•અકલ• અથવા•આબરૂ•નોહતી• અને તે• મગારૂર• ગોશા• વાલો• તથા• નીમક• હરાંમ• હતો• અને• ધરંમની• નીદા•કરનારો• અને• પાદરીઓને• દુખ•કરનારો• અને• પોતાની•વખાંણ•કરનારો• અને• ઘણું• બોલનારો• તથા• લુટારો• અને• ખરચાઉ•અને છાકટો• હતો* તે• શઘલી• વેલા•શ્રી• ઇંગલંડની• રઇઈતને• લુટતો• તથા તેવોને• ગોલાંમનાં• જેહેવા•કરી• મેલતો• હતો• 'અને• ઈક• વખત• પોતાનાં• રાજમાંનાં• શારા• કુલનાં• લોકોઈ• કાંઇ• હરંણ• મારેઉં• હેવું • બાંહાંનુ• કાહાડીને• પચાશ• મોહોટાં• કુટંબોને• તેણે• કેદ• કીધાં*અને• તે ઘણો• રંડીબાજ• હતો*”

શવાલો*

બીજો• ઉલીઅંમ• કીઆ• શાલમાં• તખત• ઉપર• બેઠો*
ઈ• ઉલીઅંમને• બીજું• શૂં• નાંમ• આપેઉં• હતું*
તેહેને• શાવાશતે• ઈ• નાંમ• આપેઉં• હતું*
શૂં• બીજો• ઉલીઅમ• ઉલીઅમ• ફતેમંદનો• વડો• છોકરો• હતો*

વડા•છોકરાનું•નાંમ•શું•હતું*

ઈ•વડો•છોકરો•પાદશાહ•કેમ•નહી•થઓ*

તે•કીઆં•દેશ•ઉપર•હાકમી•કરતો•હતો*

કરૂશેડની•માઈની•તમે•શું•શાંમજોછો*

પીટર•શાધુ•તે•કોંણ•હતો*

શું•પાદશાહનો•વડો•ભાઈ•ધરંમ•બાબતની•લડાઈમાં•ગીઓ•હતો*

ધરંમની•લડાઈમાં•જનારા•પેહેલવાંનો•પોતાનાં•પોશાક•ઉપર•શું•નીશાંની•રાખતા•હતા*

ઉલીઈમ•રુફશને•શું•રંમવાનો•શોક•હતો*

તેહેનાં•મરંણ પાંમેઆનું•શું•કારંણ•હતું*

તેહેને•કોણે•મારેઓ*

ઈ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•થઉં*

ઘટતું•માંન•આપીને•તેહેને•દફનાવેઓ•કે•નહી*

કાંઈ•નહી*

તેહેને•કાંહાં•ડાટેઓ*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમે•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

તે•શારો•અથવા•નરશો•પાદશાહ•હતો*

LETTER IV.

MY DEAR BOY,

I suppose you pay great attention to what I write to you, and that you will be glad to hear more about the kings of England. You must know, then, that there were no less than eight kings of England of the name of Henry. The one that I am now going to write about is Henry the First; he came to the throne after William the Second. Henry was the *younger* brother of William, and therefore he had no right to the crown, for that belonged properly to Robert, the elder brother; but, at this time, Robert was at Jerusalem, engaged in the holy wars. However, when he returned, he took possession of his own dukedom of Normandy, and then came and demanded to be king of England. He was, however, an idle, vain sort of person; and Henry bribed him with a sum of money, and easily persuaded him to go quietly home again; and then they agreed, that, if either of them died without children, the other should have both England and Normandy.

However, Robert, instead of being fit to govern *both*, soon showed that he could not manage *one*. His country of Normandy was soon in such a wretched state, that the people were obliged to send over for Henry to put things in order for them. Henry was glad enough to do this, and he went over to France with a large army, and he engaged in a battle against his brother, took him prisoner, and kept him for the rest of his life a prisoner in Cardiff Castle, in Glamorganshire. Glamorganshire, you know, is a county in South Wales, bordering on the sea.

Henry now had nothing to disturb him in his government. He was in possession of both England and Normandy; he had a son for his heir, a fine young man about eighteen years of age; and he had likewise a daughter, named Matilda, who was married to the Emperor of Germany. In short, the worldly affairs of this king seemed altogether flourishing and prosperous. But, alas, how little is any thing in this world to be depended on, and how vain it is to expect that all the greatness and dignity upon earth will ward off affliction and sorrow! Nay, great riches often bring great troubles with them; and the fear of losing them often leads to grievous misery and distress. It was just so with this king. He was afraid, that he, or his son after him, might lose the dukedom of Normandy; he therefore took this son over to France, to have him acknowledged as his heir. After this was over, the king was returning to England in great state and splendour, with a vast retinue of his chief nobility. The king's son and a number of young noblemen were to return together in one ship, but they did not set sail so soon as the king. They staid behind to indulge in feasting and drinking; and danger, you know, generally comes of that vice, whether among the rich or the poor. The sailors drank so much that they were not able to manage the ship, and they ran her against a rock—and she was immediately dashed to pieces. The young prince was put into a boat, and might have been saved, but he heard the shrieks of his sister Maude, and ordered his boat to be rowed to her, to try to save her. Many of the poor creatures who were on the broken ship then jumped into the boat, and, there being too many of them, the boat went down to the bottom with them all. It is said that 140 young noblemen of England and Normandy all perished together. One man only, instead of venturing into the boat, clung to the mast of the ship, and was taken up by some fishermen the next morning.

The king, who had arrived safely in England, was expecting his son with the greatest anxiety for three days; and, when at last he was assured that the prince was drowned, he seemed quite overburdened with grief; and it is said that he was never seen to smile from that moment to the day of his death. Thus we may see the misery that every man is exposed to, who rests his happiness on any thing in this world! It is our duty, as well as our happiness, to love our children; but we should so love them as to feel that they may be, at any moment, taken away from us. How excellent are the words of the poet—

"O Death, all eloquent! you only prove,
What dust we doat on when 'tis man we love."
POPE.

This is true indeed! there is nothing sure and lasting in this world below. How beautiful then, and how noble is that advice which we read in Scripture! "Set your affection on things *above*." Henry the First died in the year 1135.

Character of Henry the First, (from Smollett.)

"Henry was of a middle stature and robust make, with dark brown hair, and blue serene eyes. He was facetious, fluent, and affable to his favourites. His capacity, naturally good, was improved and cultivated in such a manner that he obtained the name of Beau Clerc (or the fine scholar) by his learning. He was cool, cautious, penetrating, and bold; but cruel, revengeful, rigid, and severe. His Norman descent and connections caused him to despise the English, whom he oppressed in the most tyrannical manner."

QUESTIONS.

How many English kings were there of the name of Henry ?

Whose son was Henry the First ?

In what year did he begin to reign ?

Who ought to have been king ?

Why was not Robert king ?

On his return from the Holy Land, did Robert assert his right to the Crown ?

How was it that he did not succeed ?

What agreement was made between Robert and Henry ?

How did Robert go on in Normandy ?

What became of him ?

Had Henry any children ?

What happened to Henry's son ?

Did any other persons perish with the young prince ?

How many were saved ?

How did the king bear his loss ?

In what year did king Henry die ?

પતર• ૪

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

હું• ધારુંચ• કે• તમુને• જે• હું• લખીને• મોકલુછેઉં• તે• ઉપર• તમે ઘણુ• ધેઆંન• પોંહોંચાડોચ• અને• શ્રી• ઈગલંડ• દેશનાં• પાદશાહાઓની• વારતા• શાંભલેઆથી• તમે• ઘણાં• ખુશી• થશો*તમને• માલંમ• થાઈ કે• હેનરી• નાંમનાં• શ્રી• ઈંગલંડ• દેશમાં• આઠ• પાદશાહાઓ• થઆ*હમણાં• જે• પાદશાહાની• વીશે• હું• તમને• લખુચ• તેહેનું• નાંમ• પેહેલો હેનરીછે• — ઈ• ધણી• બીજા• ઉલીઆંમની• પછી• તખત• ઉપર• બેઠો* હેનરી• ઉલીઆંમનો• નાંધલો• ભાઈ• હતો• તેટલા• શારૂં• તખત• ઉપર• બેશવાનો• તેહેનો• હક• હતો• નહી• કાંઈકે• ઈ• તખત• હેનાં• વડા• ભાઈ રાબરટને• મલવું• જોઈઈ• પંણ• ઈ• વેલાઈ• રાબરટ• શ્રી• જીરૂશાલેમમાં• ધરંમ• બાબતની• લડાઈમાં• ગુતેલો• હતો*તોબી• જેવારે• કે• તે• તાંથી• પાછો• આવેઓ• તેવારે• તેણે• પોતાનાં• શ્રી• નારમંડી• પરાંતનો• અખતીઆર• લીધો• અને• પછે• આવીને• શ્રી• ઈંગલંડનો• પાદશાહા• થવા• માંગેઉં*તે• આલશુ• અને• અભીમાંની• હતો• ઈ• માટે• હેનરીઈ• તે

હેને•કાંઇ•પઇશાની•લાલચ•આપીને•તેહેને•શેહેજ• શંમજાવીને•પોતાને•ઘેર•પાછો•મોકલેઓ•અને•તેવારે•તેવોઇ•હેવો•ઠરાવ•કીધો•કે•જો•તેવો•બેહુમાંથી•ઓલાદ•થાઇઆ•વીનાં•જે•કોઇ•મરીજાઇ•તો•જે•જીવતો•હોઇ•તે•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•તથા•નારમંડી•બંધે•દેશો•લીઈ*

રાબરટ•હેવો•હતો•કે•બેહુ•રાજ•તો•શું•પંણ•ઇક•ચલાવાની•તે•લાઇઅકનો•હતો•હેવું•તેરતજ•માલંમ• પડેઉં*તેહેનાં•શ્રી•નારમંડીનાં•દેશની•હેવી•ખરાબ•અવશતા• થાઇ•કે•શરવ•ચીજનુ•શમાંધાન•કરવાને•વાશતે•તાંહાંનાં•લોકોને•હેનરીને•બોલાવાને•ફરજ•પડી*હેનરી•હેવું•કરવાને•ઘણો•ખુશી•હતો•અને• તે•ઇક•મોહોટી•ફોજ•લેઈને•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•ગીઓ•અને•તેણે•પોતાનાં•ભાઇ•શંગાથે•લડાઇ•કરીને•તેહેને•કેદમાં•પકડીને• ગાલેમારગેનશીઅરમાં•કીઆરડીફ•કરીને•કીલો•છે•તાંહાં•મરે•તાંહાં•લગી•તેહેને•રાખેઓ*તમે•જાંણતા•હશો•કે•શ્રી•વેલશ•દેશની•દખંણની•બાજુઇ•શમુદરનાં•કીનારાની•તરફ•ઇ•ગાલેમારગેનશીઅરનું•પરાંત•છે*

હવે•હેનરીનાં•રાજમાં•હરખત•થાઇ• હેવુ•કાંઇ•નોહતુ*શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•તથા•નારમંડી•ઇ•બંધે•રાજ•તેહેને• શવાધીનમાં•હતાં•અને•તેહનો•વારેશ•ઇક•છોકરો•હતો•તે•આશરે•હરાર•વરશની•ઉમરનો•ઇક•શારો•જવાંન•હતો—અને•મેટીલેડા•નાંમની•તેહેની•ઇક•છોકરી•પંણ•હતી•તે•શ્રી•જરમેનીનાં•શાહાંનશાહા•શાથે•પરણી•હતી*મતલબ•ઇકે•આઇ•પાદશાહાનો•દુનીઆંદારીનો•કારભાર•આબાદ•અને•શૂખી•હેવો•નજર•આવેઓ*પંણ•અફસોશ•છે•કે•આઇ•દુનીઆંમાં•કશી•વાતનો•ભરોશો•નથી•અને•દુનીઆંમાં•જેકાંઇ•મોહોટાઇ•તથા•મરતબો•છે•તેથી•ખરાબી•તથા•દુખ•નહી•થાશે•હેવુ•ધારવુ•ફોકટ•છે*નેવલી•ઘણી•દોલતની•શંગાથે•ઘણીજ•ચીનતા•પેદા•થાઇછે•કાંઇકે•તે•દોલત•ખોવાની•ફીકરથી•ઘણી•દશદી•તથા•દુખ•પેદા•થાઇછે*હેવીજ•(ફીકર•)આઇ•પાદશાહાને•થઈ*તે•બીહીતો•હતો•કે પોતાની•પાશેથી•અથવા•પોતાનાં• (મુવા)પછે•પોતાનાં•છોકરા•પાશેથી•શ્રી•નારમંડીનું•રાજ•કદાચીત•જાશે• રેહેશે•ઇટલા•શારૂં•તે•પોતાનાં•છોકરાને•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•લઇ•ગઓ•કે•તેહેને•પો

તાની• (પાદશાહાતનો•)વારેશની• માફક• શરવ• લોકો• કબુલ• કરે* એ• (કાંમ•)થઈ• રહ્યા• પછે• પાદશાહા• પોતાનાં• મોહોટા• મોહોટા• શરદારોની• બેહ્જાર• શવારી• લેઈને• મોહોટા• દબદબા• તથા• ધુમધુંમથી શ્રી• ઈંગલંડમાં• જાવાને• વાશતે• તાંહાંથી• નીકલેઆ* તે• વેલાએ• પાદશાહાનો• છોકરો• તથા• કેટલાએક• જવાંન• ઉમરાવો• એક• વાંહાંણમાં• બેશીને• નીકલનાર• હતા• પંણ• તેવો• હેનરી• પાદશાહાની• શાથે• વેહેલા• નીકલેઆ• નહી* અને• તેવો• ખાવા• પીવાને• વાશતે• પછવાડે• રહ્યા• અને• તેમો• જાંણોય• કે• મોહોટાં• માંણશ• અથવા• ગારીબો• (દારૂ• ઘણો• પીએય•)તે• બદીથી• શું• શું• ખરાબી• થાએય* તે• વાંહાંણનાં• ખલાશીઓએ• એટલોબધો• દારૂપીધો• હતો• કે• તેવો• વાંહાંણને• હંકારી શકેઆ• નહી• અને• તેવોએ• તેહેને• ખરક• ઉપર• ચહડાવી• દીધું• તેથી• તે• વાંહાંણ• ભાગીને• કકરેકકરા• થઈ• ગીઉં* જવાંન• શાહાજાદાને• એક• હોડીમાં• બેશાડેઆ• તેથી• તે• જીવતો• રહ્યો• હોતે• પંણ• તેણે• પોતાની• બેહેન• માંડની• ચીશ• શાંભલીને• પોતાની• હોડીમાં• લેવા• શારૂં• પેલીની• તરફ• હોડી• હંકારવાનો• હોકંમ• કીધો* તેવારે• તે• ભાગેલા• વાંહાંણમાં• જે• લોકો• હતા• તેહેમાંથી• ઘણાં• લોકો• તે• હોડીમાં કુદી• પરેઆ• અને• તે• હોડીમાં• ઘણાંજ• આદમી• થઆં• માટે• તેવો• શરવેને• લેઈને• તે• હોડી• શમુદરમાં• ડુબી• ગેઈ* હેવું• કેહે છે• કે• તે• વેલાએ• શ્રી• ઈંગલંડ• તથા• નારમંડીનાં• ૧૪૦ જવાંન• ઉમરાઓ• શાથે જ• મરંણ• પાંમેઆં* તેહેમાંમો• એક• માંણશ• કે• જે• તે• હોડીમાં• નહી• કુદેઆ• અને• વાંહાંણનાં• ડોલને• વલગી• રહ્યો• હતો• તેહેને• બીજે• દીવશે• શવારે• કોઈ• માછી• લોકોએ• કાહાડેઆ• (તે• માતરે• બનચેઆ*)

(હેનરી•)પાદશાહા• શ્રી• ઈંગલંડમાં• શહીશલાંમત• પોંહોચીને• ઘણી• ચીનતા• કરીને• પોતાનાં• છોકરાની• તરણ• દીવશ• શુધી• વાટ• જોતો• હતો• તે• જેવારે• કે• પોતાનાં• છોકરાને• ડુબેઆની• ખબર• શાંભલી• તેવારે• તેહેને• ઘણરૂ• દુખ• થાઉં• અને• એમ• કેહે છેકે• પાદશાહાને• તે• દીવશ• થી તે• છેક• મરેઆ• તાંહાં• લગાંણ• કોઈએ• તેહેને• કાંઈ• હશતાં• જોઈઆ• નહી* એ• પરમાંણે• આપણે• જોઈએય• કે• જે• કોઈ•

આ•દુનીઆંનાં•શુખ•ઉપર•ભરોશો•રાખેચ•તેવો•ઘણું•કરીને•દુખી•થાઈચ*પોતાનાં•છોકરાં•ઉપર•હેત•રાખવું•ઈ•આપણો•હક•તથા•આપણું•શુખછે•પંણ•તેવો•ઉપર•હેવો•પેઆર•રાખવો• જોઈઈ•કે•તેવો•કોઈ•વેલાઈ•આપણી•પાશેથી•જતાં•રેહેશે• (ઈઆને• મરંણ•પાંમશે*)કવેશરે•કેહેવા•ઓતંમ•વચંન•કહેલાછે—કે•

> "અરે•મોહોત•શરવ•બોલનારૂં•ગું•ઈટલું જ•માતર•દેખાડેચ•કે
> જે•માંણશને•આપંણ•ચાહીઈચ•તે•મીટીછે•કે•જેહનાં•ઉપર
> આપણે•અતી ઘણી•પરીતી•કરીઈચ*"
>
> (પોપ•)કવેશર*

ઈ•વાત•ખરીછે•કે•આઈ•નીચેની•દુનીઆંમાં•કાંઈ•વશતુબી•નીશચે•અને•શદાકાલ•રેહેનારી•નથી*જે•શીખાંમંણ•કે•ધરંમ•પુશતકમાં•આપણે•વાંચીઈચ•તે•કેહેવી•શુનદર•અને•ઓતંમછે•કે•"જે•વશતુ•કે•ઉપર•(ઈઆને•બેહેશતમાં•)છે•તે•ઉપર•તમે•પોતાની•આશા•રાખો*"પેહેલો•હેનરી• ૧૧૩૫ નાં•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

પેહેલા•હેનરીની•આબરૂનું•બઆંન•(ઈશમાલેટનાં•
લખેઆ•પરમાંણે*)

"હેનરી•વચલાકદનો•હતો•અને•બલવાંન•હતો•તેહેનાં•બાલ•શોરા•થોરા•કાલા•અને•ભુરા•રંગનાં•હતા•અને•તેહેની•આંખ•ધીમી•અને•આશમાંની•રંગની•હતી* ઈ•પોતાનાં• શોબતીઓ•શાથે•ખુશ•તથા•બોલકણો•અને•માઆલુ•હતો*હેની•કાબેલીઅત•શવભાવથી•શારી•હતી•અને•વલી•તે•કેરવણીથી•હેવો•વીદેઆવાંન• થાઓ•કે•તેહેને•"બો•કલેરક•"(ઈટલેજે•ઘણો•વીદેઆવાંન•)હેવું•નાંમ•તેહેને•મલેઉ*તે•ઠંડો•તથા•હોશીઆર•તથા•ચતુર•તથા• બાહાદુર•હતો•પંણ•તે•ઘાતકી•તથા•વેરી•તથા•કઠંણ•તથા• શખત•હતો*ઈ•હેનરીનુ•કુટંમબ•તથા•શગાં•નારમંન•લોકો•હતાં• તેથી•ઈણે•ઈંગલીશ•લોકોને•ધીકારીને•તેવો•ઉપર•ઘણી•જબરદશતીથી• જુલંમ•કરતો•હતો*

શલાલો*

હેનરી•નાંમનાં•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશમાં•કેટલા•પાદશાહો•થઆ*
પેહેલો•હેનરી•કોણનો•છોકરો•હતો*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•રાજ•કરવા•લાગો*

કોણને•પાદશાહા•થવું•જોઇતું•હતું*

રાબરટે•કેમ•નહી•પાદશાહી•કીધી*

રાબરટ•શ્રી•જીરુશલેમથી•પાછો•આવેઆ•પછે•તેણે•તખતનો•દાવો•કીધો•કે•નહી*

૬•કેમ•થઉં•કે•તે•તખત•ઉપર•નહી•બેઠો*

રાબરટને•હેનરી•શાથે•શૂં•કરાર•થઓ*

શ્રી•નારમંડીમાં•રાબરટ•શીરીતે•ચાલેઓ*

પછે•તેહેનુ•શૂં•થાઉં*

હેનરીનાં•કાંઇ•છોકરાં•હતાં*

હેનરીનાં•છોકરાને•શૂં•થઉં*

શૂં•તે•જવાંન•શાહાજાદા•શાથેબી•બીજા•કોઇ•શખશો•મરંણ•પાંમેઆં*

કેટલા•શખશો•બંનચેઆ*

પાદશાહાને•તે•છોકરાનાં•શોગો•કરીને•શૂં•થઉ*

હેનરી•પાદશાહા•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

LETTER V.

MY DEAR BOY,

In my last letter I finished the history of Henry the First. The next king to him was Stephen. I shall copy out for your amusement, a little account of Stephen's reign, which I have met with in a very pretty book, called "Stories selected from the History of England: for Children."

"You must remember that Henry the First died in the year 1135. His only son, you know, was drowned; but he had one daughter, named Matilda; and before he died, he had ordered that his daughter should be queen of England; and the lords and bishops, and all the people, accepted Matilda for their queen, and took an oath to be faithful and obedient to her. But there was a cousin of Matilda's whose name was *Stephen*, who was a great

soldier, very brave, and very wicked; and although he had sworn, like all the rest, to have Matilda for queen, no sooner was the old king dead, than Stephen, wickedly breaking his oath, collected an army, and proclaimed himself king. Then there began long and bloody wars; for most of the lords, bishops, and people, remembered the oath they had taken, and were true to Matilda, and so an army was raised for her, which fought with the army of Stephen; and sometimes Matilda's army won the battle and sometimes Stephen's.

" But, at last, Stephen succeeded in driving Matilda out of England, and in getting possession of the kingdom ; but this did not last long, for Stephen was a very unjust king, and oppressed the people ; and they all rose against him, and invited Matilda to come back to England, and to bring her little son, who was called Henry, after the old king, his grandfather.

" So she and little Henry came to England, and a great army was raised for them; and it fought Stephen's army several times, and at last took Stephen himself prisoner, and he was then thrown into a prison, where he was kept a whole year ; and, during that time, Matilda was Queen of England.

" But, Stephen getting out of prison, the wars began again, and there were a dreadful number of people killed, and many a poor father and mother lost their children in the bloody battles on both sides.

" So you see what sad misfortunes were occasioned by Stephen's wickedness in breaking his promise: but you shall hear how Stephen himself, by the justice of Heaven, suffered the same misfortunes that he caused to others.

" For his chief object was that his own son Eustace should be King of England after him, and this was the chief reason of his wicked conduct; but, as if to punish him for his crime, just as he had again got quiet possession of the kingdom, this very son, Eustace, died.

" And Stephen himself died soon after ; and then young Henry became king, to the great joy of all the nation."

As I think the above account is expressed better than I could do it myself, I have written it out for you. I hope you attend to the little pieces of history that I send. And I hope that you will try to remember what title each king had to the throne, and the times when they began to reign, and when they died. Take great pains to have all these things in your memory, so as to bring them out at once, without hesitation and stammering. Stephen died in 1154. He was the son of Adelaide, the sister of the last king, and had certainly no right to have the crown when there was a daughter of the late king living. Adelaide had married the Count of Blois, a French nobleman, and thus King Stephen was called Stephen of Blois.

I am your affectionate Father.

P. S. You will find it very useful, in reading history, to make a little table of kings as you go on, marking the times when they began to reign, something in this way.

William 1st. (1066)
|
William 2d. (1087)—Henry 1st. (1100)—Adelaide.
| |
Matilda   Stephen (1135)
|
Henry 2d. (1154).

QUESTIONS.

In what year did Henry the First die?
Did he leave a son behind him?
Did he leave a daughter?
What was that daughter's name?
Ought she not to have been queen?
Who did actually take possession of the throne?
What relation was Stephen to Matilda?
Whose son was Stephen?
Did Stephen and Matilda contend for the throne?
Had Matilda a son?
What was his name?
Had Stephen a son?
What was his name?
Did Stephen's son live to be king?
Who was king after Stephen's death?
In what year did Stephen die?
Whom had Stephen's mother married?
What was Stephen called?

Now try if you can make a table of kings by yourself, as far as Henry the Second, and put the dates of the years when they began to reign.

પતર• ૫

માહારા•પેઆરા•છોકરા•

માહારાં•છેલા•પતરમો•મેં•પેહેલા•હેનરીની• વારતા•પુરી•કીધી• હતી*એ•હેનરીની•પછવાડે• ઈશટીવેન• પાદશા• થાઓ*એક• શારી•નાંધેલી• ચોપડી• કે•જેહેનું•નાંમ•"શ્રી•ઈંગલંડની•વારતા•મધેથી• છોકરાંવોને•વાશતે•ચુટી•કાહાડેલી•વાતો"• તેહેમાંથી• ઈશટીવેનની•પાદશાહીનાં•એહેવાલની•નકલ•હું•તમારુ•દીલ•ખુશ• કરવાને વાશતે•લખી• મોકલુચ*

"તમને•ઈઆદ•રાખવું•જોઈએકે• પેહેલો•હેનરી• ૧૧૩૫ નાં વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*તેહેનો•એકજ• છોકરો•હતો• તે•તમે•જાંણોચકે• બુડી•મુવો•હતો• અને• તેહેની• મેટીલડા•નાંમની•એક• છોકરી•હતી•અને• તે• પોતે•મરંણ•પાંમેઆની• આગાઉ• તેહેને• હોકંમ• કીધો•હતોકે• પોતાની• છોકરી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડની•પાહાદશા•જાદી•થાએ તે•ઉપરથી•ઉમરાવ• લોકોએ•તથા• મોહોટા•પાદરીઓએ•તથા•શરવ લોકોએ• મેટીલડાને• પોતાની•રાંણી•કબુલ•કીધી• અને• તેહેનાં•તાબેદાર•તથા•નીમક•હલાલ•થાશું•હેવા• તેવોએ•રોગાંદ• ખાધા*પંણ• મેટીલડાની•ફુઈનો•એક• છોકરો•હતો•જેહેનું•નાંમ• ઈશટીવેન•હતુ અને• તે•મોહોટો•શીપાહી•અને•ઘણોજ•બાહાદુર•અને•ઘણોજ• પાપી•હતો•અને• તેણે• પંણ•બીજા• લોકોની•પંઠે•શંમ•ખાધા•હતા• કેમેટીલડા•તખત•ઉપર•બેશે• તોબી•જે• વેલાએ• કેહેનરી•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ• તેવારે•ઈશટીવેને• પોતાનાં•રોગાંદ•પાપીની• મીશાલ•ટાડીને• ફોજ•એકઠી•કરીને• પોતે•પાદશાહા•થાઓ*તેઉપરથી• મોહોટી•ખુનાંમરકીની•લડાઈઓ•થાઈ•શાવાશતેજે•ઉમરાઓએ•તથા•મુખીઅ• પાદરીઓએ•તથા• લોકોએ•જે• શોગાંદ•ખાધા•હતા• તે•ઈઆદ•રાખીને•મેટીલડાને•રાજ•આપવા•શારૂ• તેવોએ• ફોજ•એકઠી•કીધી•અને•ઈશટીવેનની• ફોજની•શાથે•લડાઈ•કરવા•લાગા• તેવારે•કોઈ•વેલાએ• મેટીલડાની• ફોજ•જીહીતે•અને•કોઈ•વેલાએ•ઈશટીવેનની• ફોજ•ફતેહ•પાંમે*

“પંણ• અંતે• ઈશટીવેને• મેટીલડાને• શ્રી• ઈંગાલંડમાંથી• કાહાડી• મેલીને• પોતે પાદશાહી• લીધી• પંણ• તે• તેહેની• પાશે• ઘણાં• દીવશ• શુધી• રહી• નહી• કાંઈકે• ઈશટીવેન• ઘણોજ• બેઈનશાફનો• પાદશાહ હતો• ને• લોકો• ઉપર• જુલંમ• કરતો• હતો• માટે• શઘલા• લોકો• હેની શાંમે• લડવા• ઉભા• થાઆ• અને• મેટીલડાને• પાછી• શ્રી• ઈંગાલંડમાં• બોલાવી• મંગાવી• અને• તેહેની• શંગાથે• તેહેનાં• નાંધલા• છોકરાનેબી બોલાવેઆ• એ• છોકરાને• હેનાં• મંમાવા• મરનાર• હેનરી• પાદશાહાનુ નાંમ• આપેઉં• હતું*

“એમ મેટીલડા• તથા• તેહેનો• નાંધલો• છોકરો• હેનરી• શ્રી ઈંગાલંડમાં• આવેઆં• અને• તેવોને• વાશતે• એક• મોહોટી• ફોજ• એકઠી• કીધી• અને• ઈશટીવેનની• ફોજની• શાથે• ઘણી• વેલાએ• લડાઈ• કીધી• અને• અંતે• ઈશટીવેનને• પકડીને• બંધીવાંન• કરી• લીધો• ને• તેહેને• એક• વરશ• શુધી• કેદખાંનામાં• રાખેઓ• તાંહાં• શુધી• મેટીલડા• શ્રી• ઈંગાલંડની• પાદશાજાદી• રહી*

“પંણ• ઈશટીવેન• કેદમાંથી• નાહાશી• ગીઓ• માટે• ફરીથી• લડાઈ• થાવા• લાગી• તેહેમાં• ઘણાંજ• લોકો• મારેઆં• ગીઆં• અને• એ• બંને• તરફની• ખુની• લડાઈમાં• ઘણાંખરાં• બીચારાં• માએબાપોનાં• છોકરાં મારેઆં• ગીઆં*

“એપીરમાંણે• ઈશટીવેને• દુશટપંણાંથી• પોતાનાં• શોગંદ• તોડેઆ• તેથી• તમે• જુવોકે• કેહેવી• કંમબખતી• થાએ—અને• વલી• તમે• તરતજ• શાંભલશોકે• લોકોને• જે• દુખ• ઈશટીવેને• દીધાં• તેહેવાંજ• દુખ• પરમેશવરનાં• ઈનશાફથી• તેહેને• પોતાને• ભોગાવવાં• પડેઆં*

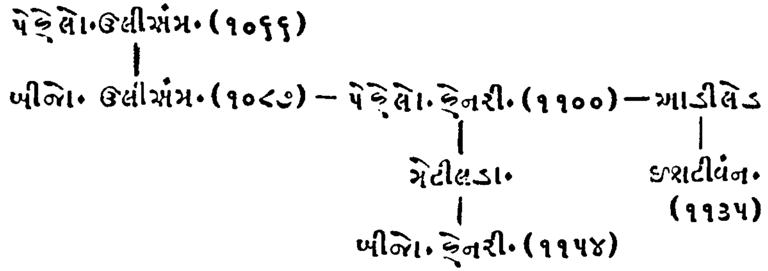
“ઈશટીવેનની• મતલબ• હેવી• હતીકે• પોતાની• પછે• પોતાનો• છોકરો• ઈઉશટેશ• શ્રી• ઈંગાલંડનો• પાદશાહા• થાએ• એ• શબબથી• એહેવી• બરાબર• રીતે• ચાલેઓ—પંણ• જાંણેકે• હેનાં• ગુનાહાની• શજા• આપી• હોએ• તેમ• જે• વેલાકે• હેને• શ્રી• ઈંગાલંડનું• રાજ• પાછું• મલેઉં• તેવારે• તેહેનો• ઈઉશટેશ• છોકરો• મરંણ• પાંમેઓ*

“અને• પછે• કાંઈએક• દીવશે• ઈશટીવેન• પોતેબી• મરંણ• પાંમેઓ• તેપછે• જવાંન• હેનરીને• રાજ• મલેઉં• તેથી• શરવ• લોકોને• મોહોટી• ખુશી• થાએ*”

ઉપર•લખેલી•બીનાં•માહારા•કરતાંને•વધારે• શારી•લખેલીછે માટે•તમારે•વાશતે• મે• હેની•નકલ•કરી• મોકલીછે*હુ•આશા•રાખુંછ•કે•જે•નાંહાંની•નાંહાંની•વારતા•હુ•મોકલુછ• તે•ઉપર• તમે•ચીત લગાડશો*અને•હરેક•પાદશાહાનો•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•શું•હક•હતો• અને•કીઆ•વરશમાં• તેવો•પાદશાઈ•કરવા•લાગા•અને• તેવો• કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ• તેબી•તમે•ઈઆદ• રાખવાની•તજવીજ•કરશો• હેવી• હુ•ઉમેદ•રાખુછ*એ•વાતે•તમે•ઘણીજ• મેહેનત• લેઈને•ઈઆદ•રાખજો•કે•જટપટ•વગાર•અટકવે•એ•દંમ• માં•કહી• દેવો*ઈશટીવેનશંન• ૧૧૫૪ માં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*ગીઆ• પાદશાહ• (પેહેલા•હેનરી•)ની•બેહેન•આડીલેડનો•એ•ઈશટીવેન•છોકરો•હતો અને•જેવારે•મરંણ•પાંમેલા•પાદશાહાની•છોકરી•જીવતી•હતી•માટે• હેનો•તખત•લેવાનો•હક•નીશયેનો•હતો*બલોઆનો•કવુનટ•કરીને એ•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશનો•ઉમરાવ•હતો• તે•શાથે•આડીલેડ•પરણેલી હતી•એટલા•શારું•ઈશટીવેન•પાદશાહાને•બલોઆનો•ઈશટીવેન•કરી કેહેતા•હતા*

હું છું તમારો• પેઆરો•બાપ*

તાજે•કલંમ*વારતા•વાંચતી•વેલાએ•પાદશાહોવોની• ટીપ•અગાર જો•તમે•બનાવતા•જશોતો• તે•તમને•ઘણું•જ•કાંમ•આવશે• અને• જે•વરશમાં•કે• તેવો•પાદશાહી•કરવા•લાગા• તેબી•તેહેમાં•લખી•જણાંવવું , તે•થોડું•ઘણું•હેઠલ•લખેઆ•પરમાંણે•કરવું*



શવાલો*

પેહેલો• હેનરી•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

તેહેની•મરતી•વખતે•છોકરો•હતો•કે•શું*

તેહેની • છોકરી • હતી • શૂં*
તે • છોકરીનું • નાંમ • શૂં*
તેહેને • પાદશાહા • જાદો • થઉં • જોઇતું • હતું • કે • નહી*
તે • તખત • કોંણે • લીધું*
ઇશટીવેન • મેટીલડાનો • શૂં • શગો • હતો*
ઇશટીવેન • કોંણનો • છોકરો • હતો*
શૂં • તખત • લેવા • શારૂં • ઇશટીવેને • આજે • મેટીલડાઈ • લડાઇ • કીધી*
મેટીલડાને • છોકરો • હતો • શૂં*
તેહેનું • નાંમ • શૂં*
ઇશટીવેનનો • છોકરો • હતો • શૂં*
તેહેનું • નાંમ • શૂં*
ઈશટીવેનનાં • છોકરાને • રાજ • મલે • તાંહાં • શૂધી • તે • જીવેઓ કે • નહી*
હશટીવેન • મરંણ • પાંમેઆ • પછે • કોંણ • રાજ • કરવા • લાગુ*
ઈશટીવેન • કીઆ • વરશમાં • મરંણ • પાંમેઓ*
ઇશટીવેનની • માઈ • કોંણની • શંગાથે • પરંણેલી • હતી*
ઇશટીવેનને • શૂં • ખેતાબ • મલેઓ • હતો*
બીજા • હેનરીની • પાદશાહી • શૂધી • જે • કાંઇ • શઘલા • પાદશાહાવો • થઆ • તેવોની • તમે • ફિ • ટીપ • કરી • જોવો • અને • તેવો • કીઆ • શાલમાં • રાજ • કરવા • લાગા • તેહેનાં • શાલની • તારીખબી • લખો*

LETTER VI.

MY DEAR BOY,

As I hear that you pay great attention to what I write, I go on with the English kings. We have now got to the reign of Henry the Second, who, as you know, was the son of Matilda, who ought to have reigned instead of Stephen. In this King Henry's reign, lived the famous Thomas à Becket. This celebrated man rose from a very low station to be Archbishop of Canterbury. He made great pretensions to piety, but he appears to have known very little of the nature of true religion, and seems to have thought that it consisted wholly of outward observances, and of

severe bodily penances and mortifications. How different is this from the true religion of the Gospel, which is a message of peace, and contains the most glad tidings which were ever made known to man! The Christian religion requires no self-inflicted punishments—it enjoins no hard observances—but it invites us to *happiness*, and shows us the way. The religion of Christ, it is true, calls upon us to "deny ourselves," but it is only when self-denial is the way to make us truly happy. It is, then, real kindness which bids us to avoid such things as will lead us to misery:—and such are *all those things* which are forbidden in the Scriptures. They are forbidden, because they would *hurt us*. And those things which we are commanded to *do*, we are commanded to do because such obedience will make us happy. How anxious then ought we to be to avoid all that the Scriptures forbid, and to obey all that they command; and how cheerfully ought we to do so, when we consider that this is all contrived for our good! But, how different is this from the mistaken severity practised by such men as Thomas à Becket! We read that "he was, in person, the most mortified man that could be seen; that he wore sackcloth next his skin; that he changed it so seldom, that it was filled with dirt and vermin; that his usual diet was bread, and his drink water, which he rendered further unpalatable by the mixture of unsavoury herbs. His back was mangled by frequent scourging! He every day washed, on his knees, the feet of thirteen beggars." Such is the account of the habits of Thomas à Becket, when he was nearly the greatest man in the kingdom. But under this appearance of humility, Becket had a heart full of pride and ambition. He had very great power among the clergy, but, instead of using it in support of the king, as a Christian subject ought to do, he employed it in opposition to his sovereign, and wished to have the clergy a rich and powerful body, thinking more about their earthly dignity than their heavenly calling. In short, the power of these Popish priests was a constant torment to the king; and he one day, in the midst of his anger, seemed to wish that he was "well rid of Becket."

You must remember that those old times were not like these in which we live. *Now*, if our king, instead of being one of the best-tempered men in the kingdom, was savage enough to wish for the death of the meanest of his subjects, he could not hurt a hair of the poor man's head:—but, in former days, if a king wished any person out of the way, there were plenty of people to do the bloody work: and a king might then easily get rid of an enemy. And thus it was, that Becket was dispatched. Four of the king's attendants, who knew their master's wishes, set off to Canterbury, and cruelly murdered Becket whilst he was kneeling at the alter at his prayers. You may be sure that, after this cruel deed, the king's conscience would not let him rest, and he afterwards vainly tried to make amends for his crime by doing penance at Becket's tomb. He accordingly went down towards Canterbury. When he got within sight of the church he alighted from his horse, and walked barefoot towards the town. Then he proceeded to the tomb of "St. Thomas of Canterbury," for so Becket was now called. Such pilgrimages were common in those days; and if you ever go to see the cathedral of Canterbury, you will see the stones worn away with the knees of the pilgrims who went to worship at the shrine of St. Thomas à Becket. What a foolish zeal for the *errors* of religion! I heartily wish we were all as earnest for its important *truths*!

It was in this king's reign that we took possession of Ireland, which has belonged to the English ever since. The Irish were, at the time we are speaking of, in a state of great ignorance. Since those days they are much improved, and are, in many respects, a fine people; but many of the poor among them are still in a state to require every help that good education and Christian instruction can give them.

Pray did you ever read the story of Fair Rosamond? O yes, you must have read it, or heard of it. Well, it was in the reign of this King Henry, that fair Rosamond lived. King Henry had married his wife (Queen Eleanor) merely for her fortune. This you know was wrong. However, when he had married her, it was his duty to have been faithful to her. But instead of this, he formed an attachment to Rosamond Clifford; and, that he might conceal her from the queen, he made a labyrinth (or a sort of winding passage) in a bower, in Woodstock Park, in Oxfordshire. The queen, however, found out this place of retreat, and, with the help of a clew of thread, contrived to make her way through all the windings of the labyrinth, till she found the retreat of Fair Rosamond. She had brought with her a dagger and a bowl of poison; and she held the dagger to Rosamond's breast, and compelled her to swallow the poison. Thus was the wicked adultery of the King and Rosamond punished by his wicked and bloody queen. And so it is,—one wicked person is often made the instrument of punishing the wickedness of others.

This King Henry was very unhappy in his children. They all rebelled against him, and made the latter days of his life very miserable. A man who has unthankful, wicked children, never can be happy, in whatever station he may be. If you are a good Christian, my dear boy, I shall be more happy than if I were a king.

The undutiful behaviour of his children, was such a grief to the king, that he gave himself quite up to despair; and he was particularly grieved to find that his *favourite*, good-for-nothing son, John, was among those who had rebelled against him. Nothing afforded him any pleasure; his health failed, and he was soon brought to his grave. He died in the year 1189, in the fifty-eighth year of his age, and the thirty-fifth of his reign.

Many writers of history give this king an excellent character; but I cannot help differing very widely from those who so represent him. I believe, indeed, as a king, he was very useful to his country, and was likewise amiable and agreeable in his disposition. But writers of history may do a deal of harm by praising those who do not deserve to be praised. Henry had caused Becket to be put to death, and he had neglected his wife, that he might live with Rosamond. Here is both murder and adultery.

I am your affectionate Father.

QUESTIONS.

Who became king after Stephen?
In what year did Henry the Second come to the throne?
Who was Archbishop of Canterbury at this time?

What was the character of Thomas à Becket ?
How did he clothe himself ?
What was his usual diet ?
Did he inflict severe punishment on his body ?
Is this sort of penance required by the Christian religion ?
Was Becket humble-minded or proud ?
Was the king offended by Becket's desire of power ?
Did he express a wish to be "well rid of Becket ?"
Did any of the king's attendants act upon this hint ?
What did they do ?
Where did they murder Becket ?
Was the king's conscience easy after this murder ?
What did the king do ?
Is there any sign in Canterbury Cathedral of many pilgrims having gone to worship at Becket's tomb ?
In whose reign did the English get possession of Ireland ?
Have we kept possession of it ever since ?
Who was fair Rosamond ?
Who killed her ?
Where ?
In what manner ?
How did King Henry's children behave to him ?
Was their behaviour a great grief to the king ?
In what year did Henry II. die ?
How old was he ?
How long had he reigned ?
Is Henry considered by historians as a good king ?
But was he not guilty of great crimes ?

પતર• ૬

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

મહને• માલંમ• પડેચ• કે• શ્રી• ઇગલંડનાં• પાદશાહા• વોની• વારતા• જે• હું• તમને• મોકલુંચ• તે• તમે• ચીત• લગાડીને• વાંચોછો• માટે• તેવો• વીસે હું• વધારે• લખુંચ* આપણે• બીજા હેનરીની• પાદશાહી• લગાંન• આવેઆ છેહડ• કે• જે• હેનરી• મેટીલડાનો• છોકરો• હતો• ને• ઇશટીવેનને• બદલે• મેટીલડાને• તખત• મલેઉં• જોઇતુ• હતુ* આડ• હેનરી• પાદશાહાનાં વખતમાં• ટાંમશ• ડબેકેટ• કરીને• ડક• મોહોટો• કીરતીવાંન• પુરૂશ• હતો* ડ• નાંમીચો• શાખશ• ડક• ઘણાંજ• નીચદરજાથી• શ્રી• કેનટરબરીનો• આ

રચ•બીશપ•(આ૦મુખીઆ•પાદરી•)થઓ*ઈ•ઘણી•ખંદણી•કીધાની•ઉંરૂરી•કરતો•હતો•પણ•ખરીશટી•ધરંમ•કેહેવોછે•તે•કંઈ•તેણે•જાણેઉં•નહી•હેવુ•દીશેછે•અને•હેનાં•વીચારમાં•હેવુ•આવીઉં•હતુ•કે•તપ•કીધાથી•તથા•શરીરને•મોટાં•દુખ•તથા•અપાશ•કીધાથી•ધરંમ•છે*પણ•શાચા•ખરીશટી•ધરંમથી•ઈ•વાત•કેહવી•ઉલટીછે•કાંઈકે•(પંરમેશવરે•)ખરીશટી•ધરંમ•શરવે•લોકોને•શંમપત•માં•રેહેવાશારૂ•અને•શરવ•આદમીઓમાં•ખુશ•ખબરી•જાહેર•કરવાને•વાશતે•મોકલેલોછે*ખરીશટી•ધરંમમાં•શરીરને•પોતાંની•મેરે•મોટાં•દુખ•તથા•તપ•કરવાની•જરુર•નથી—પણ•તે•ધરંમ•આપણને•શુખચેનમાં•બોલાવી•લીઈચ•અને•આપણને•તેહનો•મારગ•દેખાડેચ*ઈ•વાત•નીશચે•ખરીછે•કે•ખરીશટી•ધરંમથી•આપણે•પોતાની•મેરે•નાપાડી•શકીઈચ•પણ•તે•કેહેવારે•કે•જેઆરે•તેમ•નાપાડેગાથી•આપણે•શુખી•થાઈઈચ*જે•વશતુવોથી•આપણે•દુખી•થાઈશુ•તેવોને•તજવાનુ•જેકાંઈ•કે•આપણને•ફરમાવેઉં•છે•તે•ખરેખર•મોહોટી•માઈઆ•કીધી•છે—અને•જે•શરવે•વશતુઓ•કે•ધરંમ•પુશતકમાં•મનાં•કીધેલી•છે•તેહેવીજ•(બુરી)છે*તેવો•ઈટલા•શારૂ•મનાં•કીધીચ•કે•તેવો•આપણને•દુખ•દીઈ•હેવી•છે*અને•જે•વશતુઓ•કે•આપણને•કરવાને•વાશતે•'ફરમાવેલીછે•તે•ઈટલાશારૂ•ફરમાવીચ•કે•તે•હોકંમ•માફક•આપણ•ચાલીશુ•તો•તેથી•આપણ•શુખી•થાંઈશુ*ઈટલા•શારૂ•જેકાંઈ•કે•ધરંમ•પુશતકમાં•મનાં•કીધેલુછે•તેથી•આપણને•દુર•રેહવુ•જોઈઈ•અને•જેકાંઈ•કે•તેહેમાં•ફરમાંવેઉંચ•તેહેને•માંન•આપવું•જોઈઈ—અને•કેહવી•ખુશીથી•આપણને•હેવુ•ચાલવુ•જોઈઈ•શાશારૂં•જે•આપણ•ઈમ•જાંણીઈચ•કે•ઈ•શઘલુ•આપણાં•શારાંને•વાશતે•છે*પણ•ટાંમશ•ઈબેકેટ•જેહેવા•લોકોઈ•જેકાંઈ•ભુલીને•કશટી•ભરેલો•તપ•કીધો•તે•ઈ•(ઉપર•લખેલાં)થી•કેહેવુ•ઉલટુ•છે*આપણ•હેવુ•વાંચીઈચકે•“ટાંમશ•ઈબેકેટની•શુરત•શરવ•કરતાંને•ઘણીજ•નઉશ•હતીને•તે•પોતાનાં•આંગમાં•ટાટનુ•વશતર•પેહેરતો•હતો•નેતે•મેલે•તથા•જુઈભરાઈ•તાહરપછે•તે•વશતર•બદલતો•હતો•અને•તેહેનો•હંમેશાંનો•ખોરાક•રોટલી•હતી•અને•પાંણી•પીતો•હતો•તે•શઘલાંમાં•નહી•ખવાઈ•હે

વોપાલો•નાંખીને•તે•ગાલામાં•નહીઉતરે•હેવું•બનાવતો•હતો*તેહેની•પીઠ•ઉપર•ફટકા•મરાવેઆથી•પીઠનુ•ચાંમડુ•ફાડી•નાંખેઉ•હતુ*અને•તે•હરરોજ•પોતાનાં•પગ•ઉપર•તેર•ફકીરોનાં•પગ•ધોતો•હતો*” જેવારે•કે•ઈ•રાજમાં•ટામશ•ઈબેકેટ•શરવેથી•મોહોટા•દરજા•વાલો•હતો•તે•વેલાઈ•તેહેની•હેવી•ચાલ•હતી*બેકેટ•બાહેર•માતરે•ગારીબી•દેખડાવતો•પંણ•તેહેનાં•દીલમાં•ગરૂરી•તથા•અલીમાંને•લરેઓં•હતો*અને•હેનો•પાદરી•લોકોમાં•ઘણો•અખતીઆર•હતો•પંણ•જે•પરમાંણે•ખરીશટીઆંન•પરજાને•ઘટે છે•તે•પરમાંણે•બેકેટે•તે•અખતીઆરથી•પાદશાહાને•આશરો•આપેઓ•નહી•પંણ•તેવતો•પાદશાહાની•શાંમણે•થઓ•અને•પાદરી•લોક•ધુંનવાંન•અને•જોરાવર•થાઈ•હેવું•તે•ચાહતો•હતો•અને•ઈમ•ધારતો•હતો•કે•તે•પાદરીઓનો•આઈ•જગતમાં•દરજોછે•તે•ઉપર•બેહેશતનાં•દરજા•કરતાંને•વધારે•પ્રેઆંન•પોહોચાડેઉ•જોઇઈ*મતલબ•ઈકેઈ•પોપને•ચાહાનારા•પાદરી•લોકોનાં•બલથી•પાદશાહને•ઘડી•ઘડી•તશદી•થાવા•લાગી•અને•પાદશાહ•ઈ•ગોસે•થાઇને•ઈક•દીને•હેવું•ચાહેઉંકે•“બેકેટ•મરેતો•શારૂં*”

પંણ•તમારે•ઇઆદ•રાખેઉં•જોઇઈ•કે•જે•જમાંનાંમાં•આપણ છઇઈ•તેહેવોજ•અગાઉનો•જમાંનો•નહી•હતો*અગર•જો•હવડાં•આપણાં•રાજમાં•શારા•મીજાજનો•પાદશાહ•જોઇઈ•તેહેવો•નહી•હોઈ•અને•તેહેને•બદલે•કાંઇ•હેવો•ઘાતકી•પાદશાહ•હોઈ•કે•તેહેને•પોતાની•રઇઅતમાંનાં•કોઇઈક•ગારીબ•માંણશને•પંણ•મારવાની•ઇછા•જો•થાઈ•તો•તેહેનાં•થીતે•ગારીબ•આદમીનો•ઈક•બાલ•વાંકો•થાઇ•શકે•નહી—પંણ•અગાઉનાં•જમાંનાંમાં•હેવું•હતું•કે•અગર•જો•પાદશાહ•કોઇ•ઈક•માંણશને•મારવાને•ઇછેતો•તે•લુંડુ•કામ•કરવાને•વાશતે•ઘણાં•લોકો•તઇઆર•હતાં•તેણે•કરીને•પાદશાહાનો•કોઇ•શતરૂ•હોઈતો•તેહેનો•શેહેલ•પણાંથી•નાશ•થાઇ•શકે*ઈજ•પરમાંણે•બેકેટ•પણ•મારેઓ•ગીઓ*પાદશાહાનાં•ચાકરોમાંથી•ચાર•માંણશોઈ•પાદશાહાની•ઇછા•જાંણીને•શ્રી•કેનટરબરી•ગીઆ•અને•જે•વેલાઈ•બેકેટ•દેવલમાં•ગુઠંણ•ઉપર•બેશીને•પરમેશવરની•બંદગી•કરતો•હતો•તે•વખતે•તેહેને•તાંહાં•ઘાતકી•પણાંથી•

મારી•નાંખેઓ*તમે•ખચીત•જાંણજો•કે•તે•પછે•પાદશાહને•ઈ•ધાતકી•કરમનો•ઘણો•પશતાવો•પેદા•થઓ•અને• તેણે•પોતાનાં•ગુનાહાનો•બદલો•વાલવાને•વાશતે•બેકેટની•કબર•આગલ• તપ•કરવાની•તજવીજ•ઠોકટ•કીધી*તેટલાં•શારૂ•પાદશાહા•શ્રી• કેનટરબરી ગીઓ*અને•જેવારે•તાંહાંનુ•દેવલ•નજરે•પડેઉં•તેવારે•પાદશાહા ઘોડાપરથી•ઊતરીને•ઉઘાડા•પગે•શેહેરની•તરફ•ચાલેઓ*અને•તે પછે•"શ્રી•કેનટરબરીનાં ભગત•શેનટ•ટાંમશ" (કાંઈકે•બેકેટને•હવડાં•હેવુ• નાંમ•આપેઉં•હતું•)તેહની•કબર•આગલ•પાદશાહ•ગીઓ*(તે• ટાંમશ•ઈ બેકેટ•મુઆ•પછી•તેહેને• લોકો•શાધુ•હેવું•માંનીને•તેહેની•જાતરાઈ•જાતાં•હતાં*)અને•તે•વખતમાં• હેવી•(શાધુ•લોકોની•કબર•આગલ•)જાતરા•થાતી•હતી•અને•ટાંમશ•ઈ બેકેટ•મુંઆ•પછી•શ્રી•કેનટરબરીમાં•તેહેની•કબર•પાશે• જાતરા•કરનારાં•બંદગી•કરવાને•જાતાં•હતાં•તે•તાંહાં•પથર•ઉપર•ગુઠણ• મુકીને•બંદગી•કરતાં•તે•ગુઠણેકરી•(તે•કબરનાં•)પથર•ઘશાઈ•ગીઈલાછે તે•હમણાં•જો•તમે•શ્રી•કેનટરબરીજાશોતો•તે• ઘશાઈલા• પથર•જોશો*ધરંમનાં•ભુલાવા•વીશેની•ઈ•કેહેવી•બે• વકુફી•ભરેલી•કોશેશ છે*હુ•પોતાનાં•દલથી•ઉમેદ•રાખુચ•કે•ધરંમની•જેકાંઈ•અગત•કરીને•શાચી•વાતોછે•તે•ઉપર•આપણે•શવલા•કોશેશ•કરીઈ*

આઈ•પાદશાહાનાં•રાજમાં•આપરે•શ્રી• આઈરલંડનો•ટાપુ•લીધો•અને•તે•દીનથી•હજુર•શુધી•ઈ•ટાપુ•ઇંગલીશ• લોકોનાં•અખતીઆરમાંછે*તે•વખતે•આઈરીશ•લોકો• ઘણાંજ•અગનેઆંની•(ઈટલેજે•મુરખ•)હતાં*તે•દીન•પછે•તેવો•ઘણાં•શુધરેઆંચ•અને•હમણાં•તેવો•ઘણુંકરીજે•શારાં•લોકો છે—પણ•હજુર•શુધી•તેવોમાંનાં•ઘણાંખરા•ગરીબ•લોકો•હેવી•અવશતામાંછે•કે•તેવોને•શારી•કેરવણી•તથા•ખરીશટી•ધરંમની•શીખાંમણ•આપવી•જોઈચ*

તમે•"ફેર•"ઈટલેજે•શુંદર•રાશેમંડની•વારતા• કધી• વાંચીચ•કે•નહી•તે કહો ? હા•તમે•વાંચી•હશે• અથવા•શાંભલી•પણ હશે*વારૂ•તેવારે•હેનરી•પાદશાહાનાં•વખતમાં•રાશેમંડ• જીવતી•હતી*હેનરી•પાદશાહા•ઇલીઈનોર•રાંણીની•દોલત•જોઈને• તેહેની•શાથે•પરણેઓ•હતો*ઈ•હેવું•લાઈઆક•નહી• હતું*પંણ•જેવારે

કે• હેનરી• ઈલીઈનોરની• શાથે• પરણેઓ• તેવારે• તેહેની• શંગાથે• ઈમાંનદારીથી• પોતાને• ચાલેઉં• જોઈઈ*પણ• હેલું• નહી• કરતાં• પાદશાહા• રાશેમંડ• કલીફ્ફોરડની• ઉપર• આશક• થઓ• અને• તેહેને• પોતાંની• રાંણીની• નજરે• નહી• પાડવા• શારૂ• શ્રી• આખશ• ફોરડ• શીઅર• પરાંતમા• ઉડ• ઈશટાક• પારક• કરીને• મેદાંન છે• તેહેમાં• તેણે• ઈક• ઈમારત• બાંધીકે• જેહેમાં• વાંકાચુકા• રશતા• હોઈય•ને• તેહેમાં• રાશેમંડને• રાખી* તોબી• રાંણીઈ• ઈ• ઈકાંત• ઠેકાંણું• શોધી• કાહાડેઉં• ને• હાથમાં• શૂતર• ધરીને• તેહેનાં• આધારથી• તે• ઈમારતમાંનાં• જે• વાંકાચુકા• રશતા• હતા• તે• બધામાંથી• પાર• પડીને• તે• રાશેમંડની• જાંહાં શંતાઈ• રેહેવાની જગા• હતી• તાંહાં• જઈ• પોંચી* અને• તે• પોતાની• શાથે• ઈક• કટાર• તથા• જેહેરનુ• પીઆલું• લાવી• હતી• અને• તેણીઈ• તે કટાર• રાજેમંડની• છાતીની• શાંમને• રાખી• મુકીને• તેહેને• તે• જેહેર• પાંઉં*ઈ• પરમાંણે• તે• દુશટ• અને• ઘાતકી• રાંણીઈ• રાશેમંડ• તથા• પાદશાહાનાં• છીનાલાંની• શજા• કીધી*અને• હેવું• થાઈ છે• કે• ઈકનાં• નરશા• કરંમની• શીખશા• બીજા• નરશા• માંણશને• હાથે• થાઈ છે*

ઈ• હેનરી• પાદશાહાને• પોતાંનાં• છોકરાંવોઈ• ઘણોજ• દુખી• કીધો* તેવો• શઘલાંઈ• હેની• શાંમણે• ઉઠી• ઉભાં• થઈને• તોફાંન• કીધું• અને• તેણે• કરીને• પાદશાહા• ઘરડ• પંણમાં• ઘણો• દુખી• થઓ*જે માંણશનાં• બેવફા• તથા• પાપી• છોકરાં• હોઈ છે• તે માંણશ• ગમે• તેવી• અવશતામાં• હોઈ• તોબી• તે• કધી• શૂખી• થાનાર• નથી*માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા• અગારજો• તમે• શારા• ખરીશટી• હશો તો• ઈક• રાજ• મલેઆ• કરતાંને• મહને• વધારે• ખુશી• થાશે*

પોતાંનાં• છોકરાં• બેમરવત• નીકલેઆં• તેથી• પાદશાહાને• હેવું• દુખ• લાગું• કે• તે• નાંઉમેદ• થાઈગીઓ—અને• તેહેનો• જાંન• કરીને ઈક• ઘણોજ• નકારો• પંણ• તે• પાદશાહાનો• માંનીતો• છોકરો• હતો• તેબી• તોફાંન• કરનારાઓમાં• હતો• તે• જોઈને• પાદશાહાને• ઘણી• દલગીરી• પેદા• થઈ*પછી• કોઈ• વાતેથી• તે• ખુશી• થાઈ• નહી• અને• તેહેની• શૂખાકારી• જતી• રહી• અને• તેથી• તે• જલદી• મરંણ• પાંમેઓ*• તે• ૧૧૮૯ નાં• વરશમાં• તેહેની• અઠાવંન• વરશની• વઈમાં• મરણ• પાંમેઓ• ને• તેણે• ચોતરીશ• વરશ• રાજ• કીધું*

ઘણાંખરા• વારતા• લખનારાઓ• ઈ• પાદશાહાને• શારી• આબરૂ•

આપે છે• પણ• જેવો• કે• તેહેને• હેવો• બતલાવે છે• તેવોથી• માહારો• વીચાર• જુદો છે* હું• એમ• જાંણુંચ• કે• તે• રાજનાં• લોકોનો• કારભાર• ચલાવાને• શારો• હતો• અને• વલી• શવભાવે• શારો• અને• માઆલુ• હતો* પણ• જેહેની• તારીફ• કરવી• લાએક• નથી• તેહેની• તારીફ• કીધાથી વારતા• લખનારાઓ• ઘણું• નુકશાંન• કરેચ* હેનરીએ• બેકેટને• મારી• નખાવેઓ• અને• તેણે• પોતાંની• બાએડીને• પડતી• મેલીને• તે• રાશેમંડની• શાથે• આશક• થાઓ* એ• પરમાંણે• ખુંન• અને• છીનાલું• એ• બંને• તકશીર• થાએ*

હું છું• તમારો• પેઆરો• બાપ*

શવાલો*

ઇશટીવેનની• પછી• કોણ• પાદશાહા• થઆ*

બીજો• હેનરી• કીઆ• વરશમાં• તખત• ઉપર• બેઠો*

તે• વખતે• શ્રી• કેનટરબરીનો• મુખીઅ• પાદરી• કોણ• હતો*

ટાંમશ• એબેકેટ• કેવી• તરેહેનો• શખશ• હતો*

તે• કેહેવાં• કપડાં• પેહેરતો• હતો*

તેહેનો• શો• ખોરાક• હતો*

શું• તે• પોતાનાં• શરીરને• ઘણું• દુખ• કરતો• હતો*

હેવું• શરીરને• દુખ• કરવું• એ• ખરીશટી• ધરંમમાં• ફરમાંવેલું છે કે• શું*

બેકેટ• ગરીબ• હતો• કે• મગરૂર• હતો*

બેકેટે• અખતીઆર• વધારવા• માંગેઓ• તેથી• શું• પાદશાહા• ગોશે• થાઓ*

શું• પાદશાહે• હેવું• ચાહેઉં• કે• "બેકેટ• મરે તો• શારૂં*"

તે• બોલવા• ઉપરથી• પાદશાહાનાં• કોઇ• ચાકરોએ• કંઇ• મેહેનત• કીધી• કે• શું*

તેવોએ• શું• કીધું*

તેવોએ• બેકેટને• કાંહાં• મારી• નાંખેઓ*

એ• ખુંન• થઆ• પછે• શું• પાદશાહાનાં• દેલને• આરાંમ• હતો*

પાદશાહે• શું• કીધું*

શ્રી• કેનટરબરીનાં• દેવલમાં• બેકેટની• કબર છે• તાંહાં• જાતરા• કરનારાં પુજા• કરવાને• વાશતે• ઘણાં• લોકો• જાતાં• હતાં• તેહેની• કાંઇ• નીશાંની છે• શું*

તે•કીઆ•પાદશાનાં•અમલમાં•શ્રી•આઅરલંડનો•ટાપુ•ઇંગલીશ•લોકોએ•ફતેહ•કીધો*

તે•દીવશ•થીતે•આજ•લગાં ન•શૂં•તે•ટાપુ•આપણાંજ•અખતીઆરમાંછે*

ફેર•રાસેમંડ•કોણ•હતી*

તેહેને•કોણે•મારીનાંખી*

કાંહાં*

શીરીતે*

હેનરીનાં•છોકરાં•પાદશા•શાથે•કેમ•ચાલેઆં*

તેવોની•ચાલ•ઉપરથી•પાદશાહાને•મોંદું•દુખ•થઉં•હતું•શૂં*

બીજો•હેનરી•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરણ•પાંમેઓ*

તેહેની•ઉમર•કેટલા•વરશની•હતી*

તેહેને•કેટલાં•વરશ•પાદશાહી•કીધી*

વારતા•લખનારાઓએ•એ•હેનરી•પાદશાહાને•શૂં•શારો•કહેલોછે*

તેહેને•મોટા•ગુનાહા•કીધા•હતા•શૂં*

LETTER VII.

MY DEAR BOY,

HENRY THE SECOND was the last king I wrote to you about. After his death came his son, *Richard the First*, who was a very brave man, and was, therefore, called *Richard Cœur de Lion*, which, in French, means *Richard the Lion-hearted.* His wars were chiefly carried on against the Infidels in the Holy Land. These wars, as I have already explained to you, were called the Crusades. He went with Philip,* king of France, to this enterprise, and their two armies amounted to a hundred thousand fighting men. The king of France did not stay long in the Holy Land, but went home again on account of the badness of his health: or this might, perhaps, be only a pretence. He, however, left ten thousand of his men with the king of England to assist in the war. Richard was very successful in conquering all before him. The infidel Saracens were beaten in every battle. Richard took the city of Ascalon, and many others of less note, and was going to besiege Jerusalem; but he found that his army was so wasted with famine and fatigue, and even with victory, that it was necessary to give up the war for the present. A truce (that is, a rest from war) was agreed on for three years, on conditions favourable to the Christians.

---

* Philip II.

There is a curious story told about this king Richard. In returning home he took the road through Germany, dressed in the habit of a pilgrim. He was, however, seized by the duke of Austria, and put into prison. This same duke of Austria had been with his armies in the Holy Land: and whilst he was there, the king of England and he had frequent quarrels; for Richard Cœur de Lion was not only a very brave man, but he was also a very violent haughty man, and could not keep his temper within any bounds, if he might not have his own way in every thing. Now this, you may be sure, the other leaders did not like, and this led to great disputes among them. The duke of Austria was, therefore, glad enough to get the haughty king of England into his power; and thus the king, who had filled the world with his greatness, was now thrown into a dungeon, and loaded with irons. It was a long time before the English people knew what was become of their beloved king. His place of confinement is said to have been found out by a poor French musician, who was near the prison, and was playing, upon his harp, a tune which he knew the king of England to be fond of. The king answered from within, by playing on his harp the same tune. The English gladly gave about three hundred thousand pounds for his deliverance, and thus this loyal people had the happiness to set their monarch free.

You may be sure that the English people were full of joy at the return of their king. He entered London in great triumph, and was soon afterwards crowned anew at Winchester. His cruel brother John had, during this time, been doing all he could to get him detained in prison;—but the king generously forgave him.

There was something singular in the death of Richard. A person who held some land in France, under the king of England, found a treasure in his field, and sent a part of it to the king. Richard knew that he had a right to the whole, and insisted upon having it. The treasure was placed in a strong castle in France, and Richard attacked the castle. As he was riding round the place, on the fourth day of the siege, he was shot in the shoulder by an arrow, from the castle. The wound was badly treated, and it mortified, brought on the death of the king.

Before his death he is said to have ordered the archer who shot him to be brought into his presence, and that he nobly forgave him, and ordered him to be set at liberty. His attendants, however, full of rage, put the man to death as soon as he had quitted the presence of the king.

Richard died in the tenth year of his reign, in the year 1199. He had no children, and therefore his brother John became king.

I hope you try to remember what I tell you, and I shall then be encouraged to write to you often.

I am your affectionate father.

QUESTIONS.

Who was king of England, after Henry II.?
In what year did Richard I. come to the throne?
What French name was given to him?
What is the meaning of this French name?
Why was this name given to him?
Where did Richard chiefly carry on his wars?
Against what people?
What were these wars called?
Who went with Richard on the Crusade?
How many fighting men did the English and French army together amount to?
Did the king of France stay long in the Holy Land?
Did he leave Richard any of his soldiers?
How many?
Was Richard successful in this war?
What town did he take?
Did he then agree upon a truce?
What do you mean by a *truce*?
For how long a time was this truce agreed upon?

What happened to king Richard on his return ?
How had Richard treated the duke of Austria when they were in the Holy Land together ?
How was his place of confinement found out ?
How did the king obtain his liberty ?
What sum did the English pay to deliver their king ?
Who had been acting as king, in England, during Richard's absence.
Was John's behaviour good ?
What was the cause of Richard's death.
In what year did this happen ?
Had king Richard any children ?
Who then became king after his death ?
How long did Richard I. reign ?
In what year did he die ?

પતર•

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

માહરા• પાછલનાં• પતરમાં• મે• તમને• બીજા• હેનરીની• વીશે• લખુ• હતુ* તે• પાદશાહાનાં• મુવા• પછી• તેહેનો• છોકરો• પેહેલો• રીચરડ• રાજ• કરવા• લાગો• તે• ઘણો• બાહાદુર• હતો• તેટલા• શારૂં• તેહેને• “કીઉરડે• લીઓન•” કરી• કેહેતા• હતા• તેહેનો• ફરેચ• બોલીમાં• શેર• દીલ• (એટલેજે• શહીનાં• દીલનો•) હેવો• માએનો• થાએચ* ધરંમની• જુમીમાં• (એટલેજે• શ્રી• જીરુશલેમમાં•) રેહેનારા• કાફર• લોકોની• શાથે• એ• પાદશાહાએ• ઘણી• કરીને• લડાઈ• કીધી* મે• તમને• આગમચ• પંણ• બતલાવેઉંચકે• એ• લડાઈને• ધરંમ• બાબતની• લડાઈ• કરી• કેહેતા• હતા* રીચરડ• પાદશાહા• અને• શ્રી• ફરાંશ• દેશનો• બીજો• ફીલીપ• પાદશાહ• એ• બંધે• જણાં• એ• કાંમ• (એટલેજે• ધરંમ• બાબતની• લડાઈ•) કરવાને• વાશતે• નીકલેઆ• તે• વખતે• એ• બંધેની• ફોજમાં• એક• લાખ• શીપાઈ• હતા* શ્રી• ફરાંશ• દેશનો• પાદશાહા• શ્રી• જીરુશલેમનાં• મુલકમાં• ઘણાં• દીવશ• નહી• રહો• ને• તેહેની• તબીએત• બીગાડી• તેથી• તે• પાછો• પોતાને• દેશ• ગીઓ• અથવા• કદાચ• તેણે• હેવું• બાંહાંનુ• કાહાડેઉંબી હોએ*પંણ• તે• લડાઈમાં• પોતાની• ફોજમાંથી• શ્રી• ઈંગાલંડનાં• પાદશાહાને• મદત• આપવા• શારૂં• તે• દશ• હજાર• આદમી• મેલી• ગીઓ* તે• શઘલું• (મુલક•)જીહીતી• લેવામાં• રીચરડ• ફતેહે• પાંમેઓ* અને•

તે•કાપૂર•મુશલમાંન•લોકોને•શઘલી•લડાઇમાં•હરાવેઆ*રીચરડે•શ્રી•આશકાલંન•શેહેર•તથા•ઘણાંઇક•બીજાં•નાંહાંનાં•નાંહાંનાં•શેહેરો•ફતેહે•કીધાં•અને•શ્રી•જીરૂશલેમ•શેહેરનો•વેરો•ઘાલવાને•ચાહાતો•હતો•પણ•પોતાની•ફોજ•દુકાલથી•તથા•મેહેનતથી•તથા•લડાઇ•કીધાથીબી•ઘણી•ઓછી•થાઇ•ગઇ•હતી•માટે•તે•વખતે•તેહેને•લડાઇ•બંધ•કરવી•જરૂર•પડી*તરંણ•વરશ•શૂધીની•શૂલેહે•(ઇટલે•જે•લડાઇની•બંદી•) કીધી•તેહેનો•કરાર•ખરીશટીઆંનોએ•મંનગાંમતો•કીધો*

આઇ•પેહેલા•રીચરડ•વીશેની•ઇક•અચરત•ભરેલી•વાત•કેહેછે*કે•હાજીનો•વેશ•લઇને•શ્રી•જરમેની•દેશને•રશતે•થઇને•તે•પોતાનાં•દેશ•પાછો•જાતો•હતો*તે•વખતે•શ્રી•આશટરીઆનાં•ડીઉકે•તેણે•પકડીને•બંદીખાંનાંમાં•કેદ•કીધો* (હેનુ•કારંણ•ઇજે•) શ્રી•આશટરીઆનો•ડીઉંક•પોતે•ફોજ•લઇને•શ્રી•જીરૂશલેમનાં•મુલકમાં•ગીઓ•હતો•અને•જેવારે•કે•તે•તાંહાં•હતો•તેવારે•હેની•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનાં•પાદશાહ•શંગાથે•ઘણી•વેલા•લડાઇ•થાઇ•શાવાશતે•જે•પાદશાહા•રીચરડ•બાહાદુર•હતો•ઇટલુજ•માતર•નહી•પંણતે•ઘણોજ•મગારૂર•શખશ•હતો•અને•પોતાની•મરજીમાં•આવે•તેહેને•કોઇ•અડચંન•કરે•ઇટલે•હેનાંથી•પોતાનો•શલાવ•જાલવી•શકાઇ•નહી*હવે•તમે•ખચીત•જાંણજો•કે•હેવો•શલાવ•બીજા•શરદારોને•ગમેઓ•નહી•તેથી•તેવોઇ•પાદશા•શંગાથે•ઘણાં•ટંટા•કીધા* તેટલા•શારૂ•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનાં•મગારૂબ•પાદશાહાને•શ્રી•આશટરીઆંનાં•ડીઉ•કે•પોતાનાં•કાબુમાં•લાવેઆથી•ઘણો•ખુશી•થાઇઓ•અને•ઇ•પરમાંણે•જે•પાદશાહની•કીરતી•શઘલી•પરથવી•માંથાઇ•હતી•તેહેવો•કેદખાંનાંમાં•પડેઓ•ને•તેહેનાં•પગમાં•બેરી•ઠોકાઇ*ઘણીઇક•મુદત:છે•ઇંગલીશ•લોકોને•ખબર•થઇ•કે•પોતાનાં•પેઆરા•પાદશાહનાં•ઉપર•શૂં (મુશીબત•)ગુજરી*ઇમ•કેહેછે•કે•જાંહાં•પાદશાહાજે•બંદી•ખાંને•નાંખેઆ•હતો•તે•ઠેકાંનુ•ઇક•ગરીબ•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશનાં•શારંગી•વાલાઇ•શોધી•કાહાડેઉં•તે•શારંગી•વાલાઇ•તે•તુરંગની•પાશે•આવીને•ઇક•દીને•ઇક•રાગ•કે•જે•શ્રી•ઇંગલડનાં•પાદશાહાને•ગમતો•હતો•તે•રાગ•પોતાની•શારંગીમાં•વજારવા•લાગો*તે•શાંભલીને•પાદ

શાહાઈ•ગુરંગમાંથી•તેવોજ•રાગ•શારંગીમાં•વજારેઓ*(તે•ડીઉંકને•)તરંણ•લાખ•પાંઉડ•(આ૦તીશલાખ•રૂપીઆ•)આપીને•ઈગલીશ•લોકોઈ•ખુશીથી•પોતાનાં•પાદશાહાને•છોડાવેઓ•અને•શઘલી•નીમક•હલાલી•રઈત•પોતાનાં•પાદશાહનો•છુટકારો•કીધાથી•સુખીયાઈ*

તમે•ખચીત•કરી•જાંણજો•કે•પાદશાહા•છુટીને•પોતાનાં•દેશ પાછો•આવેઓ•તે•ઉપરથી•ઈગલીશ•લોકો•ઘણાં•ખુશી•થઆં*રીચરડ•મોહોટી•ધુમધાંમથી•શ્રી•લંડનમાં•ગીઆ•અને•તે•પછે•શ્રી•વીનચેશટરમાં•ફરીથી•તેહેનાં•માંથાઉપર•તાજ•મેલેઉં*હેનો•ધાતકી•લાઈ•જાંન•ટિલુ•સૂટી•હેવી•વેતરંણ•કરતો•હતો•જે•પાદશાહા•(ડીઉકનાં•)બંદી•ખાંનામાં•વધુતી•વાર•પડી•રેહે—પંણ•પાદશાએ•શાખી•પણાંથી•તેહેને•તે•માફ•કીધુ*

રીચરડ•કાંઈ•ફિ•ચાયરત•જેહેવી•રીતે•મરંણ•પાંગેઓ*શ્રી•ઈગલંડનાં•તાબામાં•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•ફિ•માંણરાજે•પોતાનાં•વજીરા•માંહાંથી•ખજાંનો•મલેઓ•તેહેમાંથી•ફિ•હીશાસો•તેણે•પાદશાહાની•પાસે•મોકલેઓ*રીચરડે•જાંણેઉં•કે•તે•શઘલો•(ખજાંનો•)લેવાનો•પોતાનો•વાજબી•હકછે•માંટે•તે•શઘલો•પોતે•ખસુશન•માંગોઓ*તે•ખજાંનો•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•ફિ•મજબુત•કીલામાં•રાખેલો•હતો•તાંહાંજઈને•રીચરડે•તે•કીલાઉપર•હોમલો•કીધો*ઘેરો•ઘાલેઆને•ચોથે•દીવસે•રીચરડ•ઘોડાઉપર•બેશીને•તે•કીલાની•આશપાશ•ફરતો•હતો•તેટલામાં•તે•કીલામાંથી•ફિ•તીર•આવીને•તેહેનાં•ખભાં•ઉપર•લાગો*તે•જખંમનો•શારો•ઉપાઈ•થઓ•નહી•માંટે•તે•ઘાઆ•શરી•ગીઆ•તેથી•પાદશાહાનુ•મોહોત•આવેઉં*

પંણ•હેવું•કેહેછે•કે•રીચરડે•મરંણ•પાંગેઆની•આગમચ•જે•માંણસે•તેહેને•તીર•મારેઓ•હતો•તેહેને•પોતાની•પાસે•બોલાવી•મંગાવીને•તેહેને•ઉદાર•પણાંથી•માફ•કીધો•અને•છોડી•દેવાનો•હોકંમ•કીધો*પંણ•જેવારે•કે•તે•પાદશાંહાની•નજર•આગલથી•દુર•થઓ•તેવારે•પાદશાહાનાં•ચાકરોઈ•ગુસે•થઈને•તે•શખશને•મારી•નાંખેઓ*

રીચરડ•દશ•વરશ•રાજ•કરીને• ૧૧૯૯ નાં•વરસમાં•મરંણ•

પાંમેઓ* તેહેનાં•કાંઈ•છોકરાં•નહી•હતાં•એટલા•શારૂં•હેનો•ભાઈ•જાંન•પાદશાહ•થઓ*

હું•આશા•રાખુછુકે•તમને•જે•હું•લખીને•મોકલુછુ•તે•ઉપર•તમે•ધીઆંન•રાખોશ•અને•હેવુ•કરશો•તેવારે•તમને•લખવાની•મહને•ખુશી•છુટશે*

હું•છુ•તમારો•પેઆરો•બાપ*

શવાલો*

બીજા•હેનરીની•પછી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનો•પાદશાહ•કોણ•થઓ*
પેહેલો•રીચરડ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો*
હેને•ફ્રેચ•બોલીમાં•શું•નાંમ•આપેઉં•હતું*
તે•નાંમનો•ફ્રેચ•બોલીમાં•શું•અરથ•થાએછે*
તેહેને•હેવુ•નાંમ•કેમ•આપેઉં•હતું*
રીચરડે•ઘણું•કરીને•લડાઈ•કાંહાં•કીધી*
કીઆ•લોકોની•શાથે•લડાઈ•કીધી*
તે•લડાઈને•શું•કેહેતા•હતા*
રીચરડની•શાથે•ધરંમ•બાબતની•લડાઈ•કરવા•શારૂં•કોણ•ગીઉંતુ*
ઈંગલીશનાં•તથા•ફ્રેચનાં•લશકરમાં•કેટલાં•આદમી•હતાં*
શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશનો•પાદશાહ•શ્રી•જીરૂશલેમનાં•મુલકમાં•ઘણાં•દીવશ શુધી•રહેતો•શું*
તેણે•રીચરડની•મદતને•શારૂં•કંઈ•પોતાની•ફોજ•રાખી•હતી•શું કેટલી•રાખી•હતી*
એ•લડાઈમાં•રીચરડે•ફતેહ•કીધી•કે•નહી*
તેણે•કીઉં•શેહેર•ફતેહ•કીધું*
પછી•તેણે•શલાહ•કરવાનુ•કબુલ•કીધું•કે•નહી*
શલાહનો•તમે•શું•માએનો•કરોશ*
કેટલા•દીલશ•શુધી•શલાહ•રાખવી•કબુલ•કીધી•હતી*
પાછો•જતીવેલાએ•રીચરડ•પાદશાહને•રશતામાં•શું•બનેઉં*
રીચરડ•શ્રી•જીરૂશેલમાં•હતો•તાહારે•શ્રી•આશટરીઆનાં•ડીઉકની•શાથે•તે•કેમ•ચાલેઓ•હતો*

પાદશાહને•કેદ•રાખેઓ•હતો•તે•ઠેકાંણું•શીતરેહે•માલંમ•પડેઉં*

શીરીતે•પાદશાહાનો•છુટકારો•થઓ*

ઇંગલીશ•લોકોએ•પોતાનાં•પાદશાહને•છોડાવાશારૂં•કેટલું•નાંણું•આપેઉં*

જાંહાં•શુધીકે•રીચરડ•ગેર•હાજરહતો•તાંહાંશુધી•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનાં•રાજનો•કારભાર•કોણ•ચલાવતું•હતું*

શુજાંનજી•ચાલ•શારી•હતી*

રીચરડ•શાથી•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

કીઆ•વરશમાં•બનેઉં*

રીચરડ•પાદશાહાનાં•કાંઇ•છોકરાં•હતાંકેશુ*

તેવારે•તેહેનાં•મુઆપછે•કોણ•પાદશા•થઉ*

પેહેલા•રીચરડે•કેટલા•વરશ•રાજકીધું*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

LETTER VIII.

MY DEAR BOY,

I TOLD you, in my last letter, that, after the death of Richard, his brother John became king. Now in those days, as well as now, the crown was to go to the next of kin, as rightful heir; but this matter does not seem to have been so well settled and understood as it is in our own days, so that, when any king died, there was often a dispute about who should be the next. Now John knew, that, strictly speaking, he was not the true heir to the throne; for this belonged to a little boy, about twelve years old, named Arthur, the son of Geoffrey who was dead, but who was the next brother to king Richard. Now John was a cruel tyrant, and was hated by all his people, and he was afraid they would try to make Arthur king instead of him. He, therefore, conceived the dreadful thought of killing this little boy. And he was not long before he executed his horrid intention. He had him confined in a prison, and he sent some bloody-minded ruffians to murder him. We read that the sweet and innocent looks and language of this beautiful child almost melted the stony hearts even of those savage murderers. One man, however, put his eyes out: and whilst this man was gone out of the apartment, the dear boy, trembling for his danger, tried to make his escape out of the window, and, in attempting this, he fell down from a high turret, and was dashed to pieces. This is one of the accounts which we read, and this is adopted by Shakspeare in his historical play of king John; but there are several different accounts of the manner in which this poor little boy was put to death: some say that king John killed him with his own hand. It seems certain, however, that it was by means of his cruel uncle that Arthur was destroyed. In this dreadfully wicked manner did king John seek to possess his throne in peace:—but it was not very likely that such wickedness should prosper. He had a miserable reign; and his subjects were perpetually rebelling against him. You have, perhaps, heard of the *Magna Charta*, the great bulwark, as it is called, of our liberties. King John you must know, was constantly striving to destroy the liberties of his people; and, in those days, the barons, or great nobles, all had their tenants and dependents trained up as warriors, ready to fight for them, whenever they might have occasion for their help. This led to perpetual quarrels, and sieges, and battering of castles, and all the miseries of war, among those who ought to have lived like friends and neighbours. These barons, too, would often join, and oppose the power of the king himself, being afraid that he should encroach on their greatness and dignity. But we must allow, that, in the reign of king John, they were the means of doing a great deal of good; they drew up a charter, in which they laid down certain rules by which the kingdom was to be governed, and which were intended to prevent the king from acting according to his own wicked intentions, and to bind him to such laws as should be for the good of all classes of the people, as well as of the king. This charter was signed at Runnymede, a field between Staines and Windsor, where the king and the barons all met in complete armour. This took place in the year 1215, and this charter is sometimes called the charter of Runnymede, and sometimes the *Magna Charta*, which you know is Latin for "Great Charter."

One should have hoped that things would now have been all settled, and the kingdom restored to peace and quietness; but, when there is a turbulent and wicked spirit abroad, it is not signing charters that will restore order and happiness. The king and the barons still quarrelled; and the regulations of the Great Charter were forgotten and despised. The barons sent to beg assistance of the king of France, the worst method they could have adopted, as the kingdom, if it escaped from the tyranny of John, would be compelled to submit to the power of France. This difficulty was, however, soon ended by the death of the king. He was marching with a large army from Lynn, towards Lincolnshire, along the sea coast, without knowing that this road would be overflowed at high water. The consequence was, that the tide destroyed all his waggons and baggage and treasures, and he himself with difficulty escaped. He arrived, however, at the abbey of Swinstead. But his loss so distressed him, that it brought on a fever, which seemed likely to end in his death. He was next day carried to Sleaford; and after that, was removed to Newark, where he died in the fifty-first year of his age, and the eighteenth of his reign. This was in the year 1216.

I am, &c.

Character of king John, (chiefly from Hume.)

"The character of this prince is nothing but a collection of vices, equally mean and odious, ruinous to himself, and destructive to his people: cowardice, inactivity, folly, levity, licentiousness, ingratitude, treachery, tyranny, and cruelty: all these qualities evidently appear in the several incidents of his life. It is hard to say whether his conduct to his father, his brother, his nephew, or his subjects was the worst. His dominions, when they came to him by the death of his brother, were greater than any other English monarch ever possessed. But he lost, by his misconduct, the flourishing provinces of France, the ancient patrimony of his family. He subjected his kingdom to a shameful submission to the pope of Rome; he saw the power of his crown diminished by law, and still more reduced by faction; and he died at last, when in danger of being totally ruined by a foreign power, and of either ending his life in a prison, or seeking shelter as a fugitive from the pursuit of his enemies."

QUESTIONS.

Who was king of England after Richard the First ?
In what year did king John come to the throne ?
What relation was John to the late king ?
Was John the rightful heir to the throne ?
Who was ?
What was the disposition of John ?
What cruel plan did he contrive ?
Did he execute his bloody intention ?
Relate the circumstances which are said to have attended the death of Arthur ?
Did John enjoy the throne in peace, after he had gained it by such unjust and horrible means ?
What do you mean by Magna Charta ?
Where was this Great Charter signed ?
Where is Runnymede ?
Who forced the king to sign this Charter ?
In what year was it signed ?
Did the king attend to the regulations of the Great Charter ?
Whose assistance did the barons call in ?
What caused the death of king John ?
Where did he die ?
In what year did he die ?
How long had he reigned ?
What was the general character of king John ?

પતર• ૮

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

માહારાં• પછવાડેનાં• પતરમાં• મે• તમને• કહુ• હતું• કે• રીચરડ• મુવાપછી• તેહેનો• ભાઈ• જાંન• પાદશાહા• થઆ* હવે• તે• વખતમાં• અને હવડાંપણ• હેવી• ચાલ• હતીકે• તખતજે છે• તે હક• નજદીકનાં• વારશને• અથવા• શગાંજેમ લે• પણ• આરે• ચાલ• બાબત• હમણાં• જેવો• બંદોબશત તથા• ઠરાવ• થાઇલો છે• તેવો• આગલ• નહી• હતો• શીવાઇ• કોઇ• પાદશાહા• મરણ• પાંમે એટલે• તે• રાજ• કોણને મલે• તેવીશે• ઘણી• વેળા• ટંટો• થાતો* હવે• જો• ચોકશ• બોલીઇતો• જાંનને• માલમ• હતું• કે•

તખતનો• પોતેજ•ખરો•વારશ•નહી•હતો• શાવાશતે•જે•રીચરડનો• બીજો•ભાઈ•જીઓફરી•કે•જે• મરંણ•પાંમેલો•હતો• તેહેનો•એક• બાર•વરશની•ઉમરનો• નાંધુલો• છોકરો•આરથર•નાંમનો•હતો•તેહેનો•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•હક•હતો*પણ•જાંન•એક•ઘણોજ•જુલંમગાર•પાદશાહ•હતો• તેટલાશારૂં• તેહેની•શંઘલી•રઈત• તેહેને• ધીક્કારતી•હતી•અને• તેથી•જાંન•બીહીતો•હતો•જે• પોતાને•બદલે• શઘલા•લોકો•આરથરને•પાદશાહ• કરીબેશાડશે*માટે• એ•નાંધુલા• છોકરાને•મારી•નાંખવાનો•જાંને•એક•દેહેશત•ભરેલો•ઉપાએ•કીધો* ને• થોડાજ•દીવશમાં•એ•ભુડો•ઉપાએ•કાંમમાં•લાવેઓ*જાંને• તે• છોકરાને• કેદકરાવેઓ• હતો•અને•તાંહાં• તેહેને•મારવા•શારૂ•પાદશાએ•કાંઈ•ઘાતકી•ખુનીઓને• મોકલેઆ*પણ•(હકાએતમાં•)વાંચીએચકે એ•ખુબ•શુરત•બચાંની•મામાલું•અને• ભોલી•શુરતથી•તથા•હેની•બોલીથી•એ•ઘાતકી•ખુનીઓનું•શખત•દીલ•બી•પગલીગીઉં*પણ•તેવોમાંથી•એક•આદમીએ• તે• છોકરાની•આંખો•ફોડીનાંખી•અને• તે•શખશ•ઓરડાની•બાહાર•ગીઓ• તેટલામાં• તે• પેઆરો•છોકરો• પોતાનાં•જાંનથી•ડરીને•બારીમાંથી•નીકલીને•નાહાશવા•લાગો•તેહેવામાં તે•એક•ઉંચા•બુરજ•ઉપરથી•હેઠલ•પડી•ગીઓ•ને•ચુરો•થઈને• તે મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*હેવો•હેવાલ•આપણે•વાંચીએ•અને• શેકશપીઅરે જાંન•પાદશાહ•વીશેની• જે•રંમત•બંનાવેલીછે• તેહેમાંબી•એજ•હેવાલ કહેલોછે—પંણ એ•ગરીબ•બીચારા•નાંધુલા•છોકરાને•શી•રીતે•મારી નાંખેઓ• તેહેનાં•કેટલાએક•બીજાબી•હેવાલછે— કોઈ• લોકો•કેહેછે કે•એ•છોકરાને•પાદશાએ• પોતાને•હાથે•મારી•નાંખેઓ* પણ•એ•વાત•ખરીછે•કે• આરથરને• તેહેનાં•ઘાતકી•કાકાએ•મરાવેઓ*એ•પરમાંણે•જાંન•પાદશાહ•ઘણો•પાપ•કરીને•શુલેહે•શંપતમાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો—પણ•હેવું•પાપનું•કાંમ•શી•તરેહેથી•ચાલે* એણે•એક•દુખ•ભરેલી•પાદશાઈ•કીધી•અને•હેની• રઈતનાં• લોકો• હેની•શાંમને• ઉઠી•ઉભાં•થઈને•ફીશાદ•કરતાં•હતાં*મેગના• ચારટાનો• પટો કે•જેહેને•આંપણાં•છુટાપણાંનો• મોહોટો•બંદોબશત•અને•બંચાવ કરી•કેહેછે•તેવીશે•કદાચ•તમે•શાંભલેઉં• હશે*તમે•જાંણજોકે•જાંન

પાદશાહ• હમેશાં• ચાહતા• હતા• કે• લોકોની•પાશે•કંઈએ•અખતીઆર રેહે•નહી•અને•તે•વખતનાં•બેરન•એટલે•જે•મોહોટા•અમીર• લોકો• હતા•તેવો• પોતાનાં•જેકાંઈ•ચાકરો•તથા•તાબેદાર• લોકો• હતાં•તેવોને• લડાઈનું•કાંમ•શોખવી• રાખતા• હતા• અને•જાંહાં•લડાઈની•અગત•આવી પડે તો•તેવોને•લડવા•શારૂ•આગાહ•કરતા•હતા*એ•પરમાંણે•તેવોને• દોશતો•તથા•પરોશીઓની• પેઠે•શંપતમાં• રેહેવું•જોઈએ• તેહેને•બદલે• તેવો•હમેશાં• લડતા•હતા•અને•ઘેરો•ઘાલતા• ને•કીલાઓ• ભાંજી• નાંખતા અને•લડાઈનાં•એકમેક• ઉપર•હલાં•કરતા•હતા*એ•ઉમરાઓ•બીહીતા હતા•કે•પાદશાહ•તેમનાં• હોદા•તથા•દરજાને•ઘટાડશે•એશારૂ•તેવો•શઘળાજણાં•એકઠા•થઈને• પાદશાહની• શાંમને•થાઈને•અટકાવ•કરે*જાંન. પાદશાહનાં• અંમલમાં•તેવોએ ઘણુંશારુ•કીધું — તે• ઉમારાવોએ• એક• પટો• બંનાવેઓ• ને• તેહેમાં• કેટલાએક• કાએદા•લખેઆછે• તે•પરમાંણે• પાદશાહને•રાજ•ચલાવવું •ને• તેથી•પાદશાહ• પોતાજાં•બુરા• વીચારો•પરમાંણે• કરે• નહી• અને• શંઘલે• વાંઘેનાં• લોકોને•તથા•પાદશાહને•વાશતે• જેકાંઈ•શારા•કરાર•હોએ• તેજ• પરમાંણે•ચાલે*તે પછે•શ્રી• ઈશટેનશ•તથા•વીંડશરની•વચમાં• રૂનીમીડ• કરીને•જે• મેદાંનછે•તાંહાં• પાદશાહ•તથા•શરવે•ઉમરાઓ• પોતાનાં• બખતર• પેહેરીને•મલેઆ•તાંહાં• તે• પટા•ઉપર• પાદશાહે• શહી• કીધી* એ•બીના• ૧૨૧૫ નાં•વરશમાં•થઈ.અને•એ•પટાને•કોઈ• વેલા• રૂનીમીડનો• પટો•કરી• કેહેછે• અને•કોઈ• વેલા• મેગાનાં• કારટા• કરી• કેહેછે• તે• શબદનો•લાટીન• બોલીમાં• “મોહોટો•પટો•”કરી• કેહેછે*

હેવી• ઉમેદ•હતીકે•રાજમાં•શારો•બંદોબશત•થઈને•શારીરીતે•તથા•નચીતપંણે•રાજ•ચાલે• પણ• જેવારેકે• લોકો•દંગો•તથા•નરશૂકાંમ•કરવાલાગા•તારે•બંદોબશતનાં•કાગલ•ઉપર•શહી•કીધાથી•(દેશમાં)શૂખ•તથા• તાબેદારી•થાતી•નથી*પાદશાહની•શાથે•ઉમરા• લોકો• હજુરશૂધી•કજીઆ•કરતા•હતા•અને• તે• મોહોટા•પટામાં•જે•કાએદા•લખેઆ•હતા• તેહેને•શઘલાઓ•વીશરીગઆ•ને તેને•ધીકારતાહતા* તેવખતે•અમીર• લોકોએ•શ્રી•ફરાંશ• દેશનાં•પાદશાહ• પાશેથી•મદદમાંગી•અને• તેવોએ•જે•વીચાર•કીધો•હતો• તે•તદંન•ખોટો• કાંએકે•(શ્રી•ઈગલડનું•)રાજ•એ•જુલમી•જાંન•પાદશાહનાં•હાથમાંથી•જતે તો• તે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•

દેશનાં•પાદશાહનાં•હાથમાં•પડતે*પણ•તરતજ•જાંન•પાદશાહ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તેથી•એ•મુશકેલીઅત•જતી•રહી*જાંન•પાદશાહ•મોહોટી•ફોજ•લેઈને•ધી•લીનશેહેરથી•શ્રી•લીનકોલંનશીઅરની•તરફ જવાને•વાશતે•શમુદરને•કાંઠે•કુચ•કરતો•હતો•અને•તેહેને•ખબર•નહી•હતી•કે•તે•મારગમાં•ભરતીની•વખતે• પાંણી•ભરાઈ•જશે•માંટે•ભરતી•આવી•તેથી•તેહેનાં•ગાડાં•તથા•શાંમન•તથા•ખજાંનો•શઘલો•જતોરહો•અને•પાહાદશા•પોતે•ઘણીજ•મેહેનતથી•બનચેઓ*તેપછી•શ્રી•શ્રૂઇનઈશટેડનાં•દેવલમાં•તે•આવી•લાગો*પણ•એ•નુકશાંન•થઉં•તેથી•તેહેને•હેવુ તો•દુખ•ઉપજીઆવેઉં કે•તેથી•તેહેને•તાપ•આવીને•તે•મરવા•જેવો•થઓ*તાંહાંથી•બીજે•દીવશે•તેહેને•શ્રી•શલીફોરડમાં•લઈગઆ•અને•તાંહાંથી•પછે•શ્રી•નીઉઆરકમાં•લઈગઆ•તાંહાં•તે•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•અને•તે•વખતે•તેહેની•એકાવંન•વરશની•ઉમર•હતી•ને•તેણે•અઢાર•વરશ•પાદશાહી•કીધી*હેનું•મરંણ•૧૨૧૬ નાં•વરશમાં•થઉં*

હુંછુ•તમારો•પેઆરો•બાપ*

જાંન•પાદશાહનાં•શબાવ•તથા•આબરુનું•બયાંન•(ઘણુંક
રીતે•હીઉમની•બનાવેલી•હકીકત•માંહેથી•લીધેલું*)

“આએ•પાદશાહની•આબરૂમાં•હલકાઈ•તથા•નીચાઈ•તથા•બદી•શરવે•એખટી•થાએલી•હતી•અને•તે•પોતે•પોતાનો•નાશકરતો•હતો•અને•પોતાની•રઈએતનેબી•ખરાબ•કરતો•હતો—અને•તે•નાંમરદ•તથા•આલશૂ•તથા•મુરખ•તથા•હલકો•તથા•છીનાલવો•તથા•નાઉપકારી•તથા•દગાબાજ•તથા જુલંમગાર•તથા•ઘાતકી•હેવી•શઘલી•ખશલતનો•હતો•એ•શરવ•ગુણ•હેની•હઈઆતમાં•હેનાં•કેટલાંએક•કાંમોમાં•ઉઘાડા•દેખાઆ*એણે•પોતાનાં•બાપ•અથવા•ભાઈ•અથવા•ભતરીજો•અથવા•પોતાની•રઈએત•શંગાથે•બી•ઘણીજ•જુડાઈ•કીધી•એમ•કેહેવું•જરા•શખત છે*હેનો•ભાઈ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તેથી•હેને•જેટલુ•રાજમલેઉં•તેટલું•કોઈપંણ•ઈંગલંડનાં•પાદશાહને•મલેઉં•નહી•હતું•હેવું•મોહોટુ•હતું*પણ•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•જે•પરાંત•કે•પોતાનાં•વડાવાઓની•જાગીરો•હતી•તે•આબાદ•પરગણાં•એ

ણે• પોતાની• ભુડી• ચાલથી• ખોઆં* કે ણે• પોતાનું• રાજ• હતું• તે• શ્રી• રૂમનાં• પોપને• તાબેદાર• કીધું• અને• નવા• કાઇદાથી• તથા• દંગા• અને• ફીશાદથી• હેનો• પોતાનો• પાદશાહી• અખતીઆર• ઓછો• થઓ• ને• અંતે• પરદેશી• પાદશાહનાં• હાથથી• હેની• ખરાબી• થાઇ• અને• પોતાનો• જનમારો• બંદીખાંનામાં• કાહાડે• ઇઆ• શતરૂનાં• હેની• પછવાડે• લાગે આથી• પોતે• નાહાશીને• કોઇ• ઠેકાંણે• શંતાઇ• બેશે• હેવો• વખત• આવેઓ• હતો• કિલામાં• તે• મરંણ• પાંમેઓ*”

શવાલો*

પેહેલા• રીચરડની• પછી• શ્રી• ઇંગલંડનો• પાદશાહ• કોણ• થઓ*
કીઆ• વરશમાં• જાંન• પાદશાહ• તખત• ઉપર• બેઠો*
ગુજરેલા• પાદશાહ• રીચરડનો• જાંન• શું• શગો• હતો*
તખત• ઉપર• બેશવાનો• જાંન• વાજબી• વારશ• હતો• શું*
વાજબી• વારશ• કોંણ• હતો*
જાંનનો• કેહવો• શભાવ• હતો*
તેણે• કેઇ• ઘાતકી• વેતરંણ• શોધી• કાહાડી*
પછી• તેણે• પોતાનાં• ઘાતકી• વીચાર• ધારેઆ• પરમાંણે• કીધુ• શું*
આરથર• શી• તરેહે• મરંણ• પાંમેઓ• તેહેની• શઘલી• બીનાં• કહો*
જાંન• પાદશાહે• હેવી નાલાઇકિ• અને• ઘાતકી• રીતે• જે• રાજ• મેલવેઉં•
તે• શુખચેનમાં• ભોગાવેઉં• શું*
મેગાનાં• ચારટાનો• તમે• શું• માંઇનો• કરોછો*
કે• મોહોટા• પટા• ઉપર• કોઇ• ઠેકાંણે• શહી• કીધી• હતી*
રુની• મીડ• કાંહાંછે*
તે• પટા• ઉપર• પાદશાહ• પાશેથી• કોણે• જુલંમથી• શહી• કરાવી• લીધી*
કીઆ• વરશમાં• શહી• કીધી*
કે• મોહોટા• પટાના• કરાર• પરમાંણે• પાદશાહ• ચાલેઓ• શું*
અમીર• લોકોઇ• પોતાની• મદત• શારૂં• કોંણને• શંદેશો• મોકલેઓ*
જાંન• પાદશાહ• શાથી• મરંણ• પાંમેઓ*
તે• કાંહાં• મરંણ• પાંમેઓ*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરણ•પાંમેઓ*
તેહેને•કેટલા•વરશ•પાદશાહી•કીધી*
જાંન•પાદશાહનાં•ગુણ•કેહેવા•હતા*

LETTER IX.

MY DEAR BOY,

As I find that you take great pains to remember the little portions of the History of England which I send you, I continue to write on the same subject.

After the death of king John, in the year 1216, his son Henry, a boy only nine years old, was the rightful king; but, by the ill management of his father, the kingdom had got into the hands of the French king. Young Henry, however, found friends; and after some difficulties and struggles, was put in possession of his kingdom.

This king, Henry the Third, seemed to be well disposed, and to wish to make his people happy; he gave them a charter of liberties, much the same as the Great Charter of king John,—with some other privileges besides. It was, however, soon found that he had not spirit and energy enough to manage the people in such turbulent times. He soon got into troubles and difficulties. As he grew older, he grew no wiser; he often gave away places and dignities to very unfit persons, and thus had the duties of those places ill done, besides causing great dissatisfaction and jealousy. This went on for many years: his wars cost the nation large sums, and he had no success in them, so that altogether the country was in a terrible state of discontent. It was then that an ambitious man, named Simon Montford, earl of Leicester, raised a strong party and rebelled against the king: and, in the same battle, he took both him and his son prisoners. The young prince was named Edward, and a fine gallant prince he was! You may be sure he was very desirous of gaining his liberty, and of restoring the character of his country; and accordingly he contrived to make his escape. A curious story is told of the manner in which he did this. You must not, however, suppose that he was actually shut up in a prison all the time he was in Montford's power; he was allowed to walk and ride out; but he was attended by guards to prevent him from escaping. One day, as he was riding with these guards, he proposed to them that they should ride races together, whilst he should look on and judge which was best. When they had rode several races, so that all their horses were completely tired, the young prince, on his fine fresh horse, galloped away, leaving all his guards in the lurch, staring and wondering at one another's folly.

When Edward had got amongst his friends, he soon raised an army, and made an attack upon Montford, hoping to deliver his country, as well as to set his old father at liberty. He soon reached Montford's army; and a bloody battle was fought, in which the young prince was the conqueror, and Montford was killed. The poor old king had been put in the front of Montford's army, that he might be killed by his own men, who would not know him, because he was closely cased up in his armour: and he was indeed wounded by one of his own soldiers, and would have been killed; but just then he cried out that he was "The King." Then the young prince knew the voice of his father, and rode directly up to him and took him to his own tent, and had his wound dressed;—and the old king lived for some years afterwards.

This king Henry died in the year 1272. He had reigned fifty-six years, which is the longest reign of any of the English kings—except our late good king, George the Third.

To assist your memory, it may be worth while to observe, that there have been only *three* kings of England who have reigned more than fifty years, and these all happen to be *thirds*;—Henry the *Third*, Edward the *Third*, and George the *Third*.

It is in the reign of Henry the Third that we first hear of regular parliaments. Before this time, there were constant wars between the king and the barons; and things never seemed to be going on well. To endeavour to remedy this, representatives of the people were now to be sent up from every county, as well as from boroughs; and the kingdom was to be governed by king, lords, and commons. This is the best of all forms of government, and it continues in England to this day.

A nation governed by a king alone is called a *Monarchy;* if by nobles alone, it is called an *Aristocracy;* if by representatives of the people alone, it is called a *Democracy.* Either of these forms of Government, taken separately, is often exposed to great inconvenience, and productive of great evil; but, when united together, the benefit of each is gained, and the inconveniences of each avoided. The interests of these three estates are closely connected; and, if we are wise, we shall be glad to see them all flourishing together. By this form of government, the good of all ranks is consulted; and if either the king, or the lords, or the people, should attempt to exceed the limits of the power assigned to them, the others are ready to see that all things are properly balanced. I thing it is to our present form of government, under Providence, that we owe the great power of this nation. Look at the map, and see what a little place England is; and look what power this little island possesses, and you may be sure that it never could have been so, if the government had not been a good one. Whilst, therefore, we have the privilege of living under good government, and being protected by good laws, it seems to me the duty of us all to be thankful for these blessings, and to consult the good of our country by a loyal, peaceable, and grateful obedience to those whom Providence has set over us. Even such insignificant people as you and I may be of some use to our country. Every good man, in every station, is an honour and an ornament to the nation in which he lives. If every man would try, not how *great* he could be, but how *good;* if every man who is called a Christian, would make it his great aim to be faithful to the religion which he professes, and to adorn that religion by the uprightness and purity of his life and morals, this would be the true way to make a people happy, and a nation great: there would be then no cause for the complaints which are now made, and there would be no complaints without cause. I would not, however, have you suppose that we are to be religious and good merely for the sake of our present happiness, or as a plan for civilizing the community. These advantages will always *accompany* Christianity, and we may well rejoice in seeing these its present triumphs. But we have a still higher object in view, and are responsible for our conduct to a Master, who is high above all earthly powers; who may indeed be expected to bless us even here, if we study to serve him; and who will, then, assuredly take us to eternal and unmixed happiness in the world to come.

I am your affectionate father.

QUESTIONS.

Who was king of England after the death of king John?
How old was Henry the third when his father died?
In what year did Henry come to the throne?
Did John leave the kingdom in a bad state?
Did Henry wish well to the people?
Did he renew to them the charter of liberty?
Had he spirit and energy of mind enough to govern the people properly?
What powerful nobleman rebelled against him?
Was Montford successful in his contest with the king?
Whom did Montford take prisoners?
What story is related of the manner in which prince Edward escaped?
How did the prince proceed after he had made his escape?
Was there a battle fought between the prince and Montford?
Which side conquered?
Where was the king during this battle?
What is related of the young prince during this battle?
How long did king Henry reign?
In what year did he die?
How many kings of England have there ever been who reigned more than 50 years?
Who were they?
When do we first hear of regular parliaments in England?
What has been the form of the English constitution since that time?

પતર ૯

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

હું• જે• તમુને• થોડી• થોડી• શ્રી• ઈગલંડની• વારતા• લખીને• મોકલુંછ• તે• ઈઆદ• રાખવાને• વાશતે• તમે• ઘણી• મેહેનત• લેવોછ• એવું મહને• માલંમ• પડેછ• તેટલા• શારૂં• તેજ• બાબત• વીશે• લખવાનું• હું• જારી• કરૂંછ*

જાંન•પાદશાહ• ૧૨૧૬ નાં•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તેવખતે તેહેનો•છોકરો•હેનરી•નવ•વરશનો•હતો• તે•તખતનો•ખરો•વારશ હતો•પંણ• તેહેનાં•બાપની•ભુડી•ચાલથી•શ્રી•(ઇંગલંડનું•)રાજ•શ્રી ફરાંશનાં•પાદશાહનાં•હાથમાં•ગઉં*તોપંણ•જવાંન• હેનરીને•જે• મીતરો•મલેઆ• તેવોની•મદતથી•કેટલીએક•અડચંણો•હતી• તે••દુર• કરીને•તથા•કાંઇ•લડાઇ•કરીને•હેનરીને• પોતાનાં•રાજનો•અધીકાર• મલેઓ*

આએ•પાદશાહ•તરીજો•હેનરી• પોતાની•રઇઅતને•શુખી•કરવાને•ચાહાતો•હતો•અને• તેવોને• છુટાપણાંનો• ચારટર• (એટલે•જે• પટો•)કરીને• આપેઓ• તે•પટો•ઘણોખરો•જાંન• પાદશાહનાં•મોહોટા•પટાનાં•જેહેવો•હતો•અને• તેહેમાં•તે•શીવાએ•કાંઇ•બાંજાબી હકો•વધારેઆ•હતા*પંણ•તરતજ•હેવું•માલંમ•પડેઉં• કે•હેવા•વખતનાં•ગુપ્તાંની•લોકોનો•કારભાર•ચલાવવાને•વાશતે•એ•પાદશાહ•શાંમરથ•તથા•શખતીવાંન•નહી•હતો*તેહેને•વેહેલી•અડચંણ•તથા•દુખ•થાવા•લાગુ*અને• તે•જેમ•જેમ• મોહોટો•થાતો•ગઓ• તેમ•તેમ• તે•કાંઇ•દાંનાવ•થાઓ•નહી—તે•હમેશાં• ઘણાંજ•નાલાએક•શખશોને•અધીકાર•તથા• હોદા•આપી•દેતો•હતો• તેથી• હેવું•થઉં•કે• તે•જગાનો•અધીકાર•ખરાબ•થાઓ•અને•શીવાએ• લોકોમાં•ઘણો• કંટાલો•અને•અદેખાઇ•ઉતપંન•થાઇ*હેવું•ઘણાં•વરશ•શુધી•ચાલેઉં• ને•પાદશાએ•જે•લડાઇ•કીધી• તેહેમાં•ઇંગલીશ• લોકોનો•ઘણો• ખરચ•થઓ•અને• તે•લડાઇમાં•પાદશાહ•ફતેહ•નહી•પાંમેઓ•તેથી•એ•દેશનાં•શઘલા•લોકો•કંટાલેઆં•અને•નારાજી•થાઆ*તે• વેલા શ્રી•લેશટરનો•અરલ•શીંમન•માનટફરડ•કરીને•એક•મોહોટો•લોભી પુરૂશ•હતો•તે•થોડીએક•બલવાંન•ફોજ• મેલવીને•પાદશાહની•શાંમને થાઓ•અને• પેહેલીજ•લડાઇમાં• તેણે•પાદશાહને• તથા•તેહેનાં• શાહાજાદાને•પકડીને•કેદ•કીધા*પાદશાહનાં•જવાંન•છોકરાનું•નાંમ• એડવરડ•હતું•અને• તે•શારો•બાહાદુર•શાહાજાદો•હતો*તારે•તમે• ખચીત•જાંણજો•કે•તે•હેવું•ચાહાતો•હતો•જે• પોતે•કેદમાંથી•છુટીને•પોતાનાં•દેશને•છોડવે•માટે•તેણે•કેદમાંહાથી• નાહાશવાની•

વેતરંણ•કીધી*એ•શીરીતે•નાહાડો•તે•વીશેની•એક•અચરત•જેહેવી• વાત•કેહે છે*તમે•એમનાં•જાંણતા•કે•એટલી•વાર•શૂધી•એ•માનટપૂરડનાં•તાબામાંજ•કેદ•હતો—હેને•ફરવા•તથા•ઘોડાપર•બાહેર•જવાદેતા•હતા•પંણ•એ•નાહાશે•નહી•એટલા•શારૂં•હેનાં•ઉપર•ચોકી• રાખી•હતી*એક•દીવશે•એડવરડ•પોતે•ઘોડા ર•બેશીને•ફરવાને•નીકલેઓ•અને•શાથે•ચોકી•પંણ છે•તે•વેલાએ•તેણે•તે•ચોકી•વાલાઓને•કહ્યું•કે•તમે•શઘલા•શાથે•શરત•મારીને•દોડા•દોડાવો•અને કીઓ•દોડો•શરવથી•શારો છે•તે•પોતે•જોએ*જેવારે•તેવોએ•પોતપોતાનાં•ઘોડા•શરતમાં•દોડાવેઆ•તેવારે•તેવોનાં•ઘોડા•ઘણાંજ• થાકીગીઆ•તેવારે•એ•જવાંન•શાહાજાદાએ•પોતાનાં•તાજા•અને•ઓતંમ•ઘોડાને•દોડાવેઓ•ને•નાહાશી•ગીઓ•અને•તે•ચોકી•વાલાઓ•એકમેકનાં•ગોહોડા•શાંમને•જોતા•રહ્યા•અને•પોતાની•મુરખાઈ ઉપર•અચરત•થાવા•લાગા*

જેવારે•એડવરડ•પોતાનાં•દોશતોમાં•જઈ•મલેઓ•તેવારે•તેણે•જલદી•એક•ફોજ•એકઠીકીધી•અને•પોતાનાં•બાપને•છોરવા•તથા પોતાનું•રાજ•પોતાનાં•શવાધીન•કરીલેવાની•ઉમેદમાં•એણે•તે•માનટપૂરડ•ઉપર•હોમલો•કીધો*પછી•હેની•અને•માંનટપૂરડનાં•ફોજનો•મીલાપ•થતાંજ•મોહોટી•લડાઈ•થઈ•તેહેમાં•માંનટ•પૂરડ•મારેઓ ગીઓ•અને•એડવરડ•ફતેહે•પાંમેઓ*ગરીબ•બુઢો•પાદશા• (એટલે જે•એડવરડનો•બાપ•)હેને•માંનટપૂરડની•ફોજની•આગલ•રાખેઓ•એટલા•વાશતેજે•તે•પોતાનાં•માંણસોને•હાથે•મારેઓ•જાએને•હેસે•તમાંમ•બખતર•પેહેરાવેઆં•હતાં•કાંએકે•તેહેને•તેવો•ઓલખે•નહી•માટે•એમ•થઉં•કે•એ•પાદશાહાને•પોતાનાં•લશકર•માંથી એક•શીપાઈએ•જખમી•કીધો•ને•મારી•નાંખેઓ•હતે•એટલામાં•હેને પોકાર•મારેઓ•“અરે•અરે•હું•પાદશાહા•છેઉં*”તેવારે•એડવરડ શાહાજાદાએ•પોતાનાં•બાપનો•આવાજ•ઓલખેઓ•ને•તરતજ•તેહેની•પાસે•જઈને•તેહેને•પોતાનાં•તંબુમાં•લઈજઈને•તેહેનો•જખમ• દરૂશત•કરાવેઓ—તે•પછી•બુઢો•પાદશાહા•શોડા•વરશ•શૂધી• જીવેઓ*

એ•તરીજો•હેનરી•પાહ્દશા• ૧૨૭૨ નાં•વરશમાં•મરણ•પાંગેઓ*હેને•છપંન•વરશ•રાજ•કીધું•હતું• તે•તરીજા•જારજ•શીવાએ•એટલા•દીવશ•કોઇ•પંણ•ઇગલીશ•પાહ્દશાએ•રાજ•કીધું•નહી•હતું*

તમને•શારી•પઠે•ઇઆદ•રેહે•એટલા•શારૂં•કેહેવું•જોઇએ•કે•જેહેને•પચાશ•વરશ•ઉપર•રાજ•કીધું•હેવા•શ્રી•ઇગલંડ•દેશમાં•તરણ•પાહ્દશા•થઆ — એમાંથી•હરેકની•આખર•તરીજી• હતી•તે•એ•કે•તરીજો•હેનરી •તરીજો•એડવરડ• અને•તરીજો• જારજ*

એ•તરીજા•હેનરી•પાદશાહાનાં•વખતથી•આપણ•શાંભલીએ•કે•પારલીઆમેંનટ•ન તે• બેશવા•લાગી*એ•વખતની•આગામચ•ઉમરા•લોકો•તથા•પાહ્દશાની•વચે•હમેશાં•લડાઇ• થાતી• હતી•અને•કાંમકાજ•કશી•શારી•રીતે•ચાલતું•નહી•હતું*એમાટ•બંદોબશત•કરંવા•શારૂં•હરએક•પરગણાનાં•તથા•હરએક• શેહેરનાં• લોકો•એખઠાં•થઇને• તેવો• પોતાની•તરફથી•વકીલ•પશંદ•કરીને• મોકલાવે•એ•ઘરમાંણે પાહ્દશા•તથા•ઉમરા•તથા• લોકોનાં•વકીલો• મલીને•શાથે•રાજનો કારભાર•ચલાવવો*શઘલા•કરતાં•રાજધાંનીની•એ હેવી•ચાલ•ઘણીજ, શારી• હોએછે•અને•એ•ચાલ•આજ•શૂધી•શ્રી•ઇગલંડમાં• ચાલેછે*જે•રાજમાં•એખલા•પાહ્દશાનીજ•હુકમત• હોએછે• તેહેને•પાહ્દશાત•કરી• કેહેછે•તથા• જે•રાજમાં•ઉમરા• લોકોની•હુકમત• હોએછે• તેહેને ઉમરાવોનુંજ•રાજ•કેહેછે•અને• જે•રાજમાં• રઇએતનાં•વકીલો•હકુમત•કરતા• હોએતો• તેહેને•રઇએતનું જ•રાજ• કેહેછે*એમાંથી•એકજ•રીત•પરમાંણે•રાજ•ચાલેતો• તેથી• મોહોટી•અડચંણ•તથા•મોહોટું• દુખ• પેદા•થાએછે•પંણ•એ•તરેંણ•રીત• એખટી• કરીને• રાજ•ચલાવેતો• તેથી•હરેકનાં•નફા•હાંશલ• થાએ•અને•હરકત• છોડીદેવાએ•*એ તરેહે•તરેહેનાં•રાજનો•નફો•એખડોછે•અને•અગરજો•આપણે શીઆંણાં•હોઇએતો•તે•શઘલાં•રાજ•આબાદ•રેહેતાં•જોવાને•આપણનેખુશી થાવુ•જોઇએ*હેવી• રીતનાં•રાજથી•શઘલા• લોકોનુ•ભલુ•થાએછે•અને• અગરજો•પાહ્દશા• અથવા• ઉમરા• અથવા•રઇઆતને•જેકાંઇ•શતા•આપીછે• તેથી• તેવો•વધારે•કરવા•માંગેતો•બીજાઓ•શઘલી•ચીજોને•શમતોલ•કરવાને•તઇઆર છે*પંણ•ઉ•શાહુચકે• આપણી•હવડાંની•રાજ

ધાંનીની• રીતથી• પરમેશવરનીં• મેંરબાથી• આપણી• કોમનાં• લોકોનુ• બલ• ઘણુ• વધેઉં છે* પંણ• તમે• (પ્રુથવીનો•)નકશો• જોવો• કે• શ્રી• ઈંગલંડ• દેશ• કહવાં• નાંહાંનાં• જગોઆ• દેખાઈ છે• અને• જોવો• કે• ઈ• નાંહાંનાં• ટાપુનુ• કેહવુ• બલ છે• અને• તમે• ખચીત• જાંણજો• કે• (ઈ• ટાપુમાં•)રાજ• ધાંની• શારી• નહી• હોતે• તો• ઈટલુ• બલ• કાંહાંથી• હોતે* આપણ• શારા• રાજનાં• હાથ• હેઠલ• છઈએ• ને• આપણને• શારા• ધારાનો• આશરો• મલે છે• માટે• આપણને• પરમેશવરનો• ઉપકાર• જાંણવો• જોઈએ• અને• જેહેને• પરમેશવરે• આપણી• ઉપર• હોકંમ• કીધો છે• તેહેનાં• હોકંમનાં• તાબેદાર• રહીને• આપણાં• દેશનુ• ભલુ• ઈછવુ* તમે• તથા• હુ• પોતે• જો• પંણ• કે• આપણ• કશાહોશાબમાં• નથી• તોપંણ• આપણથી• આપણાં• દેશને• કાંઈબી• ફાઈદો• થાશે* હરેક• લોકોમાં• હરેક• શારૂ• માંણશ• હોઈ• તેથી• તેહેનીં• કોમનાં• લોકોને• માંન• તથા• શોભાછે* જો• હરેક• માંણશ• મોહોટાપંણુ• મેલવા• કરતાં• ભલાપંણુ• મેલવાનીં• તજવીજ• કરે• અને• હરેક• માંણશ• કે• જે• ખરીશતીઆંન• કેહેવાઈ છે• તે• પોતાનાં• ધરંમ• ઉપર• પરીત• રાખે• અને• પોતાની• શારી• તથા• નીતીની• ચાલથી• પોતાનાં• ધરંમને• શોભા• આપે તો• તેહવી• રીતે• લોક• ખરેખર• શુખી• અને •પરાકરમી• થાઈ• અને• તેવારે• હમણાં• જે• ફરીઆદો ઓ• થાઈ છે• તે• થાઈ• નહીં• અને• વગાર• કારંણે• ફરીઆદબી થાઈ• નહી* પંણ• આઈ• દુનીઆંનાં• શુખને• વાશતે• આથવા• લોકોને. શુધારવાને• વાશતે• આપણ• હેવી• રીતે• ધરમાતમાં• અને• શારા• થઈહેવુ• આપણે• શમજવુ• નહી* કાંઈ કે• જે• દેશમાં• ખરીશટી• ધરંમ• ચાલેઓ છે• તાંહાં• પરમેશવરની• ખુદરતથી• ઈશરવ• થાશે* તોપંણ• આપણો ઈરાદો• બાંનો• અને• ઘણો જ• મોહોટો છે• અને• આપણી• ચાલનો• પરમેશવરને• આપણે• જવાબ• દેવો• જોઈએ• કે• જે• પરમેશવર• પરથવીથી ઉપર• અને• ઉંનચો છે• કે• જે• ધણી• આઈ• દુનીઆંમાં• આપણને• શારુ• નશીબ• કદાપી• આપશે• અગારજો• આપણ• તેહેનાં• હોકંમ• પરમાંણે ચાલીઈતો• અને• વલી• બેશક• પરમેશવર• આપણને• બેહેશતમાં• શદાકાલ. શુખ• આપશે*

હુ• છુ• તમારો• પેઆરો• બાપ*

શવાલો*

જાંન•પાદશા•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•પછી•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનો•પાહાદશા•કોણ•થએઆ*

તરીજા•હેનરીનો•બાપ•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•તેવખતે•એ•હેનરી•કેટલા•વશનો•હતો*

કીઆ•વરશમાં•હેનરી•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો*

જાંન•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•તે•વખતે•શૂ•રાજની•ખરાબ•અવશતા•હતી*

હેનરી•શૂ•લોકોનું•શારૂ•ચાહાતો•હતો*

લોકોનાં•છુટાપણાંનો•ચારટર•એટલે•જે•પટો•હતો•તે•શૂ•તેણે•ફરીથી•ચાલુ•કીદો*

શૂ•લોકોને•શારી•રીતે•ચલાવા•લાએક•તેહેમાં•હોશીઆરી•તથા•શકતી•હતી*

તેહેનાં•શાંમને•કીઆ•મોહોટા•ઉમરાએ•ફીશાદ•કીદો*

માંનટફરડએ•પાહાદશા•શાથે•લડાઈ•કીધી•તેહેમાં•શૂ•તે•ફતેહે•પાંમેઆ*

માંનટફરડે•કોણને•કોણને•બંદીવાંન•કીધા*

એડવરડ•શાહાજાદા•નાહાશી•ગાઆ•તેહેનાં•વીશે•શૂ•વાત•કહેલી છે*

શાહાજાદાએ•નાહાશી•ગીઆ•પછી•શૂ•કીધું*

શૂ•તે•શાહાજાદો•માંનટફરડની•શાથે•લડાઈ•લડેઓ*

કોણે•ફતેહે•કીધી*

એ•લડાઈ•ચાલતી•હતી.તારે•પાહાદશાહા•કાંહાં•હતો*

એ•લડાઈની•વખતે•શાહાજાદાએ•શૂ•કીધુ•તે•કેહે*

હેનરી•પાહાદશાએ•કાંહાંશૂધી•રાજ•કીધુ*

તે•કઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ*

શ્રી•ઇંગલડનાં•કેટલા•પાહાદશા•થાએ•ગીઆછ•કે•જેવોએ•૫૦•વરશથી•વધારે•રાજ•કર્યુ*

તેવોનાં•નાંમ•શૂ*

શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમાં•પારલીએમેનટ•કીઆરથી•થાવા•લાગી*

તે•વખતથી•તે•આજ•શૂધી•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમાં•રાજનો•કારભાર•શી•રીતેનો•ચાલે છે*

LETTER X.

MY DEAR BOY,

The last king we spoke of was Henry the Third; who reigned, as we said, fifty-six years, and died in the year 1272. His son Edward had been, for some time, in the Holy Land, engaged in a war against the Saracens. There is a very pretty story told of the affection of Edward's wife. Whilst in the Holy Land, he was wounded by an assassin, in the arm, with a poisoned dagger, but the Queen is said to have sucked the poison out of the wound, and thus to have saved the life of her husband.

Edward was returning from Palestine, (which you know is another name for the Holy Land,) when he heard of the death of the king, his father. He, and his faithful wife, Queen Eleanor, arrived safely in England, and they were crowned at Westminster, in the year 1274. The people rejoiced at the thoughts of having such a king, for they took him to be a brave and noble-minded prince: and he certainly was a great warrior, and an active king, and he exerted himself greatly to make his country prosperous. He confirmed the Magna Charta; which charter, as you know, gave great privileges to the English people. His wars, too, added to the power and greatness of the nation. It was this king that first united the Welsh nation to the English. You know where Wales is: you have seen it in your map of England, on the left side, that is,—the west. You perceive that it is joined to England; and king Edward's ambition led him to wish to have it in his own power; for, in the days we are speaking of, it was a separate kingdom, and had its own prince to govern it. The people who lived in Wales were the ancient Britons, who had never been driven from their territories by foreign invaders; and the present people of Wales are descended from those ancient Britons. Whilst other parts of this island were overrun by Romans, Saxons, Danes, and Normans, these ancient Britons, guarded by their high mountains, and their high courage, never submitted to any of these conquerors. King Edward was determined to try what he could do towards conquering these brave people; and, upon a slight quarrel with Llewellyn, then the prince of that country, he made war against them. But the brave Welsh resisted his encroachments, and refused to submit to him; and they were encouraged in their high spirit by their bards (or poets), who made war songs in praise of their country, and sung them to their harps, thus raising the courage of the people, and lifting up their minds to a resolute determination to defend their native land. Edward saw, that as long as the bards remained, he should never be able to conquer the Welsh: and some historians say that he ordered all these ancient minstrels to be hunted down, and put to death. If this story be true, we may talk of the *greatness* of Edward the First,—but I never can think of him without calling to mind his horrible cruelty. I cannot help feeling some of that indignation which must have glowed in the heart of our poet Gray, when he wrote the following lines, which he supposes the last of these bards to have uttered against this cruel king.

Ruin seize thee, ruthless king!
Confusion on thy banners wait!
Though fanned by conquest's crimson wing,
They mock the air with idle state;
Helm nor hauberk's twisted mail,
Nor all thy virtues, tyrant, can avail
To save thy soul from nightly fears,
From Cambria's curse, from Cambria's tears.

You will perhaps have a pleasure in learning these lines by heart; the remainder of Gray's Ode goes on to show the miseries, which, for a long time, fell upon the descendants of king Edward; these, the last Welsh minstrel is supposed to see with a sort of prophet's eye,—but this you know is all poetry; we don't believe that these bards could foresee future events, though the poet, who lived after the events had come to pass, was very well able to describe them. You will, however, be pleased with reading the Ode, and, besides, it will be a little practice for you in English history. *Cambria*, you know, is the ancient name for *Wales*.

The Welsh, although they were so fiercely harassed by king Edward, made a most resolute and persevering defence. They refused to have him for their king, and declared they would have none but a countryman of their own, who could speak no language but theirs, and who had been born and bred among them. King Edward then tried to come to terms with them, and he said, that, if they would submit to him, he would give them just such a king as they had asked for. To this they agreed; and then Edward produced his own little son, who was but a few days old, and who had been born in Wales, at Caernarvon, and who could speak no language at all to offend them.

In this manner, Edward the First is said to have united Wales with England; and the king of England's eldest son has still, as you know, the title of Prince of Wales. We cannot be pleased with the manner in which this union was brought about, although we can see that it is much to the advantage of both nations.

Soon after this, there was a dispute about the crown of Scotland, there being several persons who considered themselves as the rightful heirs. The dispute was referred to king Edward; and his ambitious spirit led him to see, that, with a little management, he might get Scotland into his own hands. He declared that John Baliol was the proper king; but Edward kept all the power in his own hands; and Baliol had the *name* of a king, without any of the privileges belonging to a sovereign. But this the Scottish nation did not at all approve of, and they tried all they could to deliver themselves from their subjection to the king of England. There was a very brave warrior named William Wallace; and such was the high spirit of this great man, that he could not bear to see his beloved Scotland under the power of the English. He accordingly roused his countrymen to exert themselves for their deliverance. King Edward marched into Scotland to resist the force of Wallace, and a very great battle was fought at Falkirk, in which the English gained the victory. The high spirit of the Scots was not, however, yet subdued: Wallace still persevered in his endeavours to deliver his country. The king of England again took the field, and gained several victories over the Scotch, and at length he took William Wallace himself prisoner. And here king Edward again showed the cruelty of his disposition, for he ordered his brave enemy to be brought to London in chains, and then to be hanged, drawn, and quartered. Still, however, the Scots resisted; and fighting under Robert Bruce, they drove the English out of Scotland, and then made *Bruce* their king.

Edward saw, after all his fighting, and all his victories, that still he had little or no power remaining in Scotland. This thought made him extremely angry and violent; and he was resolved to leave no means untried for recovering his authority there. He accordingly sent another large army to oppose Bruce, and he gained a complete victory. Then he went again into Scotland, where he found the people more humble and submissive than he had ever seen them, and he seemed to expect that he should then bring them entirely into subjection. Vain, however, are all the projects of ambitious man; and a grievous thing is it to make the misery of others the object of our desires! Edward had not long to live. He died at Carlisle, in the year 1307. But such was his animosity against the Scotch, that, even with his dying breath, he begged of his son Edward never to give up the contest against them, till he had made a complete conquest of their kingdom. What a melancholy end,—for a man to die with such feelings on his mind! But so it is, if we encourage wrong feelings during our lives, they will be with us at our deaths,—either leading us astray by their bad influence, or harassing and tormenting us with a consciousness of their guilt.

But to such a king as Edward the First, historians are generally ready to give a high character. And it is indeed true, that his warlike spirit led him to perform such exploits as brought glory and greatness to his kingdom; but how little does this contribute to the happiness of a people, compared with those peaceful and useful qualities which make a nation truly flourishing! And how can we admire the private character of a man who gave way to a temper so full of cruelty and violence?

We are told that his person was very fine and comely, and that he was very tall, but that his legs were too long in proportion to his body. And thus he got the name of *Longshanks!* Edward Longshanks! What a name and title for a king!

Ever yours, &c.

QUESTIONS.

Who was king of England after Henry the Third?
Where was prince Edward when his father died?
Who was Edward's wife?
What instance of affection is recorded of this lady?
In what year did Edward come to the throne?
Was Edward brave and warlike; or the contrary?
What country did Edward endeavour to add to England?
Where is Wales?
Who was prince of that country before Edward attacked it?
What description of people are said to have been a great check to king Edward's progress in Wales?
How did Edward treat these bards or poets?
What stratagem is king Edward said to have made use of to get his son acknowledged prince of Wales?
What has the eldest son of the king of England been called since the time when Edward thus got possession of Wales?
What country did Edward next endeavour to gain possession of?
What events in Scotland opened a way for Edward's ambitious designs?
Whom did Edward appoint king of Scotland?
Who resisted Edward in Scotland?
Was there a great battle?
Where?
Who conquered?
How did the king treat William Wallace?
Did the Scots still persevere?
Under whom?
Who was then crowned king of Scotland?
Where did Edward the First die?
In what year?
What dying request did he make to his son?
What was his personal appearance?
What name was he sometimes called by?

પતર• ૧૦

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

આપણે• છેલી• વખતે• તરીજા• હેનરી• વીશે• કહું• હતું• ને• માહારા• કહા• પરમાંણે• તે• હેનરીએ• છપંન• બરશ• શુધી• રાજ• કીધું• અને તે• ૧૨૭૨ નાં• વરશમાં• મરંણ• પાંમેઆ✱તે• આગામચ• હેનો• છોકરો• એડવરડ• શ્રી• જરૂશેલેમમાં• જઇને• તાંહાં• મુશલમાંન• લોકોની• શાથે• કાંઇ• દીવશ• શુધી• લડાઇ• કરતો• હતો✱એડવરડની• બાઇડીનાં

પેસાર•વીશે•એક•ઘણીજ•શારી•વાત•કેહે છે*કે•જેવારે• એડવરડ• શ્રી•જીરૂશેલેમમાં•હતો• તેવારે•કોઈએક•ખુનીએ• તેહેની• બાજુમાં•એક•જેહેર•પાએલી•કટાર•મારીને• તેહેને•ઘાએલ•કીધો• પંણ• તે•જખમનુ•જેહેર• હેની•રાંણીએ•ચુશી•લીધું•અને•એ પરમાંણે• પોતાનાં• ભરથારનો•જીવ•બંચાવેઓ*

શ્રી• પેલેશટાંઈન•(કે•જે•તમો•જાંણતા•હશો• જે•શ્રી•જીરુશેલેમનાં• દેશનુ•બીજું•નાંમ છે•) તાંહાંથી•પાછો•આવતી•વેલાએ•એડવરડે• પોતાનાં•બાપ• હેનરી•પાહાદશાની• મરંણ• પાંમેઆની•ખબર• શાંભલી*તે•પછી•પોતાની•માઆલું•રાંણી•ઈલીએનોર•શુધાં•એડવરડ•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશમાં•શહી•શલાંમત• આવી• પોહોચેઓ•અને• ૧૨૭૪ નાં•વરશમાં• વેશટમીનીશટરનાં• દેવલમાં• તેવોનાં•માથા•ઉપર•તાજ• મેલેઉં*હેવા•પાહાદશાનાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠાથી•શઘલી•પરજા•ખુશી•થાઈ•કાંએકે•તેવો•હેવું•જાંણતા•હતાં•કે•એ•પાહાદશાહ•ઘણોજ•જોરાવર•તથા•ઉમદા•દીલનો•છે•અને•ખરેખર•તે•ઘણી•મોહોટો•બાહાદુર અને•ચાલાક•પાહાદશા•હતો•અને•એ• પોતાનાં•રાજની•આબાદાંની•કરવાશારૂ•ઘણી• મેહેનત•કરતો•હતો*મેગના• ચારટા•કરીને•જે•પટો• થાએચ• તે•એણે•કબુલ•રાખેઓ•કે• જે•પટાથી•તમો• જાંણો છો•કે• ઈંગલીશ• લોકોને•ઘણો•અખતીઆર•મલેઓ છે* અને•એ•પાહાદશાએ•લડાઈઓ•કીધી• તેથી•એ• કોમનાં• લોકોનો•અખતીઆર•તથા• મોહોટાઈ•ઘણી•વધી*એજ•પાહાદશાએ•પરથમજ•શ્રી•વેલશ•દેશ•(ફતે કરી) ને•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ• દેશનાં•તાબામાં•કીધું*શ્રી• વેલશ• દેશ•કાંહાંછે તે•તમુને•માલંમ•હશે—શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•નકશાની• ડાબી•બાજુએ•એટલે જે•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશની•પશચંમની•તરફ છે• તે•તમે•જોઉં•હશે*તમે•જેશો•કે•શ્રી• વેલશ•પંણ•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ• દેશને•લગતું છે• અને• એડવરડ• પાદશાએ• હેવો• લોભ•કીધો•કે• તે• દેશ• પોતાનાં•હાથમાં•આવે—જે વખતની•આપંણ•વાત•કરીએચ• તે•વખતે•શ્રી• વેલશનુ•રાજ• જુદુ•હતુ•અને• તેહેમાં• તેહેનો• પોતાનો•જુદો•રાજા• હાકમી•કરતો•હતો*શ્રી વેલશ•દેશમાં•જે• લોકો• રેહેતા•હતા• તે•શ્રી•બરીટેનનાં•પુરાતંન•લોકોની• ઓલાદનાં•હતા•અને•જાહારે• અગાઉનાં• પરદેશી• પાહાદશાઓ

ઈ•ટાપુ•લેવા•આવેઆ•તેવારે•શ્રી•વેલશનાં•લોકો•લડાઈમાં•હારીને• પોતાનું•દેશ•છોડીને•નાહાઠા•નહીહતા•અને•શ્રી•વેલશ•દેશનાં• હવડાંનાં•જે•લોકો છે•તેવો•અશલનાં•જમાનાંનાં•બરીટનશ•લોકોની•ઓલાદ નાંછે*આઈ•ટાપુમાં•રોમન• તથા•શાકશંન•તથા•ડેનશ•તથા• નારમંન લોકોઈ•પૂરીવલીને•લુટેઉં•તે•વેલાઈ•શ્રી•વેલશનાં•રેહેનારા•પુરાતંન•બરીટનશ•લોકો•કોઈને•તાબે•થાઈઆ•નહી•કાંઈકે•તેવો•પોતનાં•ઉનચા પાહાડોથી•તથા•પોતાના•ભારે•જોરથી•બનચેઆ*ઈડવરડ•પાહાદશાઈ•તે•બાહાદુર•લોકોને•જીહીતી•લેવાને•વાશતે•જેકાંઈ•તેહેનાંથી•બનેઉ•તેમ•કીધુ—અને•લીવેલીન•નાંમનો•તેવખતે•શ્રી•વેલશનો•રાજા• હતો•તેહેની•શાથે•હેને•કાંઈ•કજીઓ•થઓ•તે•ઉપરથી•ઈડવડે• તેહેનાં•ઉપર•લડાઈ•કીધી*પંણ•શ્રી•વેલશનાં•જોરમંદ•લોકોઈ•ઈડવરડનાં•હોમલાનો•શારીપડે•અટકાવ•કીધો•ને•તેહેનાં•તાબેદાર•થવાનું•કબુલ•કીધુનહી—અને•તે•લોકોનાં•ગાવઈઆ•ઈટલેજે•કવેશરો• હતા•તેવો•લડાઈનાં•ગીત•બનાવીને•શારંગીમાં•વજાડીને• તે•લોકોની•પાશે•ગાતા•હતા•અને•તેહેમાં•શ્રી•વેલશ•દેશની• વખાંણ•કરતા•હતા•તેથી•તે•લોકોને•વધતુ•શૂર•આવે•અને•તેથી• પોતાનાં•વતનને•બનચાવાને•વાશતે• તેવોનાં•દીલમાં•પકો•ઈરાદો•અને•ઠરાવ•થાઈ*ઈ•ઉપરથી•ઈડવરડે•જોઈઉ•કે•જાંહાંશૂધી•ઈ•કવેશરો•હોઈ• તાંહાંશૂધી•શ્રી•વેલશનાં•લોકો•પોતાથી•જીહીતાં•શકાઈ•નહી—ઈટલા• શારુ•કેટલાઈક•હકાઈત•લખનારાઓ•કેહેચ•કે•ઈણે•હેવો• હોકંમ•કીધો•કે•ઈ•શરવ•કવેશરોને•શોધી•કાહાડીને•તેવોને•મારી. નાંખો* હવે•જો•ઈ•વાત•ખરી•હોઈતો•ઈડવરડની•મોહોટાઈ•વીશે આપણ•શૂ•બોલીઈ—પંણ•જેવેલાઈ•કે•મહને•ઈ•ઈડવરડ•દીલમાં• ઈઆદ•આવેચ•તે•વેલાઈ•હેનો•ભુડો•જુલંમ•તથા•ઘાતકી•પણુંબી• ઈઆદ•આવેઆ•વનાંઈ•રેહતુ•નથી*આપણાં•કવેશર•ગારેઈ• જે•વેલાઈ•હેઠલ•કહેલાં•કવેત•લખેઆં•તે•વેલાઈ•તેહેનાં•દીલમાં• જેકાંઈ• ગુશો•હશે•તેહેવો•થોડોબી•ગુશો•મહને•લાગેઆ•વનાંઈ• રેહેતો• નથી—ને•ગારે•હેવુ•ધારેચ•કે•નીચેનાં•બેતો•જે•છે•તે•શ્રી•વેલશ•દે

શનો•શરવેથી•છેલો•અને•આખરનો•કિ•રાગ•ગાનારો•ઈ•ધાતકી•પાહાદશા•ઈડવરડની•વીશે•બોલેઓ•હતો*

રે•જુલમી•પાહાદશા•તાહારો•નાશ•થાઈ•
અને•તાહારૂ•લશકર•ઘબરાઈને•ખરાબ•થાઈ•
જો•કે•તુ•ફતેહે•પાંમેઆથી•હેકાર•કરેચ•
પંણ•તેવો•શરવ•તાહારી•પુકરાજી•ઉપર•હુશી•કરેચ•
તાહારાં•માંથાનાં•ટોપ•અથવા•બદન•ઉપર•પેહેરવાનાં•જાલી
દાર•બખતર•
અથવા•અરે•જુલંમગાર•તાહારી•શઘળી•પુનાઈથી•કાંઈ•પંણ
થનાર•નથી•
અને•તાહારો•પરાંણ•રાતની•દેહેશતથી•કધી•બચનાર•નથી•
કાંકિ•શ્રી•કામબરીઆ•(ઈટલે•જે•શ્રી•વેલશ•દેશ)નો•તાહારા•
ઉપર•શરાપ•છે•ને•તેહેને•તુ•રડાવેચ*

કદાચીત•ઈ•બેતાને•મોહોડે•શીખશો•તો•તમે•ખુશી•થાશો—ઘણું•કિ•શ્રૂ•ધી•ઈડવરડ•પાહાદશાની•ઓલાદનાં•પાહાદશાહો•આપર•જે•દુખ•અને•વીપતો•પડી•તે•મીશાતર•ગારેની•બનાવેલી•બાકીની•ગજલમાં•લખી•જણાંવીચ—અને•ઈ•વીપતો•શ્રી•વેલશનાં•છેલા•ગાવઈઆઈ•પેગમબરની•નજરની•પેઠે•જોઈ•હતી — પંણ•તમે•જાંણોચ•કે•ઈ•શઘલુ•કવેતનું•કાંમ•છે—હમો•હેવું•માંનતા•નથી•કે•ઈ•ગાવઈઆઓ•ભવીશ•કહી•શખે•પંણ•ઈ•બનાવ•બનેઆ•પછે•જે•કવેશર•જીવેઓ•તેહેને•તે•બનાવનુ•શારી•પેઠે•કાબેલીઅતથી•બઆંન•કીધુ*પંણ•તે•ગજલ•વાંચેઆથી•તમે•ખુશી•થાશો•અને•તે•શીવાઈ•તમને•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશની•વારતાનો•થોડો•ઘણો•માહાવરો•થાશે*તમે•જાંણો•છો•જે•શ્રી•વેલશ•દેશનુ•અશલ•પુરાતંન•નાંમ•કામબરીઆ•હતું*

શ્રી•વેલશનાં•લોકોને•ઈડવરડ•પાહાદશાઈ•ઘણાં•હેરાંન•કીધા•તોઈ•પંણ•તે•લોકોઈ•શારી•પડે•લડીને•પોતાનો•શારો•બંનચાવ•કીધો*તેવોઈ•ઈડવરડને•પોતાનો•પાહાદશા•કબુલ•નહી•કીધો•અને•કેહેવા•લાગા•કે•પોતાનાં•જાતદેશી•કે•જે•તેવોની•બોલી•વગાર•બીજુ•કાંઈ•

બોલે•નહી•અને•તે•શ્રી•વેલશનાં•લોકો•માંજ•જનમેલો•તથા•પરવરશ•થએલો•હોએ•તેહેવા•શખશ•વીનાં•બીજા•કોઈ•પ્રાણીને•પોતાનો•પાદશાહ•કરશૂ•નહી*તેઉપરથી•એડવરડ•પાદશાહએ•તેવો•શાથે•કરાર•કીધો•અને•તેવોને•કહું•કે•અગરજો•તમે•માહારૂ•કહું•કરશો•તો•તમે•જેહેવો•રાજા•માંગોછો•તેહેવોજ•રાજા•હુ•તમને•આપીશ*હેવી•વાતને•તેવોએ•કબુલ•કીધી•અને•પછે•એડવરડે•પોતાનો•નાંહાંનો•છોકરો•કે•જેહેનો•જનંમ•શ્રી•વેલશમાં•કાએરનારવંન•કરીને•એક•શેહેરછે•તાંહાં•થઆ•હતો•અને•તે•તરતનો•જનમેલો•હતો•માટે•તેહેને•કોઈબી•બોલી•આવડતી•નહી•હતી•કે•તેથી•શ્રી•વેલશનાં•લોકોને•ગોશો•આવે•માટે•તે•છોકરાને•તેવોનો•રાજા•કીધો*

એપરમાંણે•પેહેલા•એડવરડે•શ્રી•વેલશ•તથા•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનુ•રાજ•જોડીને•એક•કીધું•તે•પછી•આજશૂધી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•પાદશાહશાનાં•વડા•છોકરાને•શ્રી•વેલશ•પરાંતનો•શાહાજાદો•કરી•કેહેછે•તે•તમે•જાંણોછો*જે•રીતે•એ•બંધે•રાજ•એકઠાં•કીધાં•તે•રીતથી•આપંણ•રાજી•નથી•તોપંણ•આપણ•જોઈએ•કે•તેહેવુ•કીધાથી•બંધો•પરાંતની•રઈએતને•ઘણો•ફાએદો•થઆ*

એ•પછી••તરતજ•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડનાં•રાજ•બાબે•કાંઈ•ટંટો•પરેઆ•કાએકે•કેટલાએક•શખશોએ•વારશાનો•દાવો•ઉઠાવેઆ*એ•કજીઆ•એડવરડ•પાદશાહ•પાશે•ચુકાવા•આવેઆ•તીઆરે•એડવરડએ•લોભથી•કેહેવુ•ચાહું•કે•થોડીક•વેતરંણ•અને•હીકમતથી•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડનુ•રાજબી•પોતાનાં•શવાધીનમાં•લાવે*એડવરડએ•જાંન•બેલીઓલને•(શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડનો)વાજબી•રાજા•મુકરર•કીધોપંણ•તેણે•શઘલો•અઅખતીઆર•પોતાનાંજ•હાથમાં•રેહેવા•દીધો•અને•બેલીઓલને•અમથુ•રાજાનુ•નાંમ•હતુ•તે•શીવાએ•રાજાનીજે•શતા•થાએછે•તે•કાંઈ•તેહેનાં•હાથમાં•નહી•હતી*પંણ•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડની•પરજાને•એહેવુ•મુતલક•ગમેઉં•નહી•તેટલા•શારૂ•શ્રી•ઈગલંડનાં•પાદશાહની•મુખતીઆરી•ટાળવા•શારૂ•તેવોએ•મેહેનત•કરવા•માંડી*(તે•ઈશકાટશ•લોકોમાં•)ઉલીઅંમ•વાલેશ•કરીને•એક•મોહોટો•બાહાદુર•શખશ•હતો•અને•એ•મોહોટા•શખશનુ•હેવુતો•ઉમદા•દીલ•હતુ•કે•તેહેનુ•પોતાનુ•પેઆરૂ•

શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડનુ• દેશ• ઈંગલીશ•પાહાદશાનાં•શવાધીનમાં•હતુ• તે• તેહેનાંથી• દેખાઈ• શકાઉં• નહી*ઈ• માટે• તેણે• પોતાનાં• દેશનાં• લોકોને• આજાદ• કરાવવા•શારૂ• તેવોને• ઉશકેરેઆં• ને•લડાઈ•કરવા•કર્યું* ઈડવરડ• પાહાદશા•વાલેશની• ફોજ•શંગાથે•લડાઈ•કરવા•શારૂ•શ્રી ઈશકાટલંડમા•ગીઆ•અને•ઈક• ઘણીજ• મોહોટી•લડાઈ• શ્રી•ફાલકરકમાં•થાઈ• તે•લડાઈમાં•ઈંગલીશ• લોકો•ફતેહે•પાંમેઆ* તોબી•ઈશકાટ•લોકોની•બાહાદુરી• ઓછી•થાઈ•નહી• અને• પોતાનાં• દેશને શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ• દેશનાં• તાબામાંથી• છોડાવા•શારૂં •વાલેશ•ઘણી•મેહેનત•કરતો•હતો* તે•પછી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•પાહાદશાઈ• ફરીથી•ઈશકાટ• લોકોની• શાથે• લડાઈઓ• કીધીઓ• અને• કેટલીઈક•વખત•જીહી તેઓ•ને• અંતે• વુલીઅંમ•વાલેશને•કેદ•કરી•લીધો*ને•ઈડવરડ•પાહાદશાઈ• પોતાનો• ઘાતકી•શભાવ•ફરીથી• દેખાડેઓ• કાંઈજે•ઈણે• પોતાનાં• બાહાદુર• શતરૂ•વાલેશનાં• પગમાં• બેરી•ઘાલીને• તેહેને•શ્રી લંડનમાં• બોલાવી•મંગાવીને•પછે• તેહેને•ફાંશી• દેવારેઓ• અને• તેહેનાં•મુરદાંને•કાપી•દુકડા•કરાવેઆ*તોઈપંણ•ઈશકાટ• લોકો• શાંમને•થઆકીધા• અને•રાબરટ•બરૂશનાં•હાત• હેઠલ•રહીને• તેવોઈ• પોતાનાં• દુશમનો•શંગાથે•લડીને•ઈંગલીશ• લોકોને•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડમાંથી•કાહાડી•મેલેઆ•ને•પછે•બરૂશને•તેવોઈ• પોતાનો•રાજા•કીધો*

ઈડવરડઈ•ઈટલીબધી•લડાઈઓ•કીધીઓ• અને•ફતેહે•પાંમેઓ• તોપંણ•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડમાં•કાંઈ• તેહેની•જરાઈક•મુખતીઆરી રહી•નહી*હેવા• ખેઆલથી• તેહેને•ઘણોજ• ગુગો• તથા• રીશ•આવી•ને• તેહેને• હેવો•ઠરાવ•કીધો• કે• હરેક•ઉપાઈ•કરીને• પોતાનાં•તાબામાં•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડ•કરવું*તે•ઉપરથી•ફરીને• તેણે• ઈક• મોહોટી• ફોજ•બરૂશની•શાથે•લડવાને•વાશતે• મોકલી• અને• તે•ફતેહે•પાંમેઓ*પછી•ઈડવરડ• પોતે•ફરીથી•શ્રી• ઈશકાટલંડમાં•ગીઓ• તે•વખતે•તાંહાંનાં• લોક• ગરીબ•તથા•નરંમ• દેખાવા•લાગાં• તે•ઉપરથી• તે• હેવી•ઉમેદ•રાખતો•હતો• કે• હવે•ઈ•લોકો•શંઘલા•પોતાનાં તાબામાં• આવશે*પંણ• લોભ•રાખનારા•શખશોનો•શરવે•વીચાર• ફો

કટ•હોઈછે—અને•બીજાને•દુખ•દેઈને•પોતાની• મતલબ•કરવી•એ ઘણી•ખરાબ•ચીજછે*(ઈશકાટ•લોકોને•જીહીતેઆ•પછી•)એડવડ• ઘણાં•દીવશ•શુદી•જીવેઆ•નહી*તે• ,૧૩૦૭ નાં•વરશમાં•શ્રી•કારલાઈલ•શેહેરમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ*પંણ•ઈશકાચ•લોકો• ઉપર•એડવરડનું• હેવું તો• વેર•હતું•કે• તેણે•મરતી•વખતે• પોતાનાં•એડવરડ છોકરાને•કહ્યું•કે•ઈશકાચ•લોકોનું•બધું•રાજ•જીહીતીને•હાથમાં•આવેઆ•વીનાં• તે• લોકો•શંગાથે•લડાઈ•કરેઆજવી•પંણ• અટકવું•નહી*કોઈ•શખશ•હેવો•ખેઆલ•રાખીને•મરંણ•પાંમે•તેહેનું•શું•ભુડું•જીવતર*પંણ•અગારજો•આપણાં• જનમારામાં•આપંણ•ભુંડો• વીચાર•દેલમાં•રાખીએ તો•મરતી•વેલાએ•તે•જાએ•નહી•અને•તેઆરે• તે•આપંણને•ભુલાવો•આપેચ•અથવા•અનેઆએ• કીધાનો•પશતાવો• કરવાનું•દુખ•દીએ*

પંણ•વારતા•લખનારાઓ•પેહેલા•એડવરડનાં• જેહેવા•પાહાદશાની•ઘણી•વખાંણ•કરેછે*અને•એ•વાત•ખરીછે•કે•એ•પાહાદશા• શભાવે•બાહાદુર•હતો•એ•શારૂં•તેણે•લડાઈ•કરીને•પોતાનાં•દેશની• મોહોટાઈ•તથા•દરજો•અને•કીરતી•વધારી•પંણ•તેથી•રઈએતને•શુલેહે•શંપતમાં•તથા•ઉદીઓગમાં•રહાથી•રાજમાં• આબાદાંની•તથા•રઈએતને•શુખ•થોડુંજ•થાએછે*એટલા•શારું• જે•શખશજો• શભાવ•ઘાતકી•તથા•જુલંમગાર•હતો• તેહેનાં•શભાવને• આપંણ•શી તરેહે•વખાંણીએ ?

હેવું•કહેલુંછે•કે•એ•પાહાદશા•ઘણોજ•ખુબશુરત•હતો•અને તે•ઘણો•ઉનચો•હતો• પંણ• હેનાં•પગ•હેનાં• આંગ• પરમાંણે• નહી•હતા•ને•ઘણાંજ•લાંમબા•હતા*એ•શારૂં•હેને•લાંગશાંકશ•એટલે જે•લાંમબા•પગનો•એડવરડ•હેવો•ખેતાબ•મલેઓ•હતો*વાહ• પાહાદશા•થઈને•વલી•તેહેને•કેહેવો• ખેતાબ•મલેઓ*

હું•છું•તમારો•માઆલુ•બાપ*

શવાલો*

તરીજા•હેનરીની•પછે•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનો•પાહાદશા•કોણ•થઓ*
એડવરડનો•બાપ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તારે• તે•શાહાજાદો•કાંહાં•હતો*

એડવરડની•બાઈડીનું•નાંમ•શું*

એ•ઓરતનાં•પેસાર•વીશે•શું•દાખલો•કહેલોછે*

કીઆ•વરશમાં•એડવરડ•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો*

એડવરડ•બાહાદુર•તથા•લડેઆ•લાઈઅક•હતો• અથવા•તેથી•ઉલટો•હતો*

કીઉં•દેશ•લેવા•શારૂ•એડવરડએ•મેહેનત•કીધી*

શ્રી•વેલશ•દેશ•કાંહાંછે*

એડવરડએ•તે•દેશ•ઉપર•હોમલો•કીધો•તેની•આગમચ• તાંહાં•કોણ•રાજા•રાજ•કરતો•હતો*

એડવરડ•પાદશાહની•શ્રી•વેલશમાં•ફતેહ•પાંમેઆનો•કીઆ•લોકોએ•અટકાવ•કીધો*

તે•ગાવઈઆ•અથવા•કવેશરો•શંગાથે•એડવરડએ•શું•કીધું*

કેહેવી•હીકમતથી•એડવરડ•પાદશાહએ•પોતાનાં•છોકરાને•શ્રી•વેલશ•દેશનો•શાહાજાદો•ઠેડવેઓ*

વારૂ•એ•પરમાંણે•શ્રી•વેલશ•પરાંત•એડવરડને•તાબે•થઉં•તે•દીવશથી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•પાદશાહનાં•વડા•છોકરાને•કીઉં•નાંમ•મલેઉં*

તે•પછી•એડવરડએ•કીઆ•દેશનો•અખતીઆર•લેવા•શારૂ•મેહેનત•કરવા•માંડી*

તે•વખતે•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડમાં•શું•બનાવ•બનેઓ•હતો•કે•જેથી•એડવરડનાં•લોભી•વીચારને•જશ•મલે*

એડવરડએ•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડનો•રાજા•કોણને•ઠેડવેઓ*

શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડમાં•એડવરડની•શાંમને•કોંણ•થઉં*

શું•તાંહાં•કોઈ•મોહોટી•લડાઈ•થઈ*

તે•કાંહાં•થઈ*

કોણ•જીતેઉં*

પાદશાહએ•ઉલીઅંમ•વાલેશની•શાથે•શું•કીધું*

એમ•થઉં•તોએપંણ•ઈશકાટ•લોકો•પાદશાહની•શાથે•હટ•કરતા•હતા•કે•શું*

કોણનાં•હાથ•હેઠલ•રહીને•તેવો•લડતા•હતા*

તે•વેલાએ•કોંણને•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડનાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેશાડે•આ*
પેહેલો•એડવરડ•કાંહાં•મરંણ•પાંમે•આ*
કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમે•આ*
મરતી•વખતે•તેંણે•પોતાનાં•છોકરાને•શૂં•અરજ•કીધી*
એ•એડવરડની•શૂરત•કેહેવી•હતી*
તેહેનું•બીજું•શૂં•નાંમ•પડેલું•હતું*

LETTER XI.

MY DEAR BOY,

In my last letter I gave you some account of the life of Edward the First. We now come to Edward the Second. This young prince was twenty-three years of age when he began to reign. He was born, as I told you, at Caernarvon in Wales; and he has commonly been distinguished by the name of *Edward Caernarvon.* This young king was received with great joy by the people. He had a fine manly form, and a kind and gentle disposition. But something more than this is required to enable a king to govern a nation properly. It was soon found that he had neither abilities nor spirit enough to manage the great affairs of a kingdom.

His father, you remember, had told him, with his dying breath, never to be at peace till he had completely conquered the Scotch. This was indeed a barbarous request, especially for a dying man;—and we know, moreover, that a king who delights in peace is much wiser than one who would seek for war:—at the same time, if a king does go to war, he ought to do it with spirit, and as if he were determined to conquer.

Edward did indeed persevere in the war against the Scotch, but he managed it so ill, that he was completely beaten by Robert Bruce, king of Scotland, in the great battle of Bannockburn; and thus Edward lost all the power in Scotland that his fighting father had gained.

But, besides his bad success in war, his affairs at home seemed to be constantly going wrong. Instead of carefully considering in his own mind what was best for his people, or of consulting his parliament, or of taking the advice of wise and learned counsellors, he was always guided by some silly favourite, who had nothing to recommend him, but a pleasing outside appearance. At one time Piers Gaveston was the favourite, at another time Hugh Spencer. You may be sure that this would give great offence to all ranks of his subjects. And indeed it did so, for there were constant quarrels and disputes between this king and his people. In the days we are speaking of, the barons could arm their tenants and dependents, and bring them out against any of their neighbours, with whom they were at variance, and would often oppose even the king himself. Several of these nobles now joined their powers together, and raised a great army in opposition to the king. In one of their battles they took Gaveston prisoner, and cut off his head. Some time afterwards they took Spencer, and him they hanged. At length they made the king himself prisoner; and it would be a very long and very tedious story to tell you of all the cruel ways in which they abused and tormented him. He was confined in Berkeley Castle, where he was to be taken care of by lords Berkeley, Montravers, and Gournay, who were each to guard him a month at a time. Lord Berkeley was a tender-hearted man, and was disposed to treat him kindly; but the other two were prepared for every kind of cruelty. They wished, if they could, to break his heart by their savage treatment. Besides many other cruelties, they shaved him in the open fields, using the dirty water from a neighbouring ditch. This insult is said to have greatly affected the king, and he burst into tears, and said that the time might come when he should be better waited on. This, however, never happened; for when lord Berkeley was confined by sickness, the other two keepers went into the prison, and murdered the king in the most cruel manner. They tried to kill him in such a way that his body might show no marks of violence. But his shrieks rung through all Berkeley Castle, and thus the murder was discovered,—as murder generally is. Gournay was, some time afterwards, taken and beheaded; but Montravers lived to be tormented in his conscience for this foul deed. This murder was committed on the 21st of September, 1327.

> " Mark the year and mark the night,
> When Severn shall re-echo with affright:
> The shrieks of death through Berkeley's roof that ring—
> Shrieks of an agonizing king."—GREY.

You perhaps know, that Berkeley Castle is situated on the banks of the Severn, in Gloucestershire, and then you will very well understand these verses.

I hope you try to remember the dates which I mark for you; for if you do not remember your *chronology* (or the *time* when things happened), you are pretty sure to forget your *history*.

I am, &c.

QUESTIONS.

Who was king of England after the death of Edward the First?
How old was Edward the Second when he began to reign?
In what year did he come to the throne?
Where was he born?
What name was he called by?
What was his personal appearance?
What was his disposition?
Do you remember what was his father's dying request respecting Scotland?
Did Edward the Second act up to his father's desire on this point?
How did he succeed in his war against the Scots?
Who beat him?
In what battle?
Did his affairs at home go on well?
By whose advice was he chiefly guided?
Were the people offended at his weak conduct, and his attachment to unprincipled favourites?
Who were his chief favourites?
What became of them?
What happened to the king?
After the king was taken prisoner, where was he confined?
Who had the custody of him at Berkeley Castle?
How was he treated there?
Where is Berkeley Castle?
Near what river?
What particular acts of cruelty did they shew to the king?
Was the king ever released from this imprisonment?
What death did he die?
What became of his murderers?
In what year was this murder committed?

પતર•૧૧

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

માહારાં•પછવાડેનાં•પતરમાં• મેં•પેહેલા•ઈડવરડની•થોડીઈક વારતા•લખી•હતી*હવે•બીજા•ઈડવરડની•વારતા•કહું•છેઉં*ઈ•પાહાદશા•રાજ•કરવા•લાગો•તારે• તેવીશ•વરશનો•હતો*મેં•કહું•હતું•તેમ• હેનો•શ્રી• વેલશ• દેશમાં•શ્રી•કાઈઆરનારવંન•શેહેરમાં• જનંમ•થઓ•અને• તે•શારૂં•હેને•ઈડવરડ•કાઈઆરનારવંન•ઈમ• નાંમ• આપેઉં*ઈ•જવાંન•ધણીને• લોકોઈ• મોહોટી•ખુશીથી•પોતાનો•પાહાદશા કબુલ•કીધો*અને• હેની•આદમીનાં• જેવી•શારી•શૂરત• હતી•અને• તે•શભાવે•માઆલુ•તથા•નરંમ•હતો*પંણ•ઈ•ગુણથી• બીજુંબી• કાંઇ•વધારે•જોઇઈયે•કે•જેથી•રાજનો•કારભાર•પાહાદશા•શારીપેઠે ચલાવે*અને• થોડા•દીવશમાં• હેવું•માલંમ•પડેઉં•કે•તે•હેને•પાહાદશાઇનો•કારભાર•ચલાવવાની•કુદરત•તથા•હીમત•નહી•હતી*

તમને•ઇઆદ•હશે•જે•હેનાં•બાપે•મરતી•વખતે• હેને•કહું• હતું•કે•ઇશકાચ• લોકોને•બીલકુલ•જીહીતી•લીધા•વીનાં•તેવો•શાથે• શૂલેહ•કરવી•નહી*મરતી•વખતે• હેવું•કેહેવું•ઈ•તદંન•નીરદઆની ચાલ•અને• હેવું છે• કે• જે•પાહાદશાને•લડાઈ•ગાંમે છે• તે•પાહાદશા• કરતાં• પોતાનાં•રાજમાં•શારીપેઠે•શૂલેહથી• રેહેવું•હેવું•જેહેને• ગાંમતું• હોઈ• તે•ઘણો• શેઆંણો• હોઈછે• અને• જો•પાહાદશા• લડાઇ કરવા• જાઈતો•જીહીતવાનો•ઈરાદો•રાખીને• તેહેને• હીંમતથી•લડાઇ કરવી• જોઇઈ*

ઈ•પાહાદશાઈ•ઇશકાચ• લોકોની•શાથે•લડાઇ• કરવા•માંડી• પંણ• તે• હેવાં• ખોટી•રીતે•કીધી•કે•શ્રી•બાનાકબરંન• આગલ•જે• મોહોટી•લડાઈ•થઇ• તે•લડાઇમાં•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડનાં•રાબરટ•બરૂશ•રાજાઈ•ઈડવરડ•પાહાદશાને•તદંન•હરાવી•નાંખેઓ•અને•ઈ•પરમાંણે•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડમાં•જે•અખતીઆર• હેનાં•બાપે•લડાઇ•કરીને• મેલવેઓ•હતો• તે•શરવ•બીજા•ઈડવરડઈ• ખોઈઓ*

ઈ•પરમાંણે•લડાઇમાં•હારેઓ• તે•વીનાં•હેનાં• પોતાનાં• દેશમાં•પણ•કારભાર•ઠીક•ચાલેઓ•નહી* પોતાની•રઇઈતનાં•હકમાં•શારૂશૂં છે• તે• પોતાનાં• દેલમાં•વીચારેઆને•બદલે•અને•પારલીઈમેનટની•

થતાં• શેઆંણાં• તથા• દાંનાવ• પરધાંનોની• શલાહ• લીધાને• બદલે• હરેક• જવાંન• ખુબ• સુરત• શખશ• હોઈ• તેહેની•શલાહ• પરમાંણે• પાહદશા• ચાલતા• હતા*કોઈ• વેલાઈ• પીરશ• ગાવેશટંન• (પાહદશાનો•) માંનીતો• થાઓ• અને• બીજી• કોઈ• વેલાઈ• હીઊ•ઈશ પેનશર•માંનીતો• થાઓ• હતો*તમે• ખચીત• કરીને• જાંણજો• જે• હેને• લીધે•રાજમાં•શરવ•પરકારનાં• લોકોને• ઘણુંજ• માઠુ• લાગુ*અને• નીશચે• હેવુંજ• હતું• કાંઈકે• પાહદશાની• તથા• લોકોની• વચે• ઘડી• ઘડી• કજીઆ• ટંટા• થાવા લાગા*જે• વખતની• આપણ• વાત• કહીઈચ• તેહેવા• વખતમાં• જારે• ઈક ઉમરાવને• પોતાની• પાશેનાં• બીજા• ઉમરાઓ• શાથે• કજીઆ• થાઈ• તારે• તે• પોતાનાં• જાગીરદાર• ભાડુતો• તથા• માંણશોને• હથીઆર• બંધાવીને• પોતાનાં• પરોશીઓની• શાથે• લડાઈ• કરે• અને• ઘણી• વેલા• પાહદશાની• બી•શાંમને• થાઈ*હેવા•કેટલાઈક• ઉમરાઓઈ• ઈકશંપ• થાઈને•ઈક• મોહોટી• ફોજ•ઈકઠી•કીધી• અને• પાહદશાની• શાંમને• લડાઈ•કરવા• લાગા*ઈક• લડાઈમાં• તેવોઈ• ગાવેશટંનને• પકડીને• તેહેને• ગરદંન• મારેઓ*કાંઈક• દીવશ• પછે• તેવોઈ• ઈશ પેનશરને• પકડીને• ફાંશી• દીધો*અને•અંતે• તેવોઈ• પાહદશાને• પંણ• કેદ• કીધો• પછી• તેવોઈ• તે• પાહદશાને• ઘણી• પરકારનાં• દુખ• દેઈને• તેહેને• બેઆબરૂ• કીધો• તે•હીઆં• હું• તમને• કહું• તો• ઘણુંજ• લબાંણ•થાઈ* (તે• ઉમરાઓઈ•) તેહેને• બરકલીનાં• કીલામાં• કેદ• કીધો• હતો• અને• તાંહાં લારડ• બરકલી• તથા•લારડ• મોનતરેવરશ• તથા• લારડ• ગાઊરને• ઈવોને• હરેકને• ઈક• મહીનો•શૂધી• પાહદશાની• ચોકી• કરવા• શારૂં•રાખેઆ• હતા*લારડ• બરકલીનાં• દેલમાં•દઆ• હતી• ઈટલા•શારૂ• તે• પાહદશા• ઉપર• મેહેરબાંની•રાખીને• તેહેનો• શંભાલ• કરતો• હતો• પણ• બીજા• બે• શખશો• તા• તેહેને•ઘણી•પરકારનાં•દુખ•દેતા• હતા* તેહેને• દુખ• દીધાથી• તેવોઈ• તેહેને• મારી• નાંખવાની• ઉમેદ•રાખી* તેવોઈ• પાહદશા• ઉપર• ઘણી• પરકારની• શખતી•કીધી• તેહેમાં• તેવોઈ• ઈક• દીવશે• પાશેની• ચરનુ• મેલુ• પાંણી• મંગાવીને• તેથી• ઈક•ઉઘાડાં મેદાંનમાં• પાહદશાની• હજાંમત• કરાવી* ઈ• અપમાંનથી• તે• પાહદશાને• હેવી• દેલગીરી• ઉપજી• કે• તે• આંખમાંથી• આંશૂ• પારવા• લાગો• અ

ને• તે•વખતે•કહું•કે•માહારો•શારો•દીવશ•આવશે• તે•વખતે•માહારી• શારી•શેવા•ચાકરી•થાશે*પંણ• તે•દીવશ•કાંઈ•આવેઓ•નહી• કાંઈકે• લારડ•બરકલી•જેવારે•આજારી•પડેઓ•તેવારે• તે•બીજા•બે રખેવાલો•બંદીખાનાંમાં• ગીઆ•અને•તેવોઈ• ઘાતકી• પણાંથી• પાહાદશાને•મારી•નાંખેઓ*પાહાદશાનાં•આંગઉપર•કાંઈ•ઘા•દેખાઈ•નહી હેવી•રીતે• તેહેને•મારવાને•વાશતે• તેવોઈ•તજવીજ•કીધી•હતી*પંણ•મરતી•વખતે•પાહાદશાઈ•જે• મોહોટી•ચીચીઆરી•પાડી•તે•આખા•બરકલીનાં•કીલામાં•શંભલાઈ• તેથી• તે•ખુન•કે• જે•પકરાઆ•વીનાં• રેહેતુ•નથી• તે•માલંમ•પડેઉં*તે•પછી•તે•ગઉરને•કાંઈકે•દીવશે•પકડીને• તેહેને•ગારદંન•મારેઓ• પંણ• મોનતરેવરશ•હાથ• આઓ•નહી•ને•જાંહાં•શુધીકે• તે•જીવતો•રહેઓ• તાંહાં•શુધી•ઈ•નરશ કાંમનો• પોતાનાં• દેલમાં•પશતાવો•કરેઆ•કીધો* બીજો•ઈડવરડ•પાહાદશા• ૧૩૨૭ નાં•વરશમાં•શપટેમબર•મહીનાંની• ૨૧ મી•તારીખે•મારેઓ•ગીઓ*

ગારે•કવેશરનાં• કહેલાં•કવેતા*

“જો•ઈઆદ•રાખ• તે•વરશ•અને• તે•રાત•
કે•જેવારે• શેવરન•નદીમાંથી•બીહીકણો•આવાજ •નીકલશે•
અને•બરકલી•કીલા•માંહેથી•ખુંનનો• જે• પોકાર•નીકલશે•
તે•ઈક•દુખી•પાહાદશાની•ચીચીઆરીનો•આવાજછે*”

કદાચ•તમો•જાંણતા•હશો કે•બરકલીનો•કીલો•શ્રી•ગલાશટર•શીઅરનાં•પરાંતમાં• શેવરન•નદીનાં•કીનારા•ઉપર•બાંધેલોછે—કેવું•જાંણશો• તેવારે•તમો•ઈ•બેતોને•શારીપેઠે•શંમજશો*

હું•આશા•રાખુચ•કે•હું•જે• જે•તારીખો•તથા• શને•તમને•લખી• મોકલુચ• તે•તમો•ઈઆદ•રાખવાને•શારૂ• મેહેનત • લેશો–કાંઈકે જો•તમો•તવારીખ• (ઈટલે જે•બીના•થાઈ•તેહેનાં• વખતનો•શને•અથવા•તારીખ•) ઈઆદ•નહી•રાખશો• તો•તમે•શઘલી•વારતા•નીશચે વીશરી•જશો*

શવાલો*

પેહેલો•એડવરડ•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•પછી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનો•પાહાદશા•કોણ•થાઓ*

બીજો•એડવરડ•રાજ•કરવા•લાગો•તારે•તે•કેટલા•વરશનો•હતો*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો*

તેહેનો•જનંમ•કાંહાં•થઓ*

તેહેને•શૂં•નાંમ•મલેઉં•હતું*

તેહેની•શૂરત•કેહેવી•હતી*

તેહેનો•શભાવ•કેહેવો•હતો*

તેહેનાં•બાપે•મરતી•વખતે•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડ•વીશે•તેહેને•શૂં•કહું•હતુ•તેની•તમોને•ઈઆદ•છે*

એ•બાબતમાં•બીજા•એડવરડે•પોતાનાં•બાપનાં•કહા•પરમાંણે•કીધું•શૂં*

તેણે•ઈશકાચ•લોકોની•શાથે•લડાઈ•કીધી•તેહેમાં•તે•કેહેવી•રીતે•જએ•પાંમેઓ*

તેહેને•કોણે•હરાવેઓ*

કેઈ•લડાઈમાં*

હેનાં•પોતાનાં•દેશમાં•કારભાર•શારી•પેઠે•ચાલેઓ•કે•નહી*

એ•ઘણું•કરીને•કોણની•શલાહ•પરમાંણે•ચાલતો•હતો*

હેની•નાદાંની•ચાલથી•તથા•હેનાં•નરશાં•માંણશો•ઉપર•પેઆર•રાખેઆથી•લોકો•નારાજી•થાએઆ•હતા•કે•નહી*

કોણ•કોણ•શખશો•હેનાં•ઘણાંજ•માંનીતા•હતા*

તેવોની•શૂં•અવશતા•થઈ*

વારુ•પાહાદશાને•શૂં•બનાવ•થઓ*

પાહાદશાને•કેદ•કરીને•કાંહાં•રાખેઓ•હતો*

તેહેને•બરકલીનાં•કીલામાં•રાખેઓ•હતો•તારે•તેહેની•રખેવાલી•કરવા•શારુ•કોણ•કોણને•રાખેઆ•હતા*

એ•પાહાદશાને•કેહેવી•રીતે•રાખેઓ•હતો*

બરકલીનો•કીલો•કાંહાં•છે*

કેદ• નદી• પાશે છે*
તે• રખેવાલોકે• પાદશાની• ઉપર• શું શું• શખતી• કીધી*
પાદશા• કેદમાંથી• કદી• છુટો• ઈઆ• નહી*
તે• કેમ• મરંણ• પાંમેઆ*
તે• ખુન• કરનારાઓનુ• શું• થઉં*
કે• ખુન• કીઆ• વરશામાં• થઉં*

LETTER XII.

MY DEAR BOY,

I have already given you a short history of Edward the First, and Edward the Second; we must now, therefore, turn our attention to Edward the Third. This prince was only fourteen years old when he came to the throne; and his wicked mother, aud her favourite Mortimer, endeavoured to keep all power from him, and to manage every thing themselves. Edward, however, would not long submit to this, and he therefore attacked the queen and her lover in Nottingham Castle, and seized them both. Mortimer was condemned by the parliament, and hanged. The queen was confined for life to the Castle of Risings, with a pension of three hundred a-year. The king every year paid her a visit of ceremony, but she was never respected by any one during the rest of her life, which continued about twenty-five years.

Edward the Third was an ambitious and a brave king. He set about conquering Scotland, which his father had lost; and, in one of his battles, at Halledown-hill, he is said to have left thirty thousand of the Scotch dead on the field.

He likewise attempted to get the kingdom of France into his power, and he pretended, that, through his mother, he was the rightful heir to the throne. He accordingly went over to France to endeavour to make a conquest of that kingdom. You have, perhaps, heard of the great battle of *Cressy*. This great battle was fought by Edward the Third, or, I may rather say, by his son, Edward the Black Prince, for the king did not actually engage in the battle, but took his station on a hill at some little distance, with a body of men, in case his help should be wanted. It is said, that, in this battle, the English had only thirty thousand men, whilst the French had a hundred and twenty thousand. The English had indeed the advantage of position, and it is said, besides, that the sun shone in the faces of the French and dazzled their eyes; and, moreover, that there had been a shower of rain which relaxed the bow strings of the French, whilst the English, to prevent this, had kept *their* bows in cases. I do not know how all this might be, but it is certain that the English gave the French a complete beating. I mentioned the king's son Edward, the *Black Prince.* He is supposed to have been called the *Black* Prince, because he generally wore black armour. If you were ever to go to Windsor Castle, you might see the very armour which this prince wore. There was one part of the battle of Cressy, when the young prince was fighting so desperately, and rushing into such great dangers, that some of his officers thought he must be cut to pieces, and that he was in need of help; they, accordingly, went up to the king, and begged him to come to the assistance of the prince. The old king saw plainly that his son was winning the battle, and he, therefore, refused to come. "Tell the prince," he said, "that the honour of this day shall be all his own." This speech added such courage to young Edward, and to the soldiers, that they quickly carried all before them, and gained a most complete victory.

Soon after this, Edward besieged *Calais.* You know where Calais is. It is the town where you land, in France, when you cross the sea from Dover. Edward was very anxious to get possession of Calais, that he might have a place in France where he could land his men, and thus might with more ease conquer the country. He accordingly surrounded Calais with his army; but the brave citizens made a long and bold defence. For a whole year, all the attempts of Edward to take the town were vain. The citizens, during this time, were suffering dreadful hardships for want of food, and it was indeed hunger alone that obliged them to surrender at last. When they did submit, Edward was so angry with them for holding out so long, that he at first threatened to put every one of them to death. He was, however, afterwards, content with having six of the principal citizens brought out to execution with halters about their necks. These brave men would every one of them have been hanged, (for nothing but their good and brave conduct,) had not the queen of England herself fallen on her knees before the king, and entreated him to pardon them. The king listened to the mild entreaties of queen Philippa, and set these excellent citizens at liberty.

Whilst Edward was in France, the Scotch, taking advantage of his absence, made an attempt to invade England with a large army, commanded by their king, David Bruce. This was at a time when the queen, whom we have mentioned before, was in England; and she, without delay, set off herself with an army to oppose them; she met them at Neville's Cross, near Durham; she attacked them, won the battle, and took the king of Scotland himself prisoner.

The Black Prince shortly afterwards fought another great battle in France, the famous battle of *Poictiers;* here he took John, king of France, prisoner: so that there were two kings, at the same time, prisoners in England.

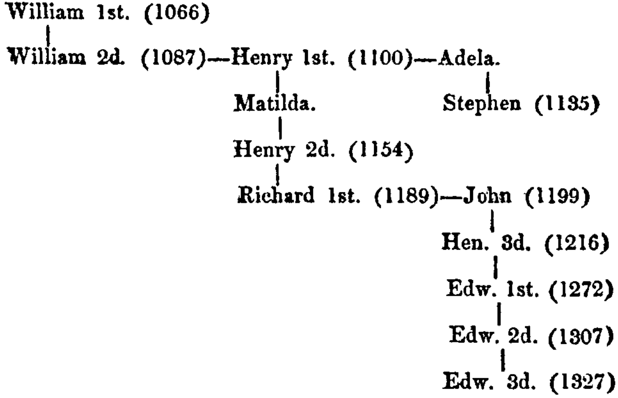
Thus you see that the reign of Edward the Third is what is called a glorious one, and has brought great honour to the name of England.

But warlike glory will not give happiness, nor ward off afflictions. The Black Prince, you may be sure, was the joy of his father, and the delight of the nation ; but his race of glory was soon run; his health began to fail him; and he was wasting away by a consumption. During this time, the possessions which had been gained in France were lost, both for want of a supply of men from England, and on account of the prince's illness, which prevented him from carrying on the war with his usual spirit. Soon after this, the prince died, to the great grief of his father and of all the English people. The poor king, they say, never looked up again. He could not go on with public business, but gave it all up, and left the cares of the state to a set of people who conducted matters in a miserable manner, and laid aside all reverence for their king. He died at Shene, (now called Richmond,) in Surrey, deserted by all his courtiers, and by those who had grown rich in his service.

> "Mighty victor, mighty lord!
> Low on his funeral couch he lies:
> No pitying heart, no eye afford
> A tear to grace his obsequies."—Gray.

He died in the year 1377, after a long reign of fifty years. There are very few kings who have reigned so long. I have mentioned them before to you. I hope you take my advice, and try to remember the dates: I suppose you make a sort of table of kings, according to the plan that I mentioned to you before. You can write the dates against every one of them, as I have done below. There is a little boy, a friend of yours, who knows every king of England, and every date, and can write them all down. His little sister can do so too; and I expect that you will be able to do the same.

I am your affectionate father.



Character of Edward III. (as given by Smollett.)

"Edward's constitution had been injured by the fatigues of his youth; so that he began to feel the infirmities of old age before the usual time; and, now, he was seized with a malignant fever, attended with eruptions, that soon put a period to his life. When his distemper became so violent that no hope of his recovery remained, all his attendants forsook him, as a bankrupt no longer able to requite their services. He was left without one domestic to close his eyes, and do the last offices to his breathless corpse. In this deplorable condition, bereft of comfort and assistance, the mighty Edward lay expiring; when a priest, not quite so savage as the rest of his domestics, approached his bed; and, finding him still breathing, began to administer some comfort to his soul. Edward had not yet lost all perception, when he found himself thus abandoned and forlorn in the last moments of his life. He was just able to express a deep sense of sorrow and contrition for the errors of his conduct, and died pronouncing the name of Jesus.

"Such was the end of Edward the Third, undoubtedly one of the greatest princes that ever swayed the sceptre of England; whether we respect him as a warrior, a law-giver, a monarch, or a man. * * * * He was tall, majestic, finely shaped, with a piercing eye, and aquiline visage. He excelled all the people of his time in feats of arms, and personal address. He was courteous, affable, and eloquent, of a free deportment, and agreeable conversation, and had the art of commanding the affections of his subjects without seeming to solicit popularity. The love of glory was certainly the ruling passion of Edward; for the sake of which he did not scruple to sacrifice the feelings of humanity, the lives of his subjects, and the interests of his country. And nothing could have induced or enabled his people to bear the load of taxes with which they were encumbered in his reign, but the love and admiration of his person, the fame of his victories, and the excellent laws and regulations which the parliament enacted with his advice and concurrence."

QUESTIONS.

In what year did Edward the Third begin to reign?
What age was he when he came to the throne?
Who endeavoured to keep the power out the hands of the young king?
Where did the king seize upon the queen mother and Mortimer?
What became of Mortimer?
What of the queen?
What was the disposition of Edward the Third?
What kingdom did he attempt to conquer?

Did he fight a great battle against the Scotch?
What battle? and who conquered?
What nation did he next attempt to conquer?
What great battle did he fight in France?
Was the king's son in this battle?
What was the young prince called?
Can you relate any of the particulars of the battle of Cressy?
What town in France did Edward besiege?
In what part of France does Calais lie?
How long was it before Calais surrendered?
How did Edward treat the citizens of Calais after their surrender?
When king Edward was in France, did the Scots attempt to invade England?
Who commanded them?
Do you remember the particulars of the battle of Neville's Cross?
Who was taken prisoner?
What other great battle did the Black Prince fight in France?
Who was taken prisoner?
Did the Black Prince ever live to be king?
How did the king bear the loss of his son?
How was he treated by his courtiers when oppressed with age and infirmities?
In what year did Edward the Third die?
How long had he reigned?
Can you make a table of English kings from William the Conqueror to Edward the Third, with the dates of the years when they began to reign?

પતર· ૧૨

માહારા· પેઆરા· છોકરા·

(માહારાં·પછવાડેનાં·પતરમાં·) પેહેલા·તથા·બીજા·એડવરડની·વારતા· મેં ·તમને·ટુકમાં·કહી·હતી· હવે·તરીજા· એડવરડની·વારતા·કહું·છેઉં* એ·એડવરડ·પાહાદશા·તખત·ઉપર·બેઠો·તારે· તે·ચઉદ·વરશનો·હતો — તે·શમે·હેની·જુડી·માએ·તથા· તેહેનો·ઇઆર મારટીમર·એ·બેહું·જણાંએ·શઘલો·અખતીઆર·એડવરડનાં·હાથમાં નહી·રાખેઆ·ને· પોતેજ·શઘલો·કારભાર·ચલાવા·લાગાં* પણ·એડવરડથી·ઘણું·શુધી· તે·ખમાઉં·નહીં·માટે·રાણી· (એટલે·જે·એડવરડની·માએ·) તથા· તેહેનો·ઇઆર·બે·જે·નાટીંગમનાં·કીલામાં· હતાં·તાંહાં·એડવરડે·ઘેરો·ઘાલીને·તે·બંનેને·પકડેઆં* તે·શમે·મારટીમરને· પારલેમેનટની·શભાએ·ગુનેગાર· ઠરાવીને· તેહેને·ફાંશી·

દીધો*અને•એડવરડની•માએને•રાઇજંગાશાનાં•કીલામાં•જીવે•તાંહાંસુધી•કેદ•રાખી•અને•તેહેને•દર•વરશે•તરંણશો•પાંઉંડનો•બેઠો•મુશારો•આપવાનુ•ઠેડવેઉં*એડવરડ•નાંમને•વાશતે•સંમશથો•હર•વરશ•તેહેને•મળવાને•જાતો•હતો•તોપંણ•રાંણી•પચીશ•વરશ•જીવી•તાંહાંસુધી•તેહેને•કોઇએ•આબરૂ•આપી•નહી*

તરીજો•એડવરડ•લોભી•તથા•બાહાદુર•પાહાદશા•હતો*હેનાં•બાપે•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડ•દેશ•ખોઉં•હતું• તે•જીતી•લેવાને•વાશતે•એણે•મેહેનત•કરવા•માંડી•અને•એણે•હાલીડઉંન•ડુંગારની•પાશે•જે•લડાઇ•કીધી•તે•લડાઇમાં•તીશ•હજાર•ઇશકાટ•લોકો•એણે•મારેઆં•એમ•કેહે છે*

એણે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશનુ•રાજખી•પોતાનાં•તાબામાં•કરી•લેવા•શારૂં•મેહેનત•કરવા•માંડી•અને•તેણે•હેવું•બાહાંનું•કાહાડેઉં•કે•પોતાની•માએની•શગાઇથી•પોતે•તે•રાજનો•ખરો•વારશ છે*માટે•એડવરડ•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•તે•રાજ•જીતી•લેવાને•વાશતે•ગીઓ*કદાચ•તમે•શ્રી•કરેશીની•મોહોટી•લડાઇ•વીશે•શાંભલેઉં•હશે*શ્રી•કરેશીની•મોહોટી•લડાઇમાં•તરીજો•એડવરડ•અથવા•પોતાનો•છોકરો•એડવરડ•“બલાક•પરીનશ•”પોતે•મુખીઆ•શરદાર•હતો•કાંએકે•પાહાદશા•પોતે•એ•લડાઇમાં•શાંમેલ•નહી•થઆ•અને•લડાઇનાં•મેદાંનથી•થોડો•દુર•એક•ડુંગાર•ઉપર•એક•ટાલુ•લેઇને•ઉભો•રહેા•હતો•એટલા•વાશતે•જે• (લડાઇ•કરતી•વખતે•પોતાનાં•છોકરાને•) મદત•આપવી•જરૂર•પડે તો•પોતે•મદત•કરે* હેવું•કેહે છે•કે•એ•લડાઇમાં•ઇગલીશ•લોકોની•પાશે•તીશ•હજાર•માતરે•માંણશો•હતાં•અને•ફરેચ•લોકોની•પાશે•એક•લાખ•વીશ•હજાર•આદમી•હતાં*ઇગલીશ•લોકોને• (લડાઇ•કરવાને•)શારી•જગો•મલી•હતી•અને•તે•શવાએ•ફરેચ•લોકોની•શાંમને•શૂરજનુ•તડકુ•પડતુ•હતું•તેથી•તેવોની•આંખે•શારી•પેઠે•જોવાઇ•શકાઉં•નહી•ને•વલી•વરશાદનુ•એક•ઝાપટુ•આઉં•તેથી•તેવોની•કમાંનોની•દોરી•ભીંગાઇને•ઢીલી•થઇ•ગોઇ•હતી•અને•ઇંગલીશ•લોકોએ•પોતાની•કમાંનોને•મીઆંનમાં•રાખેલી•હતી*હું•જાંણતો•નથી•કે•એ•વાત•શીતરેહે•થાએ•પંણ•એટલુ•

નીશ્ચેછે• કે• તે•વખતે• ઈંગલીશ• લોકોએ•ફ્રેચ• લોકોને•બીલકુલ•હરાવેઆં*પાહ્દશાનાં• છોકરા•એડવરડ•બલાક•પરીનશનુ• મેં•અગાઉ નાંમ•લીખુચ*હવે•હેવુ•ધારેઆમાં•આવેચ•કે•એ•છોકરો•ઘણું•કરીને•કાલુ•બખતર• પેહેરતો•હતો•એટલા•શારૂં•હેને•બલાક•પરીનશ•એટલેજે•કાલો•શાહજાદો•કરી•કેહેતા•હતા* અગારજો•તમો•વીંડશરનાં•કીલામાં•જશોતો•એ•શાહ•જાદો• જે•બખતર• પેહેરતો•હતો•તેજ•બખતર•તમો•જોશો*એ•કરેશીની•લડાઈમાં• એક•વખતે•એમઉં•કે•તે•શાહજાદો•ઘણીજ•હીમતથી•લડતો•હતો•અને• હેવા•લારે•જોખંમમાં•પડતો•હતો•કે•હેનાં•કેટલાએક•શરદારોએ•ધારેઉં•કે•એ•તરતજ•કપાઈને•કકડા•થઈ•જશે•માંટે•હેને•મદત•કરવાની•અગાત છે•તેટલા•શારૂં•તે•શરદારોએ•પાહ્દશાહ•પાશે•જઈને•અરજ•કીધી•કે•તમારે•શાહજાદાની•મદત•કરવી•જોઈએ*પંણ•પાહ્દશાને•શાફ•નજર•આવેઉં•કે• પોતાનો• છોકરો•લડાઈ• જીતતો•જાએછે•એટલા•શારુ• પોતે• તેહેની•મદતને•નહી•ગીઓ*અને•કહું•“કે•શાહજાદાને•(માહારી•તરફથી•) જાહેર•કરો•કે•આજ•જે•ફતેહ•મળશે•તેહેની•શઘળી•કીરતી•તમને છે*” હેવું•નારાંણ•શાંભલેઆચી•શાહજાદાને•તથા•તેહેનાં•શીપાઈઓને• હેવુતો• જોર•આવેઉં•કે• તેવોએ•તુરત•શતરૂને•તદંન•જીતી•લીધો•ને•ફતેહ•પાંમેઆ*

એ•પછી•તરતજ•પાહ્દશાએ•શ્રી•કેલેશ• શેહેર•ઉપર•ઘેરો•ઘાલેઓ*કેલેશ• કાંહાંછે•એ તો•તમો•જાંણોછો*શ્રી•ડોવરથી•વાંહાંણમાં•બેશીને•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં• જાંહાં•ઉતરેછે• તે•શેહેર• કેલેશછે*એડવરડ•પાહ્દશા•શ્રી•કેલેશ•લેવાને•ઘણોજ• આહાતો• હતો•એટલાશારૂ•જે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ• દેશમાં• પોતાની•ફોજ•ઉતારવાને•વાશતે•એક•જગા• પોતાની•પાશે•હોએ•અને•તેણે•કરીને• તે• દેશ• શેહેલાઈથી•જીતી•લીએ*એટલાશારૂ•પાહ્દશાએ•શ્રી•કેલેશ•શેહેરને•પોતાની•ફોજથી• ઘેરીલીધું• પણ•તે•શેહેરનાં• બાહાદુર• લોકોએ•ઘણુંશુધી• મોહોટી•બાહાદુરીથી• પોતાનો•બંચાવ•કીધો*આખુ•એક• વરશશુધી•એડવરડે•તે•શેહેર• લેવાની•તજવીજ•કીધી•પણ• ફોકટ*જાંહાંશુધી•કે• તેજ•લોકો•ખોરાકની• ખુટથી•મરવા•લાગાં•અને•ભુખ

થી• (પરાંણ•બંધાવાને•શારૂં•)અંતે• તેવોઈ• પોતાનુ•શેહેર• આપી•દીધુ*જેવારે•કે•તેવો•તાબેદાર•થાઆ•તેવારે• તેવોઈ•ઈટલા•દીવશ•સુધી લડાઈ•કીધી•ઈટલા•શારૂ•ઈડવરડને•તેવો•ઉપર•હેવીતો•રીશ•ચહ્ડી•કે તેણે•પેહેલાંતો• તે•શરવેને•મારી•નાંખવાનો• હોકંમ•કીદો* પણ• ત્યારપછી• તે•શેહેરનાં•શરવ•લોકો•માંહેથી• મુખીઆ•છ•જણાંનાં•ગળામાં• દોરડુ•નાંખીને• તેવોને•ફાંશી•દેવારેઆથી•શંતોશ•થાઆ*ઈ• જોરાવર• આદમીઓ•પોતાનો•શંભાલ•કરતા• શારુ•બાહાદુરીથી•શારી•રીતે•લડતા•હતા•ઈટલા•શારૂ• તેવોને•ફાંશી• દીધા• હોતે•પંણ• શ્રી•ઈંગલંડની•રાંણીઈ• પોતે•પાહાદશાને•પગે•લાગીને• તે•લોકોને• શારૂ•માંફ•માંગી•લીધી* પાહાદશાઈ•ફીલીપપા•રાંણીની•દઆની•વીનતી•શાંભલીને•ઈ•શારા•પુરશોને•છોડી•મુકેઆ*

ઈડવરડ•પાહાદશા•શ્રી•ફરાંશ• દેશમાં•હતો•માંટે• તેહેની•ગેર•હાજરી•જોઈને•ડેવીડ•બરુશ• મોહોટી•ઈશકાચ• લોકોની• ફોજ• લેઈને•શ્રી• ઈંગલંડ• ઉપર• હોમલો•કીદો*તે•વખતે•રાંણી•મચકુર• શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાં•હતી•માંટે•તે•કશી•રીતની• ઢીલ•નહી•લગાડતાં• પોતે ફોજ•લેઈને•તે•લોકોની•શાંમણે•થાવા•ગેઈ• ને•શ્રી•ડરાંમની•પાશે• નીવીલનાં• કરુશ•આગલ• તેવોની• ફોજ• રાંણીને•મલી• તેવારે•રાંણીઈ• તે• ફોજ•ઉપર• હોમલો•કીધો•અને•રાંણી• પોતે•ફતેહ•પાંમી• અને•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડનાં•રાજાને• કેદ•કરી•લેઈ•ગેઈ*

તે•પછી•તરતજ•કાલા•શાહાજાદાઈ•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•ઈક• ઘણી મોહોટી•લડાઈ•કીધી• કે• જેહેને• પોઈટીઅરશની•નાંમીચી•લડાઈ•કેહે છે — તે•લડાઈમાં• તેણે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશનાં•જાંન• પાહાદશાને• કેદ• કરી•લીદો•માંટે•ઈમ•થઉં•કે•બે•પાહાદશા•ઈકજ• વેલાઈ•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાં•શાથે•બંદીખાંને• પડેઆ•હતા*

ઈ•પરમાંણે•તમે• જોવો• કે•તરીજા•ઈડવરડની•પાહાદશાઈને• મોહોટી•વખાંણોઆ• જોગ•કરી• કેહે છે•અને•ઈથી•શ્રી• ઈંગલંડ• દેશની• આબરુ• તથા•નાંમ• ઘણું•વદેઉં*

પંણ•લડાઈમાં•કીરતી• અથવા• નાંમ• મેલવેઆથી• સુખ•મલનાર•નથી•અને•દુખ•પંણ• દુર•થનાર•નથી*ઈ•કાલા•શાહાજાદા•ઉપર

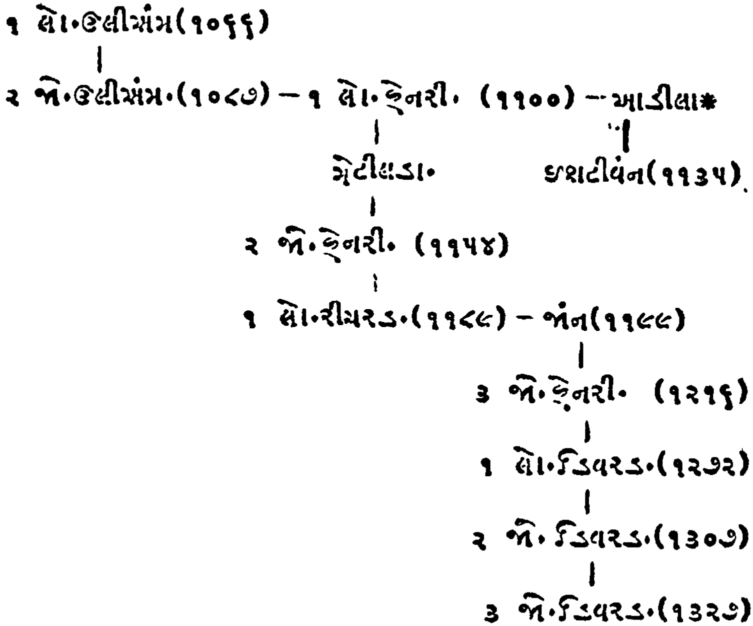
હેનો•બાપ•પણોજ•કુરબાંન•થતો• હતો•અને• રાજનાં•લોકોને•ઘણી•ખુશાલી•ઉપજતી•હતી — પંણ•હેની•કીરતી•પુરી•થાઈ•ચુકી•હતી•કાંઈ•કે•હેની•તબીઅત•બીગારી•અને•હેને• દમનો•રોગ•થ્યો•હતો•તેથી•એ• લેવાઈ•ગીઓ* એટલામાં•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનાં•પાદશાએ•નવી• ફોજ•શ્રી•ફરાંશમાં• મોકલી•નહી• અને•શાહજાદાનાં• દુખે•કરીને•હમેશાં•પરમાંણે•શારી• પેઠે•લડાઈ• થઈ•શકી• નહી•વાશતે•તે•તાબેકીધેલો•શરવે•મુલક•હાથમાંથી•ગીઓ* તેપછી•એ•શાહજાદો•વેહેલોજ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ• તેથી•પાદશાને•તથા•શઘલા•ઇંગલીશ• લોકોને•ઘણુંજ• દુખથઉં* તેવો•કેહે છેજે•એ•બીચારા• પાદશા(જે• પોતાનાં• છોકરાનુ•હેવું તો• દુખલાગુંકે•) તેણે• તે•દીવશથી•કદી•ઉંનચું જોઉજ• નહી* તે હેનાંથી•રાજનો•કારભાર• ચલાઈ•શકાઓ•નહી•માંટે• તે•શઘલું•તજી•બેઠો•ને•કેટલાએક•લોકોને• પોતાનાં •રાજનો કારભાર•શોંપેઓ• તેથી• તેવોએ•એ•કારભાર•ઘણી•નરશી• રીતે•ચલાવેઓ•અને•પાદશાને•કાંઈ•માંન•આપેઉં•નહીં*શ્રી•શરી•પરાંતમાં•શીન• શેહેર•છે•(કે• જેહેને•હવડાં•રીચમંડ•કરી• કેહે છે•)તાંહાં•પાદશા•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ• તે•વખતે• હેનાં•જે•દરબારી• લોક•અને• હેની•ચાકરી•કરીને• જે• દોલતવાન•થઆ•હતા• તેવો•માંહેથી•કોઈએક•પણ• હેની•પાશે•રહો•નહીહતો*

> “મોહોટો•ફતેહમંદ•અને•શકતી•વાલો•પાદશા
> આએ•દફનાવાનાં•બીછાંણાં•ઉપર•શૂતેલો છે
> કોઈ •દઆલુ• દેલનો• ઘણી• અથવા•કોઈ• પોતાંની• આંખ•માહેથી•
> હેને•દફનાવતી•વખતે•એક•આંશૂં બી•પાડતો નથી*”
>
> ગારે• (કવેશર*)

એ• ૧૩૭૭ નાં•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•અને•એણે•છેક•પચાશ•વરશ•શૂધી•પાદશાઈ•કીધી* હેવા•થોડાજ•પાદશાવો•હશે•કે•જેવોએ•હેની• માફક•ઘણાં•વરશ• શૂધી•રાજ•કીધું* તેવોનાં•નાંમ• મેં •તમને•આગલ•કહેલાં છે* હું•આશારાખુંચ•કે•તમે•માહારી•શલાહ•લેઈને•તમે•તારીખો•ઇઆદ• રાખવાને• મેહેનત•લેતા•હશો—ને•હું•ધારુંચ•કે• મેં •તમને•જે•રીત•આગાઊ• દેખાડીચ• તેજ પરમાંણે•પાદશાવોની•ટીપ•બજાવી•રાખતાહશો* મેં •જેમ•હેઠલ•તારીખો• લખીચ• તેમ • તમારેબી• હરએક•પાદશાનાં•નાંમ•ઉપર•લ

ખવી* કિ•નાયુલો•છોકરો•કે•જે•તમારો•દોશત•થાઇશે•તેહેને•શ્રી ઇંગલેંડ•દેશનાં•શરવે•પાહાદશાયો•નાં•નાંમ•માલંમછે• અને•તે•તારીખ•પણ•જાંણેછે•ને•તે•શ ઘણુ•લખી•શકેય*હેની•નાંયુલી•બેહેન•પણ•તે•માફક•જાંણેય•એટલાશારૂં•હું•ઉમેદ•રાખુય•કે•તમે•બી•તેમજ•કરી•શખશો*

હુંછુ•તમારો•માયાલુ•બાપ*



ત્રીજા•એડવરડની•વખાંણ•(સ્મોલેટનાં•લખેલા•મુજબ*)

“એડવરડે•જુવાન•પંણમાં•ઘાણી•કશરટી•ભોગવી•તેથી•તેહેની•દેહેને•નુકશાંન•પોહોતું•એટલાશારૂ•તેહેને•ઘરડ•પંણની•નાકઉતી•વેહેલીજ•પેદાથાઈ•અને•એ•વખતે•તેહેને•ઘણો•તાપ•આવેઓ•અને•તેશાંગાથે•ખુજલી•પણ•થાઇ•તેથી•તરતજ•તેહેની•જીંનદગી•દુકી•થાઇ*જેવારે•હેનો•રોગ•ઘણોજ•વધેઓ•ને•શારૂ•થવાની•આશા•રહી•નહી•તેવારે•શઘલા•તેહેનાં•ચાકરોએ•પાદશાને•છોડી•દીધો•હેવુ•જાંણીને•કે•તેવોજી•ચાકરીનો•બદલો•એ•જેવો•દીવાલીઓ•પાહાદશા•આપી•શકે•નહી*એડવરડની•મરતી•વખતે•તેહેનાં•મુરદાને•દફનાવવાને•વાશતે•તેહેની•આગલ•કિ•પણ•ચાકર•રહો•

નહી*એ• મોહોટો• શકતી• વાંન•એડવરડ• હેવી• ભુડી• હાલતમાં• કાંઈ• શુખ• અથવા• મદત• વીનાં• મરતોહતો• એટલામાં• એ• પાદરી• કે• જે• તેહેનાં• ઘરનાં• ચાકરોની• માફક• નીરદઆ• નહી• હતો• તે• હેનાં• બીછાંણાંપાશે• આવેઓ• અને• એડવરડમાં• પરાંણ• રહેલો• હતો• તે• જોઈને• તે• પાદરી• તેહેનાં• જીવને• શંતોશ• તથા• દેલાશો• આપવા• લાગો*તારે• એડવરડનું• ગનેઆંન• બધું• જતું• નહી• રહું• હતુ• તેવારે• પોતે• જોઉ• કે• માહારા• આગ• મરંણની• વખતે• મહને• બધા• છોડી ગીઆ• અને• હું• તદંન• લાચારની• પેઠે• પડેલો• છેઉ*માહારી• કરણીમાં• જેકાંઈ• ચુક• પડીચ• તેથી• મહને• ઘણું• દુખ• તથા• પશતાવો• લાગેછે• એટલુજ• માતર• બોલીને• ઈશુનું• નાંમ• લઈ• તેણે• પરાંણ• મેલેઓ*

“એપરમાંણે• તરીજો• એડવરડ• મરંણ• પાંમેઓ• —શ્રી• ઈંગલેનડ• દેશનાં• શરવ• પાદશાવો• માંથી• એ• એડવરડ• મોહોટો• પરાકરમી• હતો તે• મોહોટો• બાહાદુર• તથા• કાએદા• કરનાર• તથા• પાહાદશા• અથવા• ભલો• માંણશ• હતો* એ• ઉંચો• તથા• મોહોટો• દબદબાનો• તથા• શારા• ચેહેરાનો• તથા• તેજ• આંખનો• તથા• લાંબાં• નાખનો• હતો* અને• તે• વખતનાં• જે• લોકો• હતાં• તેવો• શરવેથી• લડાઈની• કશરતમાં• તથા• બોલવા• ચાલવામાં• એડવરડ• ઘણો• શરશ• હતો*એમાઆલુ તથા• શારા• શવભાવનો• તથા• મીઠું• બોલનાર• હતો• અને• પોતાની• રઈએતનો• આદરભાવ• એ• પ્રાંણી• માંગતો• નહી• હતો• તોપણ• હેનાંમાં હેવી• હીકમત• હતી• કે• હેની• રઈએત• હેની• ઉપર• ઘણી• પરીતી• રાખતી• હતી*પંણ• એ• ખરૂછે• કે• એડવરડને• કીરતી• મેલવવાની• ઘણી• ઈછા• હતી• માંટે• નાંમ• મેલવવાને• વાશતે• તેણે• દઆ• છોડીદીધી• તથા• પોતાની• રઈએતનાં• જીવ• આપેઆ• અને• પોતાનાં• રાજમાં• (આબાદાંની•)તથા• શુખ• કીધું• નહી* અને• હેનાં• વખતમાં• લોકો• પાશેથી• જે• ઘણું• મેહેશુલ• લેતા• હતા• તે• રઈએત• આપવા• દેતે• નહી• પણ• તેવો• તેહેને• ચાહતા• હતા• તથા• તેહેને• જોઈને• ઘણાં• અચરત• પાંમતા• હતા• તથા• હેની• પુઠે હેની• વખાંણ• કરતા• હતા• તથા• હેની• રજા• તથા• શલાહથી• પારલેમેનટે• જે• ઓતાંમ કાએદા• કીધા• તે• ઘણાં• શારા• હતા• તેથી• તેવો• ઘણાં• કર• આપતા• હતા*”

શવાલો*

તરીજો•એડવરડ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•રાજ•કરવા•લાગો*

તે•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો•તારે•કેટલા•વરશનો•હતો*

જવાંન•પાહાદશાનાં•હાથમાં•એ•રાજનો•કારભાર•નહી•જાએ•તેટલા•શારૂ•કોણે•મેહેનત•કીધી*

તે•પછી•એ•પાહાદશાએ•રાંણી•એટલેજે•પોતાની•માએને•તથા•મારટીમરને•કાંહાં•પકડેઆં*

મારટી•મરનુ•શું•કીધુ*

રાંણીનુ•શું•કીધુ*

તરીજા•એડવરડનો•શભાવ•કેહવો•હતો*

એણે•કીઉ•રાજ•જીતી•લેવા•શારૂ•મેહેનત•કીધી*

એણે•ઇશકાચ•લોકોની•શાથે•મોહોટી•લડાઈ•કીધી•શું*

તે•કેહી•લડાઇ•?અને•તે•લડાઇમાં•કોણે•ફતેહ•કીધી*

તે પછી•તેણે•કીઆ•લોકોને•જીતી•લેવાશારૂં•મેહેનત•કરવા•માંડી*

તેણે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•જે•મોહોટી•લડાઇ•કીધી•તેહેને•શું•કેહે છે*

એ•લડાઇમાં•શું•પાહાદશાનો•છોકરો•બી•હતો*

તે•જવાંન•શાહાજાદાને•શું•નાંમ•આપેઉં•હતું*

તમે•કરેશીની•લડાઇની•કાંઇ•બીનાં•કહો*

એડવરડે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•કીઆ•શેહેરને•ઘેરો•ઘાલેઓ*

શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•કેઇ•તરફ•શ્રી•કેલેશ છે*

શ્રી•કેલેશ•શેહેર•કેટલી•મુદતે•(એડવરડને•)તાબે•થઉં*

શ્રી•કેલેશ•તાબે•થઆ•પછી•એડવરડે•તાંહાંનાં•લોકોને•શું•કીધું*

જેવારે•એડવરડ•પાદશા•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•હતો•તેવારે•ઇશકાટ•લોકોએ•શ્રી•ઇંગલેંડ•ઉપર•હોમલો•કરવાની•તજવીજ•કીધી•હતી•શું*

તે•ફોજમાં•મુખીઆ•શરદાર•કોણ•હતો*

નેવીલનાં•કરૂશની•આગલજે•લડાઇ•થાઇ•તેહેની•શઘલી•વાત•તમને•ઇઆદ•હોએ•તે•કહો*

તાંહાં•કોણ•કેદ•પકરાઓ*

કાલા•શાહાજાદાએ•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•બીજી•કેઇ•લડાઇ•કીધી*

તેહેમાં•કોણ•કેદ•પકરાઓ*

કાલા•શાહ્જાદાએ•પાહ્દશાહી•કીધી•કે•નહી*

એડવરડ•પાહ્દશા•નો•છોકરો•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તેથી•તેહેની•
કેહેવી•અવશતા•થઈ*

જારે•પાહ્દશાનુ•ઘરડપંણ•તથા•રોગેકરીને•તે•ઘણો•દુખી•થઓ
તારે•તેહેનાં•દરબારી•લોકો•તેહેની•શાથે•શીતરેહે•ચાલેઆ*

તરીજો•એડવરડ•કીઆ વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

તેહેને•કેટલા•વરશ•રાજ•કીધું*

ઊલીઅંમ•પ. તેહેમંદથી•તે•તરીજા•એડવરડ•શુધી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•જે•
પાહ્દશાઓ•થાએઆ•તેવોનાં•નાંમ•તથા•તેવો•જેજે•વરશમાં•રાજ•
કરવા•લાગા•તે•વરશની•તારીખ•શુધાં•તમે•એક•ટીપ•બનાંવી•શકશો*

LETTER XIII.

MY DEAR BOY,

I am very happy to find, by the letters which I receive from you, that you pay so much attention to the accounts which I send you. This is a great encouragement to me to go on. I told you, in my last letter, that Edward the Black Prince died before the king, his father; so that the heir to the throne was the *son* of the Black Prince, a boy only eleven years old, called Richard. This Richard the Second being too young to govern, the affairs of the kingdom were managed by his uncles, the Dukes of Lancaster, York, and Gloucester. The wars which the late king had begun, were so dreadfully expensive, that very large taxes were obliged to be raised to carry them on. In our days, taxes are so contrived, if possible, that but little of the burden of them may fall upon the poor: but, in this king Richard's reign, a tax of four groats was laid upon every person above the age of fifteen. This caused a great rebellion. One *Wat Tyler**, a blacksmith, refused to pay it, and he headed a great mob, and went to

---

* The leaders of this mob assumed feigned names; such as Wat Tyler, Jack Straw, Hob Carter, and Tom Miller, by which they were fond of denoting their mean origin. HUME.

London to endeavour to excite a commotion. King Richard, then just sixteen years old, agreed to meet him in Smithfield to listen to his account of the grievances of the people, and to try to remedy them. This was nobly done of the young king, who was indeed a very fine promising young man. Nothing could be better than his behaviour; but *Tyler* behaved in so insolent a manner, shaking his sword as if he were threatening the king, and conducting himself so rudely, that the Lord Mayor, William Walworth, knocked him down with his mace; and one of his attendants killed him with his sword. You may be sure that Wat Tyler's people were angry enough when they saw their leader killed, and were just preparing for a violent attack, when the young king said to them, in the most kind and endearing manner, "You have lost your leader; but, I will be your leader; follow me, and your wishes shall be granted." Thus the king, by his courage and good conduct, at once put an end to the fury of the mob; and they quietly went to their homes. As the king's life seems to have been preserved by the Lord Mayor, the coat of arms of the city of London was honoured with the representation of the bloody dagger which was the cause of his deliverance; and you know that this dagger is in the city arms at the present day.

The young king began his reign well, but he did not go on so; in short, he soon showed that he was a very weak king, and all his affairs, therefore, went on ill. It would be tedious to tell you of all his mismanagement; but one thing is worth mentioning, as it was, perhaps, the cause why he lost the crown. The dukes of Norfolk and Hereford had had a quarrel; and, instead of hearing which was right and which was wrong, the king ordered them both to be banished. The duke of Norfolk died abroad; but Hereford came back again rather sooner than the king expected him. This duke of Hereford was the first cousin of the king, being the son of John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster, the king's uncle. Now as the king governed so badly, and every body was dissatisfied with him, this Hereford (who was now become duke of Lancaster by the death of his father) thought he could get the crown for himself; and accordingly landed at Ravenspur in Yorkshire, and was joined by a great number of powerful people, so that he was soon able to get rid of the king, and to be crowned in his stead. This was, in truth, a most wicked piece of injustice; for this duke of Lancaster had no right at all to the throne whilst Richard was alive: and, indeed, if Richard had been dead, still, Lancaster had no right to it, as it belonged of right to the family of Richard's uncle, the duke of Clarence, who was older than the late duke of Lancaster. This family is called the house of *York**; and it was the disputes between these two families which made the civil wars which so long raged in England between the houses of *York* and *Lancaster.*

The poor king Richard was barbarously murdered, in Pomfret Castle. Some say that eight murderers were sent to kill him, and that he snatched a pole-axe from one of them and laid four of them dead at his feet; and was then himself knocked on the head with a pole-axe. Some say he was starved to death, not having had any thing given him to eat for a fortnight. Whichever it was, it was horrible enough. This murder was committed in the year 1399. The power which Richard's grandfather had gained in France was lost again in this weak king's reign. So much for the benefits of fighting!

I am your affectionate father.

QUESTIONS.

Whose son was Edward the Black Prince?
Did he die before his father?
Who was then heir to the throne?
How old was Richard the Second when his father died?
In what year did he come to the throne?
Who managed the affairs of the kingdom whilst Richard was too young to govern?
Were large taxes required to pay the expenses of the late king's wars?
What tax was considered very severe on the poor?
After what age were they required to pay this?
Who resisted it?
Who headed a mob and marched to London?
Where did the king meet Wat Tyler and his followers?
How did the young king conduct himself on this occasion?

---

* It was called the house of *York*, because a duke of York married a female of the Clarence line, and thus the title was changed.

How did Tyler behave ?
How did the Lord Mayor act ?
What was the Lord Mayor's name ?
When Wat Tyler was killed, were not his people very much enraged ?
How were they pacified ?
Did king Richard the Second continue to act as well as he had begun ?
What two noblemen had a quarrel ?
How did the king act towards them ?
Did one of them return ?
Did he try to get the kingdom ?
Who was this ?
Whose son was he, and what relation was he to the king ?
Had he any right to the throne during the king's lifetime ?
Would he have had any right to it even if the king had been dead ?
What family ought to have had the throne after the death of Richard ?
What caused the disputes between the houses of York and Lancaster ?
What was the end of Richard ?
Where was he murdered ?
In what year was this ?

પતર• ૧૩

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા

હું• જે• તમોને• વારતા• લખી• મોકલેઆ• કરુચ• તે• તમે• શારીઠે• દેલ• લગાડીને• શંમજી• લેવોચ• હેવુ• માહારા• ઉપર• આવેલાં• તમારાં• પતરથી• શંમજેઆમાં• આવેચ* તેથી• બીજી• વારતા• લખીને• મોકલવાને• મહને• મોહોટો• આનંદ• થાએછે* માહારાં• છેલાં• પતરમાં• મેં• તમને• કહું• હતુ• જે• કાલો• શાહાજાદો• પોતાનાં• બાપની• આગમચ• મરંણ• પાંમેઓ• તેથી• તે• કાલા• શાહાજાદાનો• છોકરો• રીચરડ• નાંમનો• અગીઆર• વરશનો• હતો• તે• તખતનો• વારશ• થઓ* હવે• એ• બીજા• રીચરડની• વએ• ઘણી• નાંહાંની• હતી• એમાંટે• હેનાં• કાકા• તેહેમાં• શ્રી• લાનકેશટરનો• ડીઉક• તથા• શ્રી• ઈઆરકનો• ડીઉક• તથા• શ્રી• ગલાશટરનો• ડીઉક• એવોએ• રાજનો• કારભાર• ચલાવેઓ* તરીજા• એડવરડે• જે• લડાઈ• કીધી• હતી• તેહેમાં• અતીઘણો• ખરચ• થઓ• તેથી• તે• લડાઈ• ચલાવવાને• વાશતે• લોકો• પાશેથી• ઘણું• ગેહેશૂલ• લીધુ* હમણાંનાં• વખતમાં• જે• મેહેશૂલ• લોકો• પાશેથી• લીએચ• તે• હેવાં• છે• કે• તેથી• ગરીબ• લોકોને• ઘણું• દુખ• પડતુ• નથી• —પંણ• એ• રીચરડ•

પાહાદશાનાં•વખતમાં•પંદર•વરશથી•વધારે•ઉમરનાં• શઘલાં• માંણશો•પાશેથી•હર•ઇક•આદમી•રીત•ચાર•ગારોટ•(ઇટલે જે•દશ•આનાં) લેવાનો•કર•બેશાડેઓ*તેથી રઇઅતે•ઇક•મોહોટો•બલવો•કીધો* વાટ•ટાઇલર † કરીને•ઇક•લુહાર•હતો•તેણે•તે•કર•આપેઓ•નહી•અને•ઘણાં•લોકો•મેલવીને•દંગો•કરવાને•તે•શ્રી•લંડનમાં•ગીઓ* તે•વખતે•પાહાદશા•રીચરડ•કે•જે•શોલ•વરશનો•થાઇઓ•હતો•તેણે• તે•લુહારને• ઇશમીથ•ફીલડ•જગો•આગલ•મલવા•તથા•તાંહાં• લોકોનાં•દુખ•તથા•દરદો•શાંભલવા•તથા•તેહેનો•ઇલાજ•કરવાને•વાશતે•કબુલ•કીધુ*તેવખતે• ઇ•જુવાંન•પાહાદશાઇ• પોતાનુ•ઘણુંજ• મોહોટાપણું•દેખાડેઉં•અને•તે•ઘણોજ•શારો• તથા• આશાવાંન• ધણી•હતો*ઇ•ચાલ• ઘણીજ• શારી•હતી•પણ• ટાઇલરે•હેવી તો•બે•અદબી•દેખાડી•અને•તેણે•પોતાની•તલવાર• જાંણે•કે•પાહાદશાને• ધમકાવવાને• વાશતે• ફેરવીને• હેવી• તો•ગુશતાખી•બતલાવી• કે• ઉલીઅંમ• વાલવરથ• નાંમનો•લારડ• મેઅર• પાહાદશાની• પાશે• હતો• તેણે• તે•ટાઇલરને• પોતાનો• શોટો•મારી•ઘોડા પરથી• હેઠલ• પાડી•નાંખેઓ• અને• તેહનાં•ઇક•ચાકરે• તેહેને•તલવારથી• મારીનાંખેઓ*તમે• ખચીત•કરી• જાંણજો• કે• વાટ• ટાઇલરનાં• લોકો• પોતાનો•શરદાર•મારેઓ•ગીઓ• હેવું•જોઇને•ઘણાં રીશે•ભરાઆં• અને•ઘણોજ• મોહોટો•હોમલો•કરવાની•તઇઆરી•કરવા•લાગાં ઇટલાંમાં•જવાંન•પાહાદશાઇ•ઘણીજ•માઆલુ•અને•ધીમી રીતે• તેવોને•કહુ•“કે•તમારો•શરદાર•મારેઓ•ગીઓ•પણ• હુ•તમારો•શરદાર•થાઉચ•તમે•માહારી•પછવાડે•આવો•અને• તમારી•જે મરજી•હશે• તે•તમને• આપીશ*”ઇ•પરમાંણે•તે•પાહાદશાઇ• પોતાની હીમતથી•તથા•શારી•ચાલથી• તે• લોકોની•રીશ•ઉતારી• અને• તેવો•શ

---

† ઇ•લોકોનાં•શરદારોઇ•વાટ•ટાઇલર•તથા• જાકઇશટરા• તથા• હોબ•કારટર•તથા•ટાંમ•મીલર• હેવાં•હેવાં•જુઠાં•નાંમો• પોતાને આપેઆં• અને• તેથી• તેવોઇ• પોતાનુ• નીચ•ખાંનદાંન• બતલાવી• આપેઉં*—હીઉમ•(હકાઇત•લખનાર*)

રવે• જુદા• જુદા• પોતપોતાંને• ઘેર• ગીઆ*લારડ• મેઅરને• †લીધે• પાહાદશાનો• જાંન• બનચેઓ• તેથી• શ્રી• લંડંન• શેહેરનાં• હધીકારીનાં• હથીઆરબંદ• ડાલા• ઉપર• લોહીમાં• ખડાઈલી• ઈક• કટાર• વધારી• કે તે• કટારથી• પાહાદશાનો• જીવ• બનચેઓ —અને• તમો• જાંણોછો• કે• ઈ• કટાર• આઈ• શેહેરનાં• હથીઆરોમાં• આજે• મોજુદછે*

ઈ• પાહાદશા• રાજ• કારભાર• શારી• રીતે• ચલાવા• લાગો• પણ• જેમ• કાંઈ• ઘણું• સૂધી• ચલાવેઉં• નહી• થોડા• દીવશમાં• તેહેની• ચાલથી• જણાંવા• લાગુ• કે• તે• ઘણોજ• કંમજોર• પાહાદશા• હતો• માંટે• રાજનો• કારભાર• શઘલો• ઉલટપાલટ• થાવા• લાગો*ઈ• શરવ• બીગાડની• વારતા• કહીઈ તો• ઘણુંજ• લંબાંણ• થાઈ• પંણ• ઈક• બાબત• કે• જેણેકરીને• પાહાદશાઈ• રાજ• ખોઉં• તે• કેહેવા• જોગછે* શ્રી• નારફોક• તથા• શ્રી• હેરીફરડનાં• ડીઉકોઈ• કજીઓ• કીધો• અને• કોણનો• વાંક• હતો• તથા• કોણનો• નહી• હતો• તેહેની• કાંઈ• તજવીજ• નહી કીધી• અને• પાહાદશાઈ• તે• બંને• જણાંને• રાજમાંથી• કાહાડી• મેલવાનો• હોકંમ• કીધો*શ્રી• નારફોકનો• ડીઉક તો• પરદેશમાંજ• મરંણ• પાંમેઓ• પંણ• શ્રી• હેરીફરડનો• ડીઉક• પાહાદશાઈ• જે• ટેપ• મારી• હતી• તેથી• વેહેલો• પાછો• (પોતાને• દેશ•)આવેઓ* ઈ• શ્રી• હેરીફરડનો• ડીઉક• પાહાદશાનાં• કાકાનો• છોકરો• થાઈ• કાંઈકે• ઈ• શ્રી• ગાંટ• વાલા• જાંન• ઈટલેજે• શ્રી• લાનકેશટરનો• ડીઉક• અથવા• પાહાદશાનો• કાકો• હતો• તેહનો• છોકરો*હવે• જારે• પાહાદશા• હેવી• નરશા• રીતે• રાજ કરતો• હતો• તેથી• હરેક• કોઈ• હેનાંથી• નારાજી• હતું• અને• ઈ• શ્રી• હેરીફરડનો• ડીઉક• (કે• જે• પોતાનાં• બાપનાં• મરંણ• પાંમેઆથી• પોતે• શ્રી• લાનકેશટરનો• ડીઉક• થએઓ• હતો•) તેણે• હેવું• વીચારેઉં કે• ઈ• તખત• ઉપર• હું• પોતે• બેશી• શકશ— માંટે• ઈ• ડીઉક• બી• ઈઆ

---

† શ્રી• ઈંગલંડ• દેશનાં• હરેક• મોહોટાં• શેહેરમાં• લારડ• મેઅર• નાંમનો• હધીકારી• થાઈછે• ને• તે• ઘણો• ખરો• અતરેનાં• કોટવાલ• અથવા• હાકેમનાં• જેહેવો• હોઈછે —ને• શેહેરનાં• લોકોને• સૂલેહમાં• રાખેછે• તથા• આંમ• લોકોની• જાહેર• શભા• મેલવેછે• તેહમાં• તે પોતે• વડો• હોઈછે*

રકશીઅરમાં•રાવેનઇશપીઅર•શેહેર છે•તાંહાં•આવીને•ઉતરેઓ•અને ઘણાંઇક•મોહોટા•શકતીવાંન•લોકો•હેને•આવી•મલેઆ•તેથી•પાહાદશાને•તખત•ઉપરથી•કાહાડી•મેલીને•પોતે•તે•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાને•વેહેલોજ•શકતીવાંન•થાઓ*હવે•શાચું•બોલીઇતો•ઇ•ઘણીજ•નાલાઇકીની•તથા•બેદાદીની•વાત છે•કાંઇકે•જાંહાં•શુધી•રીચરડ•જીવતો છે•તાંહાં•શુધી•ઇ•શ્રી•લાનકેશટરનાં•ડીઉકનો•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•હક•નથી — અને•આગારજો•રીચરડ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•હતે•તોબી•શ્રી•લાનકેશટરનાં•(ડીઉકનો•)કાંઇજ•હક•નથી•શાવાશતે•જે•ઇ રીચરડનો•કાકો•ઇટલે•જે•શ્રી•કલારેનશનો•ડીઉક••તે•મરનાર•શ્રી•લાંનકેશટરનાં•ડીઉક•કરતાંને•વડો•હતો•તેહેનાં•છોકરાંઓનો•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•હક છે*ઇ•શ્રી•કલારેનશનાં•ડીઉકનાં•કુટંબને•શ્રી•ઈઆરકનું•ખાંનદાંન•કરી•કેહે છે* † અને•ઇ•બંધે•ખાંનદાંન•વાલાવોમાં•(તખત•લેવાને•વાશતે•)જે•કજીઓ•પડેઓ•તેથી•શ્રી•ઇઆરક•તથા•લાનકેશટરનાં•ખાંનદાંન•વચે•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમાં•ઘણાં•વરશ શુધી•લડાઇ•ચાલી*

બીચારા•રીચરડ•પાહાદશાને•પોમફરેટનાં•કીલામાં•ઘાતકીપણાંથી•મારી•નાંખેઓ*કોઇ•કેહે છે•કે•તેહેને•મારવા•શારૂ•આઠ•ખુનીઓ•મોકલેઆ•હતા•તેવો•માંહેથી•ઇકનાં•હાથમાંની•ઇણે•કુહાડી•ખેચીલીધી•અને•તેથી•તેવો•માંહેનાં•ચાર•જણાંને•જીવથી•મારી•નાંખેઆ•પછે•બીજા•ખુનીઓઇ•પાહાદશાનાં•માથામાં•કુહાડી•મારી•(તેથી•તે•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*)કોઇ•કેહે છે•કે•તેહેને•પંદર•દાહાડા•શુધી•મુતલગા•ખાવાનું•આપેઉં•નહી•તેહેને•લીધે•તે•ભુખે•મરીગીઓ*હવે•તે•ગમે તે•રીતે•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•હોઇ•પંણ•ઇ•બંધે•ભુડાં•કરંમ છે*ઇ•(રીચરડ•પાહાદશાનું•ખુન•)૧૩૯૯ નાં•વરશ

---

† હેને•ઇઆરકનું•ખાંનદાંન•કરી•કેહતા•હતા•તે•ઇટલા•વાશતે•જે•શ્રી•ઈઆરકનો•ડીઉક•શ્રી•કલારેનશનાં•ખાંનદાંનની•ઇક•ઓરત•શંગાથે•પરણેઓ•તેથી•ઇ•નાંમ•બદલાઉં*

માં•થઉં*રીચરડનાં•બપાવાઈ• જે•મુલક•શ્રી•ફરાંશ• દેશમાં• ફતેહ•કીધુ•હતું•તે•ઈ•કમજોર•પાહ્દશાનાં•વખતમાં• શઘલુ•હાથથી•ગીઉં*લડાઈ•કીધાનાં• હેવા• હેવા•નફા•મં તે•થાઈછે*

હું•છુ•તમારો•માઈઆલુ•બાપ*

શવાલો*

કાલો•શાહજાદો• તે•કોણનો• છોકરો•હતો*

શુ• તે• પોતાનાં•બાપની•આગમચ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

તે•પછી•તખતનો•કોણ•વારશ•થઓ*

બીજા•રીચરડનો•બાપ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તારે• રીચરડ•કેટલા•વરશનો•હતો*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો*

રીચરડ•નાંહાંની•ઉમરનો•હતો•તાંહાંશુધી•રાજનો•કારભાર•કોણે ચલાવેઓ*

તરીજા•ઈડવરડ•પાહ્દશાની•વખતે•લડાઈનો•ખરચ•પુરોપડવા•શારૂ•શુ•લોકો•પાશેથી•ભારે•કર•લેવા•જરુર•હતા*

ગરીબ• લોકોને•આપવાને•કીઓ•કર•ભારી•પડતો•હતો*

તે•કર•કેટલા•વરશનાં•માંણશ•પાશેથી•લેતા•હતા*

તે•કર•આપવા•શારૂ•કોણે•ના•કહી*

લોકોને•ઈકઠાં•કરીને•શ્રી•લંડન•શેહેરમાં•કોણ•શખશ•ગીઓ*

વાટ•ટાઈલર•તથા•તેહની•શાથેનાં• લોકોને•પાહ્દશા•કાંહાં•મલેઓ*

ઈ•વેલાઈ•તે•નાંધલી•ઉમરનાં•પાહ્દશાઈ•શુ•કીધુ*

ટાઈલરે•શુ•કીધુ*

તે•પછી•લારડ•મેઅરે•શુ•કીધુ*

તે•લારડ•મેઆરનુ•નાંમ•શુ•હતુ*

વાટ•ટાઈલરને•મારીનાંખેઓ• તેથી•શુ• તેહેનાં• લોક•ઘણાં•રીશે•ભરેઆંતાં•કે•નહી*

પછે•તેવોની•રીશ•કેમ•ઉતારી*

બીજા•રીચરડે•જેહેવી•રીતે•રાજ•કરવાને• શરૂકીધુ•હતુ• તેહેવુજ•તેણે•ચલાવેઆ•કીધુ•કે•નહી*

કીઆ•બે•આમીરોએ•કજીઆ•કીધા*
પાહ્દશાએ•તેવોને•શું•કીધુ*
તેવો•માંથી•ફીરાદી•પાછો•આવેઓ•કે•શું*
તેણે•રાજ•લેવાની•મેહેનત•કીધી•કે•શું*
તે•કોણ•શખશ•હતો(ફીટલેજે•તેહનુ•નાંમ•શું•હતુ*)
તે•કોણનો•છોકરો•હતો•અને•તે•પાહ્દશાનો•શું•શગો•થાએ*
પાહ્દશા•જીવેતાંહાં•શુધી•શું•તે•ધણીનો•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•હક•હતો*
મગારજો•પાહ્દશા•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•હતે•તો•હેનો•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•હક•હતે•કે•નહીં*
રીચરડ•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•પછી•કીઆ•કુટંબ•વાલાને•તખત•મલેઉં•જોઇએ*
ઇઆરકનાં•ખાંનદાંન•વાલાઓ•તથા•લાનકેશટરનાં•ખાંનદાંન•વાલાઓ•એવોની•વચમાં•કજીઆ•પડેઆ•તેહેનો•શબબ•શું*
રીચરડ•શીરીતે•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ*
તેહેને•કાંહાં•મારી•નાંખેઆ*
એ•કરંમ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•થઉં*

LETTER XIV.

MY DEAR BOY,

In our last letter, we saw that the duke of Lancaster was made king, under the title of *Henry the Fourth.* We saw, too, that he had no right at all to the throne, as it properly belonged to the duke of York's family, which was descended from Lionel, duke of Clarence, the *elder* brother of John of Gaunt, Henry's father.

There is no happiness to be enjoyed from what is gained by foul means; and this, Henry soon found out. He was constantly harassed by plots and rebellions. Those very persons who had helped him to get the crown, were now the first to endeavour to take it from him, when they saw how haughtily he carried himself toward his former friends. The duke of Northumberland, a powerful nobleman, was one of those who had formerly assisted him, and who now rebelled against him: and this duke had a son, a brave and gallant youth, but so fierce and fiery that they called him Hotspur. This family, and many others, raised a powerful army against the king; and a great battle was fought between them at Shrewsbury, where, however, the rebels were completely beaten, and Hotspur was killed. The king himself was in this battle and fought bravely. His son, too, was there, the same who was afterwards that brave king, Henry the Fifth. Here this prince, young as he was, showed that he knew how to fight, and gave a sort of earnest of the kind of man he was afterwards to be. He did wonders in this battle; and some people say that it was he that killed Hotspur. This prince, however, though he could fight so well, was altogether a very bad sort of young man; and his loose behaviour, his fondness for bad company, and his profligate living, were the cause of great affliction to his father in his old age. All the riches and all the greatness in the world will never make any one happy who has the affliction of having an unthankful and wicked son. It is true that this young prince did, afterwards, become wiser and better, and that he became, indeed, a great king: but his bad behaviour had almost broken his father's heart first. Indeed, the old king, plagued by rebellions, vexed by his son's bad behaviour, and tormented in his conscience by the remembrance of his own cruelty to the late king, and of the unjust means by which he gained his crown, seems to have had no peace and no happiness.

You know that Shakspeare wrote several plays from the History of England; he has given us a beautiful speech of Henry the Fourth, on "Sleep," where the king seems to have been so harassed with cares and vexations, and the stings of conscience, that he could get no sleep to close his eyes; and he seems most anxiously to wish to lay aside the troubles of state, and the torments of mind which accompanied them, and to change places with the lowest of his subjects.

"How many thousands of my poorest subjects
Are, at this hour, asleep! Sleep, gentle Sleep,
Nature's soft nurse, how have I frighted thee,
That thou no more wilt weigh my eyelids down,
And steep my senses in forgetfulness?
Why rather, Sleep, liest thou in smoky cribs,
Upon uneasy pallets stretching thee,
And hushed with buzzing night-flies to thy slumber;
Than in the perfumed chambers of the great,
Under the canopies of costly state,

And lull'd with sounds of sweetest melody?
——Wilt thou, upon the high and giddy mast,
Seal up the ship-boy's eyes, and rock his brains
In cradle of the rude imperious surge?——
Canst thou, O partial Sleep, give thy repose
To the wet sea-boy in an hour so rude;
And, in the calmest and the stillest night,
With all appliances and means to boot,
Deny it to a king? Then, happy *low*, lie down,
Uneasy lies the head that wears a crown."

You see the king seems to think "*low*" people the happiest, and considers that *they* "lie down" in peace, while the great are harassed on all sides with cares and torments. A man, however, whose conscience torments him, will never sleep soundly, whether he be high or low.

Henry the Fourth died in the year 1413.

I am your affectionate father.

QUESTIONS.

After Richard the Second was murdered, who was king of England?
To whose family did the crown properly belong?
Did Henry the Fourth enjoy his power in peace? or did any of his subjects rebel against him?
Who raised an army to fight against the king?
What great battle was fought?
Which side gained the victory, and who was killed?
Was the king in the battle?
Was his son?
Who was that son?
Was this prince a good young man or not?
Did his behaviour greatly distress his father?
Did he afterwards improve?
Was the king's mind disturbed with the thoughts of the unjust way in which he got the throne, and with his cruelty to the late king?
Will the remembrance of past wickedness torment the conscience and drive away the refreshment of sleep?
Which is the happier, a poor labourer, whose mind is at ease; or a king, whose mind is filled with cares, and whose conscience is stung with the remembrance of sin?
In what year did Henry the Fourth die?

પતર•૧૪

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

માહારાં• પછવાડેનાં• પતરમાં• જે•રીતે•શ્રી• લાંનકેશટરનો ડીઉક•પાદશાહ•થાઆ• અને• ચોથો• હેનરી• હેવો• તેહને• ખેતાબ• આપેઆ• તે•વાત•લખી•હતી*પણ• તે•તખતનો•વારશ•નહી•હતો• કાંકે• તે•તખત•શ્રી•ઇઆરકનાં•ડીઉકનાં• ખાંનદાંનને•મલેઉં•જોઇએ• શાવાશતેજે• તે•શ્રી• કલારેનશનો•ડીઉક• નાંમે•લાઓનેલ•કે• જે• હેનરીનો•બાપ•શ્રી•ગાંટ•વાલો•જાંન•હતો• તેહનો•વડો•ભાઇ•થાએ• તે હેની• ઓલાદનું•એ•ઇઆરકનું•ખાંનદાંન છે*

ચોથા• હેનરીએ•જુલંમથી•જે•રાજ• મેલવેઉં• પણ• તે•રાજ•સુખે• ભોગવાએ•નહી• તે• હેનરીને• વેહેલુંજ• માલંમ• પડેઉં*ઘણુંસુધી• તેહેનાં• રાજમાં• દંગો• તથા• ફીશાદ• થઆ• તેથી• તેહેને• દુખ• થાઉં* હેનાં• જે• આગલનાં• મીતરો• હતા• તેવોની• શાથે•એ• ગારવથી• ચાલેઆ• તેથી• જેવોએ• હેને• રાજ• લેવાની• મદત• કીધી• હતી• તેવો• હેની• પાશેથી• રાજ• છીનવી• લેવાની• મેહેનત• કરવા• લાગા*શ્રી• નારથંબરલાંડનો• ડીઉક• મોહોટો• ઉમરાવ• થઇને• હેને• જે• આગલ• મદદગાર• થઆ• હતો• તેજ• હેની• શાંમને• દંગો• કરવા• લાગો•એ• ડીઉકનો• એક• છોકરો• જવાંન• અને• બાહાદુર• હતો• પણ• તે• ઘણોજ• જોરાવર અને• ગુશાવાલો• હતો• માંટે• તેહને હાટઇશપર• કરી• કેહેતા*એ•કુટંબ• વાલાવો• તથા• બીજા• ઘણાંએક• ઉમરાવોએ• મલીને•એક• મોહોટી• ફોજ• એકઠીકીધી• ને• તેવોએ•શ્રી• સુરૂશબરી• શેહેરની• પાશે• પાહાદશા• શંગાથે•એક• મોહોટી• લડાઇ•કીધી• તેહેમાં• દંગો•કરનારાઓ• તદંન• હારેઆ• અને•હાટઇશપર•મારેઓ• ગીઆ*એ• લડાઇમાં•પાહાદશા• પોતે• હતો• ને• તેણે• મોહોટી• બાહાદુરીથી•લડાઇ• કીધી*તાંહાં• પાહાદશાનો• છોકરોબી• આવેઓ• હતો• તે• (એ•લડાઇ•પછે• કેટલેએક•વરશે•) બાહાદુર• પાહાદશા•થઇને• પાંચમો• હેનરી• હેવું•નાંમ• પાંમેઓ*તેવખતે•એ•શાહાજાદો•જુવાંન•હતો• તોપણ• તેહેને• લડાઇ• કરતાં•આવડતી• હતી• હેવું• દેખાડેઉં• તેથી• તે• આગલ• મોહોટો•

બાહાર•થાએ•હેવું•જણાંવા•લાગું*ઈણે•તે•લડાઈમાં•મોહોટો•ચંમતકાર•કીધો•અને•કેટલાઈક•લોકો•કેહેછેકે•ઈણેજ•હાટઈશપરને•મારી•નાંખેઓ*હેને•લડાઈ•શારી•કરતાં•આવડતી•હતી•તોપણ•ઈ•જવાંન•શખશની•ચાલ•ઘણી•નરશી•હતી•તથા•ખરાબ•લોકોની•શોબત•ચાહાતો•હતો•તથા•ઈ•લુચાઈથી•ચાલતો•હતો•તેથી•હેનાં•બાપને•ઘરડપંણામાં•ઘણું•દુખ•થઉં*દુનીઆંમાં•ગમેતેટલી•દોલત•તથા•મોહોટાઈ•મલે•અને•પેટનો•છોકરો•નરશો•અને•પાપી•નીકલેઓ•તો•તેથકી•કાંઈબી•શૂખ•થાઈ•નહી*પંણ•ખરૂં•છે•કે•ઈ•જવાંન•શાહાજાદો•મોહોટપંણે•ઘણોજ•શારો•દાંનાવ•નીકલેઓ•અને•મોહોટો•પાહાદશા•થઓ•પંણ•તેહેની•માઠી•ચાલથી•તેણે•પોતાનાં•બાપનું•દેલ•તોડી•નાંખેઉં*રાજમાં•દંગો•તથા•ફીશાદ•થઓ•તેથી•તથા•પોતાનાં•છોકરાની•નરશી•ચાલથી•તથા•છેલા•રીચરડ•પાહાદશાને•મારીનાંખેઆનાં•પશતાવાથી•તથા•ગેર•વાજબીથી•તેહેણુ•રાજ•લીધું•તેથી•તેહને•કંઈ•શૂખ•થઉં•નહી*

તમે•જાંણજોજે•શેકશપીઅરે•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશની•વારતામાંથી•કાહાડીને•કેટલીઈક•રમુજની•વાતો•બનાવીય•—તેણે•ચોથા•હેનરીનુ“ઉઘ”વીશેનુ•ઈક•ઘણુંજ•શારૂ•ભાશાંણ•બનાવેઉંચ•(તેહેનો•શારાંઉશ•ઈજકે•)ફીકર•તથા•પશતાવાથી•પાહાદશા•હેવોતો•ઘાબરો•થઓ•કે•તેહેને•ઉઘ•આવે•નહી•તે•વેલાઈ•રાજની•શઘલી•મેહેનત•તથા•તે•શંગાથેનાં•શઘલાં•દુખ•દરદ•છોડી•દેઈને•પોતાની•ઈક•શરવેથી•ગરીબ•રઈઈતનાં•જેહેવો•થવાને•માહેઉં*

“માહારી•શરવેથી•ગરીબ•રઈઈતનાં•હજારો•આદમીઓ•
આઈ•ઘડી•ઉઘાઈલાંછે•રે•ઉઘ•ધીમી•ઉઘ•
દુનીઆંની•માઆલુ•દાઈ•મે•તુહને•કેમ•બીહીવાડી•
કે•તુ•માહારી•આંખને•ઢાંકતી•નથી•
અને•માહારી•અકલને•કાંઈ•નહી•વીશારી•નાંખતી ?
રે•ઉઘ•તુ•ધુમાડાની•ઝુપડીઓમાં•અને•
કરાર•નહી•પડે•હેવા•ખાટલાઓ•પર•શારારૂ•જાઈચ•
અને•રાતની•માંખોનાં•ગણગણતા•આવાજથી•શૂ•કરવા•શૂઈ•જાઈચ•

અને•તેકરતાં•મોહોટા•લોકોનાં•અતર•છાંટેલા•ઓરડાઓમાં•
તથા•ભારી•કીમતનાં•પાદશાઈ•પલંગો•ઉપર•
અને•મધુર•રાગનાં•મીઠા•આવાજથી•ઉઘ•કેમ•નહી•આવતી ?
રે•તુ•ઉનયા•અને•ડગડગતા•(વાહાંણનાં•)કુવા•આગલ•
ખલાશીનાં•છોકરાની•આંખોને•બંધ•કરેય•અને•તેહેને•
મોજાનાં•તુફાંની•દરીઆમાં•કેમ•હીચ•ઘાલીને•સૂવારેય ?
ઈ•તરફદારી•કરનારી•ઉઘ•તુ•શાશારૂ•
ભીંજેલા•ખલાશીનાં•છોકરાને•થાક•લેવા•દીઈય•
અને•વગર•તુફાંનની•તથા•ચુપકીદી•રાતને•વખત
શઘલી•તરેહે•શંમજાવેઆનાં•નફાથીબી•શાવાશતે
ઈક•પાદશાની•પાશે•આવી•શકતી•નથી ? તેવારે• સૂખી•ગરીબ•લોકો•સૂવેય—
પંણ•જે•ધણીનાં•માથાપર•તાજછે•તેહેને•ચેન•પડતુ•નથી•
ને•ઉઘ•આવતી•નથી*"

તમે•જુવો•કે•પાદશા•હેવુ•જાંણેય•જે•ગરીબ•લોકો•શરવેથી•ઘણાંજ•સૂખી•છે•અને•હેવુ•ધારેય•કે•તેવો•ચેનમાં•સૂઈને•આરાંમ•પાંમેય•અને•મોહોટા•લોકો•શઘલી•તરફથી•ફીકર•ચીનતા•તથા•શંકટથી•દુખી•થાઈય*તોબી•કોઈ•શખશ•ગરીબ•અથવા•માતબર•હોઈ•તોપંણ•જેહેનાં•દેલમાં•પશતાવો•લાગો•હોઈ•તે•કદી•સૂખેથી•સૂનાર•નથી*

ચોથો•હેનરી• ૧૪૧૩ નાં•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

હું•છુ•તમારો•માઈઆલુ•બાપ*

શવાલો*

બીજા•રીચરડને•મારી•નાંખેઆ•પછી•શ્રી• ઈંગાલંડનો•પાદશા•કોણ•થઓ*

તખત•કીઆ•કુટંબ•વાલાઓને•હકથી•મલેઉં•જોઈએ*

ચોથા•હેનરીઈ•સૂખેથી•રાજ•ભોગાવેઉં ? કે•કોઈ•હેની•રઈઈ તે•હેનાં•ઉપર•દંગો•કીધો•સૂ*

પાદશાની•શાથે•લડવાને•વાશતે•કોણે•ફોજ•ઈકઠી•કીધી*

તે• મોહોટી•લડાઇ•કાંહાં•થઇ*

કોણને•ફતેહે•મલી•અને•કોણ•મારેઓ•ગીઓ*

પાહાદશા•પોતે• તે•લડાઇમાં•હતા•શુ*

તેહેનો•છોકરો•બી•હતો•શુ*

તે•કીઓ•છોકરો•હતો*

તે•શાહાજાદો•શારો•જવાંન•ધણી•હતો•કે•નહી*

તેહેની•ચાલથી• તેહેનાં•બાપને•ઘણુ•દુખ•થઊં•કે•શુ*

તેપછી• તે• આહાજાદો•આગલ•શારો•થઓ•કે•શુ*

એ•પાહાદશાએ•ગેર•વાજબી•રીતે•રાજ•મેલવેઊં•અને•રીચરડ પાહાદશાને•શખતીથી•મારી•નાંખેઓ• તેહેનાં•અંનદેશાથી• હેનાં• દેલમાં•દુખ•લાગુ•શુ*

આગલ• જે•નરશાં •કરંમ •કીધાં• તેનાં• અંનદેશાથી• દેલમાં• દુખ• લાગે•અને•ઉધ•તથા•આરાંમ•ઉડીજાએ•કે•શુ*

એક•ગરીબ•મજુર•કે• જેહેનુ• દેલ•નચીંતછે• તે•અથવા•કોઇ• એક•પાહાદશા•કે•જેહેનાં•મંનમાં•ફીકરછે•અને• પાપ•કીધાંનો•જેહેને•પશતાવો•ઇઆદ•આવેછે•એ•બે• માંહેથી• કીઓ•ધણી•શુખી•હોએછે*

ચોથો•હેનરી•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

LETTER XV.

MY DEAR BOY,

In my last letter I gave you a short account of the history of Henry the Fourth. The next king was Henry the Fifth, his eldest son. I told you what a wild, ill-disposed, young man this prince had been, and how fond he was of bad company—the way, of all others, to teach a young man every thing that is wrong.

You may be sure that, when this young prince came to be king, all his riotous companions would expect that they should be in great favour ; and that they should be enabled to indulge in all their profligate schemes and wicked pleasures. But they

soon found the difference; for the king sent for them, and told them, that he was thoroughly ashamed of his past behaviour: he gave them each a small allowance, sufficient to enable them to live honestly, without being tempted to unfair means of supporting themselves; and he, at the same time, ordered them never to come into his presence again, till they had completely altered their manners and practices.

The orderly and good people, on the other hand, expected that *they* should find no favour; but they soon experienced, to their great joy, the altered disposition of the new king. There is a pretty story of Sir William Gascoyne, who had once sent the young prince to prison for his riotous and bad behaviour. This upright judge felt it to be his duty to punish what was wrong wherever he found it; he knew that the laws of England made no difference between the rich and the poor, and he was honest enough to execute these laws in a fair and impartial manner. He thought of his *duty* rather than of his *interest*, and, therefore, he committed the *prince* to prison for his ill conduct, just the same as he would have done the poorest person in the kingdom. But, when this young prince came to be king, Sir William Gascoyne naturally expected that he should suffer for his former conduet: but, instead of this, the young king sent for him; told him that he had acted rightly and nobly, encouraged him to go on in the same honest and independent manner, and bestowed on him great marks of approbation and favour. Thus did this young king begin to govern; pursuing exactly the course to make his kingdom prosperous, and his people happy; encouraging all those whose characters were good, and setting his face wholly against flatterers, and drunkards, and profligates.

You know that, in the times of which I am writing, the *Roman Catholic* form of religion was professed in England; the religion of this country, and of many others, being then very much under the power of the Popes of Rome, whose ambition and pride had led them, in many respects, to corrupt and pervert the true religion of Christ. It seemed to be their wish to keep the people in ignorance. The Bible and Prayer-book were in the Latin language; so that the people knew little of the real meaning of the Gospel, and had but little opportunity of knowing more. When we get to the reign of Henry the Eighth, we shall see that these things were altered: there was a *Reformation;* and those who opposed and protested against the religion of the pope were called *Protestants;* which is the name, as you know, by which we are called now. But though, I say, the Protestant religion was not established in England till the reign of Henry the Eighth, yet there were some good men who endeavoured to enlighten the minds of the people long before that time. So early as the reign of Richard the Second, *Wickliff* translated the Bible into English; but this gave great offence, and people were forbidden to read it; and many were actually put to death, because they wished to read the Bible.

There was one nobleman, in particular, Lord Cobham, who was very desirous of bringing about a reformation; and he encouraged the people to read Wickliff's Bible. For this he was seized, and sent a prisoner to the Tower; and, some time afterwards, he was put to death in the most cruel and dreadful manner that can be conceived. They applied all sorts of tortures to him; and, at last, they fastened a chain round his body, and actually roasted him alive over a slow fire.

It was by such cruelties as these, that the enemies of religion endeavoured to keep down the knowledge of the truth; and, as we go on in our history, we shall see a great deal more about these dreadful persecutions.

These cruelties could not, however, put a stop to the progress of religion; on the contrary, they were the means of giving strength to the cause. They proved how little of true Christianity these persecutors had, and thus made the real Christians more anxious for a reformation. The patience, too, with which the Protestant martyrs bore their sufferings, was a convincing proof that they felt their cause to be good; and they were supported under their trials by the almighty power of God. The Papists did indeed persecute the Protestants in a most dreadful manner, and inflicted every torture that their malice could invent. It is true, that cruelties were practised on both sides; and, indeed, where there is a want of the true spirit of Christ's religion, whatever a man may be called, he will be ready to commit any kind of wickedness to which he may be tempted. We shall, however, see more of this subject when we come to the time of the Reformation in the reign of Henry the Eighth; and more still, when we look at the cruelties in the time of his daughter, the bloody queen Mary. But I think that, even at the time we are writing about, we can see something like the *beginning* of the Reformation; and we can see why *Wickliff* is sometimes called the father of the Reformation.

It seems, that king Henry the Fifth, of whose reign we are now treating, was desirous of putting a stop to these dreadful persecutions; and that he thought the most likely way of doing so was to turn the minds of the people to foreign wars. He, therefore, made war against the French, and attempted to get the crown of France from their king, declaring that he himself was their proper king. He went over to France, with as large an army as he could raise, determined, if possible, to gain the kingdom.

At first, every thing appeared to go wrong with him. A dreadful sickness prevailed in his army, and he lost a great number of his men: he was, moreover, hemmed in, in a place where he had no means of escaping; and he was obliged to come to an engagement, although it is said that the enemy had ten times as large an army as his own. This was the famous battle of Agincourt, where, notwithstanding the smallness and the sickness of his army, he gained a complete victory over the French. After this, the French were glad to make peace; and it was agreed that king Henry should marry the daughter of the king of France, and that he should have the crown of France after the death of the present king.

This being settled, Henry determined to live at Paris (the capital town of France); and there he had a grand court, and lived in much greater state than the French king himself. One day, the two kings and their two queens dined together in state, with their crowns on their heads; but the poor king of France received very little respect, all the honour being bestowed upon king Henry. This was indeed a grand and proud day for Henry; but pride was not made for man; and there is always enough in this world to remind the rich, as well as the poor, of the vanity of all earthly things. King Henry was seized with a dangerous and painful illness, which soon put a stop to all his earthly greatness, and brought him to his grave at the early age of thirty-four. This king was one of the greatest warriors that we read of in history, but his glory was soon at an end. He died in the year 1422.

How much may we learn from history of the vanity of all worldly ambition:—may this teach us to "set our affections on things above!" And, when we see that troubles belong to the great, as well as to the small, may this teach us to be contented in the station in which Providence has placed us, and make us anxious to perform the duties of our calling with cheerfulness and Christian thankfulness.

I am, &c.

Character of Henry the Fifth, (from Smollett.)

"Henry was tall and slender, with a long neck, and engaging countenance, and limbs of the most elegant form. He excelled all the young men of that age in activity and the exercise of arms. He was hardy, patient, and laborious, and more capable of enduring cold, hunger, and fatigue, than any soldier in his army. His bravery was such as no danger could startle, and no difficulty oppose. He was chaste, temperate, moderate, and devout, exact and just in his conduct, and strict in the discipline of his army, on which he knew that his glory and success, in a great measure, depended. He was, perhaps, never equalled in the arts of war and of government. We cannot help seeing, however, that, like many other great warriors, he was ambitious, and sometimes cruel. We must, however, acknowledge, that he was one of the greatest soldiers recorded in history."

As I have mentioned Wickliff, I cannot help sending you the following short account of him.

Wickliff was born in 1324, and died in 1384. He was a strong opposer of the corruptions and usurpations of the Church of Rome; and from him we are to date the dawn of the Reformation in this kingdom. He published a translation of the whole Bible in the English language then spoken; but, not being sufficiently acquainted with the Hebrew and Greek languages to translate from the originals, he made his translations from the Latin Bibles, which were at that time read in the churches. So offensive was his translation of the Bible to those who were for taking away the key of knowledge, that a bill was brought into the House of Lords, in the 13th year of Richard the Second, A. D. 1390, for the purpose of putting it down; on which the duke of Lancaster, the king's uncle, is reported to have spoken to this effect: "We will not be the dregs of all, seeing other nations have the law of God, which is the law of our faith, written in their own language." At the same time he declared, in a very solemn manner, "That he would maintain our having this law in our own tongue against those, whoever they should be, who brought in this bill*." The bill, through the influence of the duke, was rejected; and this success gave encouragement to some of Wickliff's followers to publish another, and more correct translation of the Bible. But in the year 1408, it was decreed, "That no-one should thereafter translate any text of the Holy Scripture into English, by way of a book, or little book, or tract; and that no book of this kind should be read, that was composed lately in the time of John Wickliff, or since his death." This led the way to great persecution; and many persons were punished severely, and some even with death, for reading the Scriptures in English.—*Bishop Tomline.*

* * *

QUESTIONS.

In what year did Henry the Fifth begin to reign?

What sort of company did this prince delight in?

Did he encourage such people, after he became king?

How did he treat them?

Can you relate the anecdote of the Lord Chief Justice, Sir William Gascoyne?

And do you remember how the king behaved to this upright judge?

What was the established religion in England at the time we are speaking of?

Was there any disposition, at that time, shown to get rid of the Roman Catholic religion?

What nobleman endeavoured to bring about a reformation?

How was he treated?

Were those who opposed the Roman Catholic religion generally ill treated?

By what means did the king hope to put a stop to these religious persecutions?

---

* Lewis's History of the Translations of the Bible.

Of what country did he declare that he was the rightful king?
Did he carry on a war against the French in their own country?
Was he successful at first?
What great battle did he fight?
Who conquered?
What agreement was entered into, on peace being made between England and France?
Where did king Henry keep his court, after this agreement was made?
To what age did he live?
In what year did he die?
What was the king's chief pursuit, and what was his general character?
Who was Wickliff, and what is he sometimes called?

* * *

પતર• ૧૫

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા

માહારાં•પછવાડેનાં•પતરમાં•ચોથા• હેનરીની• થોડીક•વારતા• મેં•તમને•કહી•હતી* તે•પછી• તેહેનો•વડો• છોકરો•પાંચમો• હેનરી પાદશાહ•થઓ* મેં •તમને• (આગલજ•)કહું• હતુ• કે• ઈ• શાહાજાદો આંણધર• અને•ભુડા• શવભાવનો•ધણી• હતો• અને• હેને• નરશી•શોબતનો• ઘણોજ• પેઆર• હતો• કાંઈક• ઘણુંકરીને• હેવી• શોબતથી• કોઈ• જવાંન•શખશ• હરેક• ભુડાં• લખંણ• શીખેચ*

તમે• ખચીત• કરી• જાંણજો• કે• ઈ• નાહાંની• વઈએ• શાહાજાદો• તખત• ઉપર• બેઠો• તારે• હેનાં• શઘલા• નરશા• શોબતીઓ• હેવી• ઉમેદ• રાખતા• હતા• કે• તેમનાં• ઉપર• પાદશાહ• મોહોટી• કીરપા• રાખશે અને• તેવોને• પોતાની• લુચાઈનાં• કાંમો• તથા• પાપ• ભરેલી• મોજ• કરવા• દેશે* પંણ• ઈથી• જુદુજ• થઈઉં• કાંઈક• પાદશાહે• તેવોને• બોલાવીને• કહું• કે• જેકાંઈ• મેં• આજશુધી• કીધુ• તેહેની• મહને• ઘણી• લાજ લાગેછે— અને• તેવોને• હરેકને• થોડોઈક• ગુશારો• કરી• આપેઓ• કે• જેથી• ભલાપંણથી• તેવો• પોતાનુ• ગુજરાંન• ચલાવે• અને• કાંઈ• નરશાં• કાંમ• કરીને• પોતાનુ• પેટ• ભરવાની• લાલચ• રાખે• નહી. અને• પાદશાહે• તેવોને• ફરમાવેઉં• કે• તમારી• ચાલચલણ• બીલકુલ• શુધરે• તાંહાંશુધી• તમે• માહારી• પાશે• ફરી• આવતાનાં*

હવે•બીજી•તરફથી•જે•શારાં•અને•ભલાં•માંણસો•હતાં•તેવો•કેવુ•ધારતાં•હતાં•જે•(પાદશાહ•)તેવોને•માંન•આપશે•નહી•પંણ•ઈનવા•પાદશાહનો•શભાવ•બદલાઈલો•જોઇને•તેવો•ઘણાંજ•ખુશી•થાઈઆ*ઈકે કેવી•રમુજની•વાત•થઇય•તે•ઈમ•કે•હેય•ક•શર•ઉલીઅંમ•ગાશકોઇન•(નાંમનો•ઈક•હાકેમ•હતો•)તેણે•શાહજાદાની•માઠી•ચાલ•ફીશાદ•ભરેલી•ચાલને•લીધે•અગાઉ•હેને•કેદ•કરાવ્યો•હતો*•ઈ•રાશતી•હાકમનો•હક•હતો•કે•જેકોઇ•તકશીર•કર•તે હેને•શજા આપે•અને•ઈ•પોતે•જાંણતો•હતો•કે•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશનાં•કાયદા•પરમાંણે•ગરીબ•અને•તવંગાર•શરવે•શરખાંજે•માંટે•કોઇનાં•તરફદારી•કીધા•વીનાં•વાજબી•રીતે•ઈણે•નેઆવ•કાઢ્યા*પોતાનાં•હક•ઉપર•જેહેવી•હેની•નજર•હતી•તેહેવી•બીજા•લાભ•ઉપર•નહૂં•હતી•ઈટલાશારૂ•ઈ•શાહજાદાની•માઠી•ચાલને•લીધે•જે•પરમાંણે•કે•રાજ•માંહેનાં•કોઇ•શરવેથી•ગરીબ•શખશને•કેદ•કરતે•તેમ•તે•શાહજાદાને•ઈ•હાકમે•બંદીખાંને•મોકલાવ્યો•હતો*પણ•જારે•ઈ•જવાંન•શાહજાદો•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો•તારે•શર•ઉલીઅમ•ગાશકોઇન•કેવું•જાંણવા•લાગો•કે•પોતાની•આગાલની•શખત•ચાલને•લીધે•તેહેને•કાંઇ•ભોગાવવુ•પડશે•પંણ•તેહેને•ઠેકાંણે•જવાંન•પાદશાહે•તેહેને•બોલાવીને•કહું•કે•તમે•વાજબી•અને•શારૂ•કીધુ•તેજ•પરમાંણે•અદલથી•તથા•આપ•અખતીઆરીથી•ચાલવું•હેવો•દેલાશો•આપેઓ•અને•તેહેનાં•ઉપર-પાદશાહે•ઘણીંજ•મેહેરબાંનગી•તથા•કીરપા•રાખી*ઈ•પરમાંણે•ઈ•જવાંન•પાદશાહ•રાજકરવા•લાગો•તે•કેવી•રીતે•કે•તેથી•પોતાની•પાદશાહી•આબાદ•રહે•અને•પોતાની•રઇઈત•શૂખી•થાઈ—જેઓ•શારા•આબરૂ•ધરાવતા•હતા•તેવોને•દેલાશો•આપતો•હતો•અને•ખુશામતી•તથા•છાકટા•તથા•રંડીબાજનાં•મોહોડાં•શાંમણે•પાદશાહ•જોતો•નહી•હતો*

તમો•જાંણોછો•કે•ઈ•પાદશાહનાં•વખતમાં•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશમાં•રોમન•કેથોલીકનો•ધરંમ•ચાલતો•હતો•શાવાશતે•જે•આઈ•તથા•બીજાં•ઘણાંઈક•દેશોનો•ધરંમ•શ્રી•રૂમનાં•પોપોનાં•તાબામાં•હતો•અને•તે•પોપે•મગરૂરી•તથા•લોભથી•કરાઇશટનાં•ખરા•ધરંમને•બીગાડીને•ખરાબ•કીધો*તેવોની•હેવી•ઇછા•હતી•કે•લોકો•અંણજાંણાં•અને•મુરખ•રહે* બાઇબલ•(ઈટલે જે•ખરીશટી•ધરંમ

શાશતર•)તથા•નીઆમની•કીતાબ•લાટીન•બોલીમાં•હતી•તેથી•પરમેશવરની•વહી•તો•અરથ•શરવ•લોકો•શારી•પેઠે•શમજતા•નહી•હતા•અને•તેવોથી•કાંઇ•વધારે•શમજી•શકાઇબી•નહી*પણ•આઠમાં•હેનરીનું•રાજ•થઉં•તારે•એ•શરવ•ચીજો•બદલાઇ•ગઇ•અને•શુધરાઇ•થઇ•અને•જે•લોકો•પોપનાં•ધરંમની•શાંમણે•થઆ•ને•તે•ધરંમને•ઇનકાર•કીધો•તેવોને•પરોટેશટેનટ•(એટલે•જે•ઇનકાર•કરનારાઓ•)કરી•કેહે•છે•અને•હવડાં•આપણું•પણ•એજ•નાંમ•છે•તે•તમે•જાંણોછો*પણ•હું•કહુંચ•કે•આઠમાં•હેનરીની•પાદશાહી•થાઇ•તાંહાંશુધી•પરોટેશટેનટનો•ધરંમ•મુકરર•થઓ•તોપણ•તે•વખતની•ઘણુએક•આગમચ•કેટલાએક•શારા•પુરશો•હતા•કે•જેવોએ•લોકોને•શીખવીને•હોશીઆર•કરવાનાં•મેહેનત•લીધી*બીજા•રીચરડનું•રાજ•થતાંજ•વીકલીફ•(નાંમનાં•ધણીએ•)બાઇબલનો•અંગરેજી•બોલીમાં•તરજુમો•કીધો•પણ•તેથી•કેટલાએક•શખસોને•ઘણોજ•ગુશો•લાગ્યો•અને•લોકોને•તે•તરજુમો•વાંચવાને•મંને•કીધા•અને•ઘણાં•લોકો•તે•તરજુમો•વાંચવાને•ચાહાતા•હતા•તેથી•તેવો•મારેઆ•ગીઆ*

તે•વખતે•લારડ•કોબહાંમ•કરીને•એક•અમીર•હતો•તેહેને•જે•ખોટું•પોપોએ•ખરીશટી•ધરંમમાં•દાખલ•કીધુ•હતું•તે•દુર•કરવાને•ઘણી•ઇછા•થઇ•અને•લોકોને•વીકલીફની•(તરજુમો•કીધેલી•)બાઇબલ•વાંચવાને•હીમત•આપી*તે•ઉપરથી•તેહેને•કેદ•કરીને•શ્રી•લંડનનાં•કોલામાં•બંદીખાંને•નાંખેઓ•તેપછી•કાંઇએક•દીવશે•તેહેને•ઘણાંજ•ઘાતકી•પણાંથી•અને•ભઅંકાર•રી તે•મારી•નાંખેઓ*તેહેને•શવલી•તરેહેનું•દુખ•દીધુ•અને•અંતે•તેહેનું•શરીર•શાંકલથી•બાંધેઉં•અને•હલવે•હલવે•બરે•હેવી•આગની•કરીને•તેહેને•જીવતાંજ•બુજેઓ*

હેવી•હેવી•શખતીથી•ધરંમનાં•શતરૂઓએ•શચાઇને•ઢાંકી•રાખી•અને•જેમ•આપણી•વારતા•આગલ•ચાલતી•જશે•તેમ•હેવા•ભઅંકાર•જુલમો•વધારે•જોવામાં•આવશે*

પણ•હેવી•શખતીથી•ધરંમનો•વધારો•થઆ•વીનાં•રેહે•નહી•બલકે•તેથી•ધરંમની•મજબુતી•થાઇ*તેથી•હેવુ•માલંમ•પડેઉં•કે•એ•જુલંમગાર•લોકોમાં•ખરીશટી•ધરંમ•થોડોજ•હતો•અને•એમાટે•ખરા•ખરીશટીઆંન•લોકો•શુધરાઇને•ચાહાતા•હતા*પરોટેશટેનટ•

ધરંમને•વાશતે•જીવ•આપનારા લોકોઈ•ઘણાંજ•દુખ•ખમેઆં•તેથી•હેવો•દાખલો•મળેછેજે•તેવોનો•ધરંમ•શારો•હતો•અને•તેવોને•જે•વખતો•પડી•તે•વેલાઈ•મોહોટા•શક્તીવાંન•પરમેશવરે•તેવોને•પોતાની•કુદરતથી•આશરો•આપેઓ*પેપીશટ•(ઈટલેજે•જુનાં•ધરંમ•ઉપર•ચાલનારા•લોકો•જેવોને•હવડાં•રોમન•કેથોલીક•કરીને•કેહેછે•)તેવોઈ•પરોટેશટનટ•લોકો•ઉપર•ઘણોજ•ભુંડો•જુલંમ•કીધો•અને•કીનાંથી•હરેકતરહેની•વીપતો•પાડી•તે•ખરુ*ઈ•વાત•શાપાછે•કે•બંન્ને•તરફનાં•લોકોઈ•દુખ•દીધાં•અને•જાંહાં•કરાઈશટનો•મુલ•ધરંમ•શારી•પેઠે•જાણાંઈલો•નથી•તાંહાં•કોઈ•શખશ•હરેક•નાંમના•હોઈ•પણ•તે•ગમે•તે•હેવો•પાપ•કરતે*પણ•જેવારે•આઠમાં•હેનરીનાં•રાજમાં•જે•શ્રુધરાઈ•થઈ•તે•વખતની•વારતા•કહીશ્રુ•તેવારે•આપણ•હેવો•(જુલંમ•)વધારે•જોઈશ્રું•અને•તેહેની•છોકરી•મેરી•જે•હેને•ખુની•રાંણી•કેહેછે•તેહેનાં•વખતમાં•તેકરતાંને•વધારે•શખતી•તથા•જુલમ•આપણાં•શાંભલેઆમાં•આવશે*પણ•હું•ધારૂછ•કે•જે•વખતની•વારતા•હવડાં•આપણ•લખીઈચ•તે•વખતે•શ્રુધરાઈની•શરુઆત•થોડી•ઘણી•થાઈ•હેવું•આપંણ•જોઈ•શકીઈચ•અને•વીકલીફ•(નાંમનાં•શખશ)ને•કોઈ•વખત•શ્રુધરાઈનો•પીતા•કરીને•કેહેછે•તેહેનું•કારંણ•પંણ•આપણને•દીશેચ*

હેવું•નજર•આવેચ•કે•પાંચમો•હેનરી•કે•જે•પાદશાહની•વારતા•આપણ•હવડાં•કહીઈચ•તેણેઈ•તસંકાર•જુલંમને•બંધ•કરવા•માંડીઉ•અને•તેમ•કરવાનો•તેણેઈ•રીત•શોધી•કાહાડી•કે•પરદેશની•લડાઈમાં•લોકોનું•ધ્યાંન•લગાડવું•જોઈઈ*માંટે•પાદશાહે•શ્રી•ફરેચ•શનાં•લોકોની•શાથે•લડાઈ•ઉભી•કીધી•અને•તેવોનાં•પાદશાહ•પાચાં•શ્રી•ફરાંશનુ•તખત•લેવા•માંગેઉં•ને•હેવું•કહું•કે•હુંજ•તમારો•ખરો•પાદશાહ•છેઉં*તેપછી•જેટલી•તેહેનાંથી•બંની•આવી•તેટલી•ફોજ•ઈકઠા•કરીને•તે•શઘલુ•રાજ•લેવાનો•વીચાર•કરી•પાદશાહ•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•ગીઆ*

પેહેલાં•તો•તે•ઘણોજ•શંકટમાં•પડેઆ*કાંઈકે•હેની•ફોજમાં•ઈક•મોહોટા•રોગ•પેદાથઓ•તેથી•હેનાં•ઘણાં•શીપાઈ•લોકો•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•અને•વલી•તે•હેવી•જગોઈ•શાપરાઓ•કે•તાંહાંથી•કશી

તરેહેથી•નશાઇ•શકાઈ•નહી•માંટે•પાદશાહને•(શતરુ•શાથે•)લડાઈ•કરવી•પડી•તે•વખતે•શતરુની•પાશે•હેની•પોજ•કરતાં દશ•ગણી•વધતી•ફોજ•હતી•હેવું•કેહેછે*હેને•શ્રી ઈજીન•કોરટની•નાંમીચી•લડાઇ•કરી•કેહેય•ને•ઈ•ઠેકાંણે•હેનરીની•ફોજ•થોડી•અને•રોગે•કરીને•હેરાંન•થાઈલી•હતી•તોપણ•ઈ•ફ્રેચ•લોકો•ઉપર•ફતેહ•પાંમેઓ*ઈપછે•ફ્રેચ લોકો•શૂલેહ•કરવાને•રાજી•થાઆ•અને•હેવો•કરાર•કીધો•કે•શ્રી•ફ્રાંશનાં•પાદશાહની•છોકરી•શાથે•હેનરી•પરણે•અને•હાલનો•પાદશાહ•મરંણ•પાંમે•તેવારે•તેહેને•શ્રી•ફ્રાંશનું•રાજ•મલે*

હેવો•ઠરાવ•કીધાપછે•હેનરીઈ•(શ્રી•ફ્રાંશની•ગાદીની•જગો)પેરીશ•છે•તાંહાં•પોતે•રેહવાનુ•મુકરર•કીધું•અને•તે•શેહેરમાં•તેણે•ઈકે•મોહોટી•દરબાર•ભરી•અને•શ્રી•ફ્રાંશનાં•પાહાદશા•કરતાંને•હેનરી•પોતે•ભારી•દબદબાથી•તાંહાં•રહો*ઈકે•દાહાડે•ઈ•બંને•પાહાદશાઓ•તથા•તેવોની•રાંણીઓ•શરવે•પોત•પોતાના•માંથા•ઉપર•તાંજ•પેહેરીને•શઘલાં•શાતે•ખાવા•બેઠાં•પંણ•બીચારા•શ્રી•ફ્રાંશનાં•પાહાદશાને•થોડુંજ•માંન•આપેઉં•અને•હેનરી•પાહાદશાને(શરવેકોઈ)ઘણીજ•આબરુ•આપી*ઈ•દીવશ•હેનરીનો•ઘણોજ•મોહોટો•અને•મગારૂરી•ભરેલો•હતો•પંણ•મનુશજાતને•મગારૂબી•ઘટે•નહી•અને•આઈ•દુનીઆંમાં•ઘણુંઈકછે•કે•જેથી•ગારીબ•તથા•તવંગારનો•ઉઆદ•આવેચ•કે•આઈ•જગાતની•શઘલી•ચીજો•ફોકટ•છે*હેનરી•પાહાદશાને•ઈકે•મોહોટો•દરદ•ભરેલો•આજાર•થાઓ•તેથી•હેની•શઘલી•દુનીઆદારી•તથા•મોહોટાઇ•જતી•રહી•અને•તેથી•ચોતરીશ•વરશની•ઉમરમાં•તે•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*આપણ•હકાઈત•વાંચીઈચે•તેહેમાં•આઈ•પાહાદશા•ઘણોઈકે•મોહોટો•બાહાદુર•લડનાર•હતો•પંણ•તેહેની•કીરતી•વેહેલીજ•પુરી•થાઇ*તે•૧૪૨૨ નાં•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

દુનીઆંનો•લોભ•ફોકટ•છે•તે•વીશે•વારતામાં•આપણને•કેટલુંબહુ•માલંમ•પડેચ—ઈથી•“(બેહેશત•) ઉપરની•ચીજોને•આપરે•ચાહવા•”શીખીઈતો•શારૂ*અને•જેવારે•આપણ જોઇઈચકે•મોહોટાઓને•તથા•નાંહાંનાઓને•શરવને•મેહેનત•પડેછે•તો•તેથી•જે•હાલતમાં

પરમેશવરે•આપણને• મેલેઅય• તે•ઉપર•શબુરી•રાખવાને•આપણને• શીખેવું•જોઈએ•અને•જે•કાંઈ•આપરો•હુકછે•તે•મોહોટી• ખુશીથી•તથા•ખરીશટીઆંનનાં•શ્રૂકરથી•બજાલાવવો•જોઈએ*

કુદ્દું•તમારો•અને•તે•વનાંઈ*

(ડીશમાલેટની•કહેલી•)પાંચમાં•હેનરીનાં• શભાવની•બીનાં*

“ હેનરી•ઊનચો•અને•પાતલો•હતો•તથા•તેહેની•લાંમબી•ગારદંન હતી•અને•શોલઈતો•ચેહેરો•હતો•અને•તેહેનુ•ઘણુંજ• શ્રૂંનદરબદન હતું*તે•વખતનાં•શઘલાં• આદમીઓ•કરતાં•હેનરી•વધારેજ•ચાલાક•હતો•અને•હથીઆર•ફેંકવામાં શરવેથી•શારી•કશરત• રાખતો•હતો*તે કશરટી• ખેચનાર• તથા•બરદાશ•કરનાર• તથા• મેહેનતુ•હતો•અને• પોતાની• ફોજમાંહેનાં•શઘલા•શીપાઈઓ• કરતાં• તે• પોતે•શરદી• તથા•ભુખ•તથા•થાક•ઘણુંજ• શ્રૂહી•ખમતો•હતો*હેનુ•જોર• હેવું તો હતું • કે• તે• કોઈ•ચીજથી•બીહેનહી•અને•કશી• ગુશેલીઅતથી• તે હતો• અટકાવ•થાઈ•નહી* તે• પાક•તથા•ધીમો• તથા•નરમ•તથા• ભગતી•કરનાર•તથા•પોતાની•ચાલમાં•બરાબર•તથા•અદલ•અને•પોતાની• ફોજને•શખત•હોકમમાં•તથા•લડવાને• વાશતે•તઈઆર•કરી• રાખતો•હતો•કાંઈજે•ઈ•જાણતો•હતો•કે•તે•ફોજને•લીધે•પોતાનું નાંમછે•તથા•પોતાની•ફતેહ•થાઈચ* કદાચ• લડાઈનાં•તથા•રાજધાંનીનાં• હોનરમાં• હેનાં•જેહવો• કોઈ• શખશ•થાઈઓ•નથી*પણ•બીજા•ઘણાં•ખરા•બાહાદુર• પેહલવાંનોની•માફક•ઈબી• લોભી•હતો• અને•કોઈ• વેલા•ઘાતકી•હતો• તે•કહા•વીનાં•આપણથી• રેહવાતુ•નથી*તોપણ• આપરે•કબુલ•કીધું •જોઈએ કે• હકાઈતમાં•લખેલા•પેહલવાંનોમાં•ઈ•ધણી•વધારેજ•બાહાદુર•શેપાહ•હતો*”

હું•વીકલીફનાં•વીશે•કાંઈ•બોલેઓચ•માંટે• હેઠલ•લખેલી•તેહનાં•વીશે• ટુંક•બીનાં• હું •તમોને•મોકલેઆ•વનાં• રેહતો•નથી*

વીકલીફ• ૧૩૨૪ નાં•વરશમાં•જનમેઓ•અને• ૧૩૮૪ નાં•વરશમાં•મરણ• પાંમેઓ* શ્રી•રૂમનાં•ચરચ•(ઈટલેજે• પેપીશટ• અથવા રોમન•કેથોલીક• લોકો)જો• ધરમ•જે• બીગાડેલો•તથા• ખરાબ• થાઈલો•હતો• તેહેની•શાંમને•ઘણીજ• મજબુતીથી• વીકલીફ• આડો• પરતો•હતો•અને• ઈ• ધણીશી• આઈ• રાજમાં•શ્રૂધરાઈનુ• અજવાલુ•થા

એઉં•એમ•આપણને•ગણેઉં•જોઈએ* તે•વખતે•જેમ•અંગરેજી•બોલી બોલતા•હતા•તે•હેવી•બોલીમાં• શઘલી•બાઈબલનો• તેણે•તરજુમો• છાપી•પરગટ•કીદો — પણ•તે•હેને•હીબરુ•(એટલે•જે•ઈઆહુદીની)તથા•ગરીક•(એટલે•જે•ઈઉનાંની•)બોલીઓ•કે•જેહેમાં•અશલી•ધરંમ પુશતક•લખેલાં•હતાં•તે•જબાંન•તેહેને•પુરી• આવડતી•નહી•હતી•માંટે•તેણે•લાટીન•બાઈબલ•માહેથી• તરજુમો•કીદો•કે•જે•પુશતકો•તે•વેલાએ•(શરવકોઈ)દેવલોમાં•વાંચતા•હતા* જે•શખશો•કે•એલમની•કુચીશંતી•રાખતા•હતા• તેવોને•બાઈબલનો•તરજુમો•થાઆથી•હેવું•તે•માઠુ•લાગુકે તેવોએ•બીજા• રીચરડની• પાદશાઈનાં• ૧૩ માં•વરશમાં•શને• ૧૩૯૦ માં•(પારલેમેનટમાં)•હાઉશ•આવ• લારડશ•(એટલે•જે•ઉમરાઓની•શભા)માં•એ•તરજુમો•બંદ•કરવાને•વાશતે•એક•ધારો•કરવા•માંગેઓ• તેવેલાએ• શ્રી•લાંનકેશટરનો•ડીઉક•કે જે•પાદશાહનો•કાકો•થાએ•તે•ધણી•એપરગાંણે• બોલેઓ•કે•"બીજી•કોમનાં•લોકોએ•પરમેશવરનાં•ફરમાંન•કે•જે• આપણાં•મજહબનુબી•ફરમાંન•છે•તે• પોતાંની•બોલીમાં•લખેલુ છે•તે•જોઈને•આપરે•તેઓની•પછવારે•રહીશૂ•નહી*" અને• તેજવેલાએ•મોહોટા•આવાજથી• ખચીત• હેવો•એકરાર•કીદો•કે•"જે• શખસો•પછે• તેવો•ગમેતે હોએ•કે•જેણાને•એ•ધારો•પશારકરવા•માંગેય• તેવોની•વીરૂધમાં•હું કેહુચ•કે•આપુને•એ•ફરમાંન•આપણી•પોતાની•બોલીમાં•રાખેઉં•જોઈએ*†" એ•ડીઉકની•શતાથી• તે(ધારો•કરવાની)અરજીને•નામનજુર•કીધી — અને•એ•ફતેહ•થાઈ•તેથી•વીકલીફનાં•કાંઈએક•શાગરેદોએ•હીમતવાંન•થાઈને• બીજો•અને•ઘણોખરો•બાઈબલનો•તરજુમો• પરગટ•કીદો* પણ• ૧૪૦૮ નાં•વરશમો•હેવો• હોકમ•થાઓ•કે•"હવેપછે•કોઈ• શખશ•ધરંમ•પુશતકનો•અંગરેજી•ભાશામાં•તરજુમો•કરીને• કેતાબ• અથવા•નાંધલી•પોથી•અથવા•ચોપાંનીઉ•બનાવે•નહી•અને•જાંન•વીકલીફનાં•વખતમાં•અથવા• તેહેનાં•મરણ•પછે•હેવી•રીતે•બનાવેલી• કોઈબી•પોથીઓ•હોએતો• તેહને•કોઈ•ધણી•વાંચે•નહી*" એ•ઉપરથી•ઘણોજ•જુલમથાએઓ•અને•ઘણાંએક•લોકોએ•ધરમ•પુશ

†(જુવો)બાઈબલનાં•તરજુમાંની•લુઈશની•બનાવેલી•વારતા*

નક•અંગરેજી•બોલીમાં•વાંચેઉં• તેશારૂ•તેવોને•ઘણીજ• શખત•શજા• આપી•અને•કેટલાઈક• લોકોને•મારી•પણ•નાંખેઆ*

ટાંમલીન•બીશપ•(ઈટલેજે•મોહોટો•પાદરી*)

શવાલો*

પાંચમો• હેનરી•કીઆ•વરશમાં•રાજ•કરવા•લાગો*

ઈ•શાહાજાદાને•કેહેવી• શોબત•ગમતી•હતી*

ઈ•પાદશાહ•થઆ•તારે• હેવા• લોકોને•આડે• મારગે• ચાલવા દીધા•કે•શું*

ઈણે• તેવોને•શું•કીધું*

શર• ઉલીઅંમગાશકોઈન• કરીને• જે• મોહોટો•હાકેમ•હતો• તેહેનાં•વાત•કહો*

ઈ•રાશત•હાકેમની•શાથે•પાદશાહ•કેમ•ચાલે ઓ• તે•તમને•ઈઆ. છે•શું*

આપણ•લખાંઈચ• તે•વખત•(ઈટલેજે•ઈ•હેનરી•પાદશાહની•વખતે• 'શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ• દેશમાં•કીઓ•ધરંમ•ઠરાવથી•ચાલતો• હતો*

રોમંનકેથોલીકનો• ધરંમ•કાહાડી•નાંખવાને• શારૂં•કોઈઈ• તે• વખત•ઈછાબતલાવી•કે•શું*

કીઆ•ઉમરાવે• ધરંમની•શુધરાઈ•કરવાજી• મેહેનત• કીધી*

પછી• તેહેને•શું•થઉં*

જે• લોકો• રોમંન• કેથોલીકનાં• ધરંમની• શાંમને•થાતા•હતા• તેવો•ઉપર•જુલંમ•થાતો•હતો•કે•શુ*

ધરંમને•વાશતે•(લોકો•ઉપર•)જે•જુલંમ• થાતો•હતો• તે•બંધ•કરવા•શારૂ• પાદશાહે•કીઓ•ઉપાઈ• શોધીકાહાડેઅ*

હેનરીઈ•કીઆ•દેશનાં• લોકોનો•ખરો• પાદશાહ•થાવાનો• પોતે દાવો•કીધો*

તેણે•ફરેચ• લોકો•શાથે• તેવોનાંજ• દેશમાં•લડાઈ•કીધીશુ*

પેહેલાં•પાદશાહે•ફતેહ•કીધી•કે•નહી*

તે• કેઈ•મોહોટી•લડાઈ•લડેઆ*

તાંહાં• કોણની• ફતેહ• થઇ*
શ્રી• ઈંગલંડ• તથા• ફરાંસ• વચે• શુલેહ• થઇ• તે• વેલાએ• શું• બંદોબશત• કીધો*
તે• ઠરાવ થઆપછી• હેનરી• પાદશાહે• પોતાની• કચેરી• કાંહાંભરી*
તે• કેટલા• વરશ• શુધી• જીવેઓ*
તે• કીઆ• વરશમાં• મરણ• પાંમેઓ*
એ• પાદશાહ• શીચીજ• ઉપર• ઘણો• શોક• રાખતો• હતો• અને• તેહેની• આબરૂ• કેહેવી• હતી*
વીકલીફ• કોણ• હતો• અને તેહેને• કોઇ• વેલાએ• શું• કેહેછે*

LETTER XVI.

MY DEAR BOY,

In my last letter, I told you something about king Henry the Fifth, and his great wars in France; and I must now bring you to the reign of Henry the Sixth, who was the next king; but at the time of his father's death, he was only a year old. The duke of Bedford was, therefore, appointed Protector of the kingdom, till the little king should be old enough to govern for himself. The duke of Bedford continued to carry on the war in France; but the affairs of that country took so strange a turn, that the English power in France, in a very few years, was brought entirely to an end. This was accomplished in a way so extraordinary, that it seems almost beyond belief.

There lived, in a village in France, a country girl, called Joan of Arc, who had been servant at an inn; and this girl had got a notion that she was fated to deliver her country from its enemies. She gave it out that she had particular messages from heaven on this business: and this notion so inflamed the minds of the people, and so raised their spirits, that they were excited to wonderful deeds of courage; and this girl, clad in armour, sword in hand, led the soldiers against the English army, which was then besieging the town of Orleans, and completely drove them away; and with her help, the French continued to gain great advantages against the English. This poor girl was, however, some time afterwards, taken in battle by the English, and was burned alive as a witch. I don't know which to wonder at most, the ignorance of the people in those days, who believed in witches, or the cruelty of burning a poor young woman alive. The French, however, continued their successes, till the English had scarcely a place left in France.

Things were going on grievously ill, too, all this time, in England. The king had not abilities enough to govern such a nation; and there was dissatisfaction, and a disposition to rebellion, all over the kingdom. I think I have already told you, that Henry the Fourth (grandfather of this king) had no just title to the throne, but that he got it by force. He was the son of John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster, the third son of Edward the Third; but the crown, of right, belonged to the family of the second son (on the failure of the first.) Now the duke of York was descended from this elder branch, and, therefore, was the right person to be king. The people, therefore, having so much reason to be dissatisfied with their present king, began to turn their thoughts to the House of York.

In this state of things, a fellow named John Cade, pretended that he belonged to the York family, and that he was the proper king; and he persuaded many people to believe him, and to follow him. He had as many as twenty thousand followers,—he got as near to London as Black-heath, and there he encamped his mob of an army, and then marched to London. He was soon, however, driven back as far as Rochester; and there, many of his friends forsook him. A reward was offered to any one who would put him to death, and bring his head as a proof that he had done the deed. Cade was then soon seized, and put to death, and his head was set up on London Bridge.

The duke of York rejoiced in all these disturbances, as they gave him a better chance of having his real claim listened to, and of possessing himself of the crown. He soon began to show his intention. The king about this time was seized with an illness, and the duke of

York was appointed to govern in his place. Having once acted as king, he did not choose to give up his power, even when the king was restored to health. Now, perhaps, the king's gentle disposition would have led him to give way to the claims of the duke of York; but Margaret, his queen, was a person of a very different disposition, and she proceeded to open war against the duke and his friends. Now this was the beginning of the war between the houses of York and Lancaster, which raged for so many years, and was the cause of so many dreadful battles, and such bloodshed, and savage contentions. War, at all times, is a dreadful scourge to a nation; but a civil war, where those of the same country, and many relations and neighbours, are fighting one against another, is perhaps the most dreadful of all kinds of war. I shall not attempt to describe to you the different places where these battles were fought, but sometimes one side gained the victory, and sometimes the other. There was a battle at Blore-heath, and another at Wakefield, and two at St. Alban's, and many more at other places besides.

At the battle of Wakefield, the duke of York's army was beaten, and he himself was killed. However, his party soon recovered themselves, and in a battle at Tewkesbury, were victorious. The son of the duke of York was then proclaimed king, by the title of Edward the Fourth, in the year 1461.

Poor king Henry, it is said, was afterwards murdered in his chamber by king Edward's brother, the duke of Gloucester, who was afterwards crooked-back king Richard the Third, of whose cruelty we read such terrible accounts:—and the son of Henry was likewise stabbed by this same Gloucester, and the duke of Clarence, after the battle of Tewkesbury. Thus I have given you an account of this reign, in which we read of little else besides battles and cruel murders. I think you will now understand what is meant by the wars between the Houses of York and Lancaster. These are sometimes called the wars of the "Roses," because the Lancaster party wore *red* roses, in their hats, and the York party wore *white* ones. In the season when real roses were not to be had, I suppose they were contented with roses made of red and white ribbons.

You see we have had three kings together of the House of Lancaster;—and now we get into the House of York. And you see, too, that the family of Lancaster had no title to the throne; hence they are sometimes called usurpers, because they first, by means of Henry the Fourth, got the crown, not by right, but by force. Here you see the reason why Gray calls the pious Henry the Sixth, "the meek usurper."

> " Revere his consort's faith, his father's fame,
> And spare the meek usurper's holy head."

* * *

QUESTIONS.

In what year did Henry the Sixth begin to reign?

How old was he when his father, Henry the Fifth, died?

Who was appointed Protector whilst the king was too young to govern?

Did the duke of Bedford carry on the war in France? Was he successful?

By what strange means were the English affairs in France entirely changed?

Who was Joan of Arc?

What French town did she relieve by driving the English away?

Was she, at length, taken in battle by the English?

How did they treat her?

How were things going on in England during all this time?

What relation was Henry the Sixth to Henry the Fourth?

Had this branch of the royal family a right to the throne?

Was not this the Lancaster family?

Was not the duke of York descended from an elder branch of the family?

Ought he not, therefore, to have been king?

When the people were dissatisfied with the present king, did they not wish to have one of the York family, instead of him?

Did this lead to rebellions?

Who first pretended to be of that family, and tried to raise the country in his favour?

Did many people follow Cade?

How many?

What became of Cade?

During an illness of the king, who was appointed to govern instead of him?

Did the duke of York, having once got possession of power, endeavour to keep it in his own hands?

Did this lead to the wars of York and Lancaster?

Who was king Henry's wife*?

---

* Margaret of Anjou.

How did this queen act?
Were many battles fought between the York and Lancaster party?
In what battle was the duke of York's army defeated and himself killed?
In what battle did the duke's party recover itself?
After this success of the York party, who was proclaimed king?
In what year was this?
What became of Henry the Sixth after Edward the Fourth was proclaimed king?
Who was the duke of Gloucester, and what was his character?
Why were the wars of York and Lancaster sometimes called the wars of the Roses?
Which party wore a red rose, and which wore a white one?
How many kings have we had of the house of Lancaster?

પતર• ૧૬

માહરા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

માંહારાઆગલા• પતરમાં• મેં•તમને• પાંચમાં• હેનરી• વીશે• તથા• તેણે• શ્રી ફરાંશમાં• મોહોટી•લડાઈઓ• કીધી• તે• વીશે•કાંઈ•કહ્યું•હતું•અને•હવડાં• હું•તમને•છઠા•હેનરીની•પાદશાહીની•વારતા•કહુંચ — હવે પછેનો• પાદશાહ• ઈ• ધાણી•હતો•પંણ• હેનો• બાપ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તે•વખતે• ઈ• ઈક•વરશનાં• ઉમરનો•હતો•તેમાટે• ઈ•નાંધલો•પાદશાહ• પોતે• રાજ•કીધો• લાઈક• મોહોટો• થાઈ•તાંહાંસુધી•શ્રી• બેડફરડનાં• ડીઉકને•રાજનો•શંભાલ•કરનાર• ઠેરવેઓ*ઈ• શ્રી• બેડફરડનો• ડીઉક•શ્રી• ફરાંશમાં•લડાઈ• ચલાવવા•લાગો•પંણ• તે•દેશનો•કારભાર• હેવો• સારત•ખારીબો• થાઓ• કે•ઈંગલીશ• લોકોનો •જે•શ્રી•ફરાંશમાં•કાબુ•હતો તે•થોડાંઈક• વરશમાં• બીલકુલ• જતો•રહો* ઈ• બીનાં•હેવી• અજબ• જેહેવી•રીતે• થાઈ• કે તે• ઉપર•ભરોસો•લાવવો•જોઈ•નહી• હેવું• દીસેચ*

શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશનાં•ઈક•ગાંમડાંમાં•ઈક•ગાંમરીઆની•છોકરી•રેહેતી•હતી•તેહેનું•નાંમ•જોન• ઓફ•આરક• તે•ઈક• ધરમશાલામાં•ચાકર•હતી•અને•ઈ• છોકરીનાં•મનમાં•હેવું•આવેઉં•કે• તેહેનાં•નશીબને• જોરે•કરી• પોતાનાં•દેશને•દુશમનનાં•હાથમાંથી•તે•પોતે•છોડવી•શક

શે*તે•છોકરી•કેહેવું•કેહેવા•લાગી•કે•એ•બાબત•વીશે•પરમેશ્વરનાં•ખાશ પેગંમ•ગહારે•લોકોને•કેહેવાય•અને•એવા•વીચાર•ઉપરથી•લોકોનાં•મન•એવાંતો•મોહોટાં•થાશે•અને•તેવોનાં•દેલમાં•એવો•તો•જોશો•ચડે આ•કે•તેવોગી•ત્યારે•અચરત•શરખાં•દેલાવારીનાં•કાંમ•થાશે અને•પેલી•છોકરી•બખતર•પેહેરીને•હાથમાં•તલવાર લેઈને•ઈંગલીશ લોકોની•ફોજ•કે•જે•શ્રી•ઓરલીનશનાં•શેહેર•ઉપર•ઘેરો•ઘાલતી•હતી•તે•ફોજની•શાંમણે•શીપાઈઓ•લેઈને•પોતે•લડવા•ગઈ•અને•તે•છોકરીની•મદતથી•ફ્રેંચ•લોકો•ઈંગલીશ•લોકોને•ઘણાંજ•બર•આવેઆ*પણ•કેઈક•વખત•પછી•એ•ગરીબ•છોકરીને•ઈંગલીશ•લોકોએ•લડાઈમાં•પકડી•લીધી•અને•તેહેને•જાદુગરણી•કેહેવું•ઠેરવીને•તેહેને•જીવતી•બારી•નાંખી*તે•વખતનાં•મુરખ•લોકો•જેવો•જાદુગરણીઓને•માંનતા•હતા•તેવો•ઉપર•અથવા•એ•ગરીબ•બીચારી•જવાંન•આશતરીને•ઘાતકી•પણાંથી•જીવતી•બારી•નાંખી•તે•ઉપર•અચરત•થાઉ•તે•મહને•જાણાંનુ•નથી*તોઈપણ•ફ્રેંચ•લોકો•ફતેહે•પાંમતા•ગીઆ•તેહાંશુધી•કે•ઈંગલીશ લોકોને•શ્રી•ફ્રાંશમાં•ઉભુ•રેહેવાની•એ•જગાબી•રહી•નહી*

એટલા•શઘલા•વખત•શુધી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાં•પણ•કારભાર•ખોટા ચાલતો•હતો*(શાગીજે•)એવા•લોકો•ઉપર•રાજ•કરવાની•પાહાદશામાં•શકતી•નહી•હતી•અને•આખા•રાજમાં•શઘલા•લોકો•નારાજી•હતા•અને•તેવો•બલવો•કરવા•માંગતા•હતા*હું•ધારૂંછકે•મેં•તમને•આગામચ•કેહેલુછેકે•આએ•પાદશાહનાં•બપાવા•ચોથા•હેનરીનો•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•વાજબી•હક•હતો•નહી•પણ•તેણે•તે•(તખત•) જુલંમશી•લીધુ*તરીજા•એડવરડનો•તરીજો•છોકરો•નાંમે•શ્રી•ગાંટ•વાલો•જાંન•જે શ્રી•લાંનકેશટરનો•ડીઉક•હતો•તેહેનો•એ•(ચોથો•હેનરી•)છોકરો•થાએ=પણ•જો•પેહેલા•છોકરાને•નહી•મલેઉતો•હક•પરમાંણે•બીજા•છોકરાનાં•વઊશને•તખત•મલવુ•જોઈએ*હવે•શ્રી•ઈઆરકનો•ડીઉક•એ•વરા• (ગાઈનાં•) તોખમનો•હતો•માંટે•હકથી•એ•ધણીને•પાહાદશા•ગાહ•જોઈતુતુ*હાલનાં•પાહાદશા•ઉપર•રઈએતને•નારાજ•થવાનાં•ઘણાં•કારંણો•હતાં•માંટે•તેવો•ઈઆરકનાં•ખાંનદાંન•ઉપર•અનદેશો•કરવા•લાગાં*

ઇટલામાં•ઇક•ધણી•નાંમે•જાંન•કેડ•જુઠાઈથી•કેહેવા•લાગો•જે• હું•ઈઆરકનાં•ખાંનદાંનનો•છેઉં•માંટે•વાજબી•પાહદશા•હું•છેઉં•અને તેણે•ઘણાંઇક•લોકોને•ઇમશમજાવેઉં•ને•તેવો•હેનાં•મદતગાર•થાઆ* તેહેને•છેક•વીંશ•હજાર•મદત•કરનારાં•આદમીઓ•મલેઆં—શ્રી•લંડનની•પાશે•બલાક•હીથ•કરીને•જગો•છે•તાંહાં•ઇ•ધણી•આવી•પોહોચેઓ•અને•પછે•લંડન•ગીઆ*પણ•તરતજ•તેહેને•છેક•શ્રી•રાચેશટર•શૂધી•હાંકી•કાહાડેઓ•અનેતાંહાં•હેનાં•ઘણાંખરા•મીતરોઇ•હેને•તજેઆ*જેકોઇ•શખશ•હેને•મારી•નાંખીને•તે•કાંમ•બજા•લાવેશાની•નીરાંનીને•વાશતે•હેનુ•માંથુ•લાવી•આપશે•તેહેને•ઈનાંમ•આપેઆમાં•આવશે*તેવાર•કેડને•વેહેલોજ•પકરેઓ•ને•મારીનાંખેઓ•અને•તેહેનાં•માંથાંને•શ્રી•લંડનનાં•પુલ•ઉપર•ટાંગેઉં*

ઇ•શઘલો•બલવો•થાઓ•તેવારે•શ્રી•ઈઆરકનો•ડીઉક•ખુશી• થાઓ•શાચીજે•તેથી•કદાચીત•હેનો•પોતાનો•ખરો•દાવો•શાંભલેઆમાં આવે•અને•હેને•તખત•મલે*ઇણે•તરતજ•પોતાની•મરજી•બતલાવી* આઇ•વખતે•પાહદશાને•આજાર•થાઓ•અને•હેની•જગો•રાજ•કરવાને વાશતે•શ્રી•ઈઆરકનાં•ડીઉકને•ઠેરવેઓ*ઇક•વખત•જેવારે•હેને•રાજ કીધુ•પછે•પાહદશા•જેવારે•શારો•થાઓ•તેવારેબી•ઇ•ધણીઇ•પોતાનો•અધીકાર•પાછો•છોડી•દેવા•માંગેઓ•નહી*હવે•કદાચ•પાહદશાનાં•માયાલુ•શભાવથી•તેણે•શ્રી•ઈઆરકનાં•ડીઉકનો•દાવો•કબુલ•રાખેઓ•હતે•પણ•તેહેની•રાંણી•મારગારેટ•જે•હતી•તેહેનો•શભાવ•જુદોજ•હતો•અને•તેણીઇ•તે•ડીઉક•તથા•તેહેનાં•મીતરો•શંગાથે• ઉઘાડી•લડાઇ•કરવા•માંડી*હવે•ઈઆરક•તથા•લાંનકેશટરનાં•ખાંનદાંન•વચે•લડાઈ•શરૂ•થાઇ•કેજે•લડાઇ•ઇટલાં•બધાં•વરશ•શૂધી•ચાલી• અને•ઇટલી•બધી•દેહેશત•ભરેલી•કાપા•કાપી•તથા•ખુનરેજી•તથા•કજીઆ•ટંટા•થાઆ*રઈઇતનો•લડાઇથી•શઘલી•વેલા•નાશ•થાઇછે•પણ• ઇ•દેશ•માંહેની•લડાઇ•જેહેમાં•ઇક•વતનનાં•લોકો•તથા•શગાં•વાહાલાં•તથા•પરોશીઓ•ઇક•બીજા•શંગાથે•લડે•ઇ•શરવે•કરતાં•ઘણીજ• ભુડી•લડાઇ*જુદી•જુદી•જગોઇ•લડાઇઓ•થાઇ•તેહેની•શઘલી•બીના•હું•કેહેવાની•મેહેનત•લેશ•નહી•પણ•કોઇ•વેલા•ઇક•તરફનાં•લો

કોને•ફતેહે•મલી•અને•કોઈ•વેલા•બીજી•તરફના•લોકોની•ફતેહે•થાઈ*એ•લડાઈ•બલોરહીથ•આગલ•બીજી•વેકફીલડ•આગલ•અને•બે•લડાઈ•શેંટ•આલબનશ•આગલ•અને•એ•શીવાએ•બીજી•ઘણીએ•જગોએ•લડાઈઓ•થાઈ*

શ્રી•વેકફીલડની•લડાઈમાં•શ્રી•ઈઆરકનાં•ડીઉકની•ફોજે•શેકશત•ખાધી•અને•તે•ડીઉક•પોતે•મારેઆ•ગાઆ*તોપણ•હેની•તરફ•વાલાઓ•પાછા•બલવાંન•થાઆ•અને•ટીઉકશબરી•આગલ•લડાઈ•થાઈ•તેહેમાં•તેવો•ફતેહે•પાંમેઆ*તે•વેલાએ•શ્રી•ઈઆરકનાં•ડીઉકનાં•છોકરાને•પાદશાહ•કીધો•ને•તેહેને•૧૪૬૧•નાં•વરશમાં•ચોથા•એડવરડનો•ખેતાબ•આપીને•આશકારાં•કીધો*

પછે•હેવુ•કેહે•છેકે•એડવરડ•પાદશાહનાં•ભાઈ•શ્રી•ગલાશટરનાં•ડીઉકે•ગરીબ•બીચારા•હેનરી•પાદશાહને•તેહેનાં•ઓરડામાં•મારી•નાંખેઆ*એ•ડીઉકને•પછવાડેથી•તરીજા•રીચરડ•નાંમનો•ખુનંદા•પાદશાહ•કરી•કેહેતા•હતા•અને•હેનાં•ઘાતકી•ઘણાં•વીશે•આપણ•હેવી•દેહેશત•ભરેલી•બીના•વાંચીએ•અને•એજ•ગલાશટરે•તથા•શ્રી•શીકલારેનશનાં•ડીઉકે•ટીઉકેશબરીની•લડાઈ•થાઆ•પછે•હેનરીનાં•છોકરાને•પણ•કાપીનાંખેઆ*એ•પાદશાહીની•મેં•તમને•હેવી•બીના•કહી•તે•રાજમાં•લડાઈઓ•અને•ઘાતકી•ખુન•શીવાએ•બીજું•કઈ•આપણ•વાંચતા•નથી*હું•ધારૂંચકે•ઈઆરક•તથા•લાનકેશટરનાં•ખાંનદાંન•વચે•લડાઈઓ•થાઈ•તેહેનો•અરથ•હવે•તમે•શમજશો*એ•લડાઈઓને•કોઈ•વેલાએ“ગોલાબ”નીલડાઈ•કરી•કેહે•છે•શાવાશતેજે•લાનકેશટરની•તરફ•વાલાઓ•પોતાની•ટોપીમાં•લાલ•ગોલાબ•ખોશતા•હતા•અને•ઈઆરકની•તરફ•વાલાઓ•શફેદ•ગોલાબ•ખોશતા•હતા*જે•ગોશમમાં•ખરા•ગોલાબ•મલે•નહી•તેવારે•હું•ધારૂંચકે•લાલ•અને•શફેદ•પીતનાં•બનાવેલા•ગોલાબ•રાખતા•હતા*

તમે•જોઈચકે•લાનકેશટરનાં•ખાંનદાંનનાં•તરણ•પાદશાહ•થાઆ—અને•હવે•આપણ•ઈઆરકનાં•ખાંનદાંનની•વાત•કહીશુ*અને•તમે•જોવોચકે•લાનકેશટરનાં•ખાંનદાંન•વાલાઓને•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•હક•નહું•હતો•માંટે•તેવોને•કોઈ•વેલા•જુલમગાર•પાદશાહ•કરી•કેહેતા•હતા•શાવાશતેજે•પેહેલાંજ•ચોથા•હેનરીએ•વગર•હક•

જોર•જુલમથી•લીધું*માંટે•પરમાતમા•છઠા•હેનરીને•ગરે•(કવેશર•) “ગરીબ•છીનવી•લેનાર•”કરી•કેહે છે*

“તેહેની•રાંણીનાં•એતબારને•તથા•તેહનાં•બાપનાં•નાંમને માંનો•
અને•ગરીબ•છીનવી•લેનારનુ•પવીતર•માંથુબચાવો*”

શવાલો*

કીઆ•વરશમાં•છઠો•હેનરી•રાજ•કરવા•લાગો*

હેનો•બાપ•પાંચમો•હેનરી•મરંણ•પાંમીઓ•તારે•એ•કેટલા•વરશનો•હતો*

પાહાદશા•પોતે•રાજ•કરવાને•વાશતે•ઘણોજ•નાંધલી•વએનો•હતો• તારે•તે•રાજ•શંભાલવાને-વાશતે•કોણને•ઠરવેઓ•હતો*

શ્રી•બેડફરડનાં•ડીઉકે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•લડાઇ•ચલાવીશ્રૂ*

અને•તાંહાં•તેહેનાં•ફતેહે•થઈશ્રૂ*

કીઆ•આચરત•જેવા•બનાવ•બનેઆથી•ઇંગલીશ•લોકોનોજે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં અખતીઆર•હતોતે તેવોનાં•હાથથી•જતો•રહો*

જોન ઓફ આરક•કરીને•કોણ•હતી*

એણે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશનાં•કીઆં•શેહેરથી•ઇંગલીશની•ફોજને•કાહાડી•મુકી*

અંતે•હેને•ઇંગલીશ•લોકોએ•લડાઇમાં•પકડી•લીધીકે•શ્રૂં*

તેવોએ•તેહેને•શ્રૂ•કીધું*

એ•શઘલા વખતમાં•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમાં•કારભાર•કેમ•ચાલતો•હતો*

છઠો•હેનરી•ચોથા•હેનરીનો•શ્રૂં•શગો•હતો*

પાદશાહની•નશલનાં•એ•ખાંનદાંન•વાલાઓનો•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો• હક•હતો•કે•શ્રૂં*

શ્રૂ•એ•લાનકેશટરનું•ખાનદાંન•હતું•કે•નહી*

એ•ખાંનદાંનનાં•વડા•ભાઇની•ઓલાદથી•શ્રી•લાંનકેશટરનો•ડીઉક•ઉતરતો•આવેઓ•કે•નહી*

માંટે•શ્રું•તેહેને•પાદશાહ•થાઉ•જોઇતુ•હતુકે•નહી*

જેવારે•લોકો•હવડાનાં•પાદશાહ•શાથે•નારાજી•થાઆં•હતાં•તારે•તેહેને•બદલેઇઅરઆકનાં•ખાંનદાંનનાં•ઘણીને•રાજ•આપવા•તેવોએ•માંગેઉ•કેનહી*

તેથી•ફીશાદ થાવા•લાગો•શ્રૂં*

કીઆ•શખશ•પોતે•ઇઆરકનાં•વંઉશનો•હતો•હેવી•બુમ•ઉઠારજેની•તે•દેશનાં•લોકોને•પોતાને•મદત•કરાવા•તજવીજ•કીધી*

શૂ•કેડને•ઘણાં•લોકોઈ•મદત•કીધી*

કેટલાં*

કેડનું•શૂં•થઉં*

પાદશાહ•આજારી•પડેઓ•તેવારે•તેહેને•ઠેકાંણે•રાજ•ચલાવવાને•વાશતે•કોંણને•ઠેડવેઓ•હતો*

શ્રી•ઇઆરકનાં•ડીઉકને•જે•અધીકાર•મલેઓ•તે•પોતાનાં•હાતમાં•રાખવાની•તેણે•મેહેનત•કીધી•કે•શૂં*

હેવું•થઆથી•ઇઆરક•તથા•લાનકેશટરનાં•ખાંનદાંન•વચે•લડાઇઓ•થઇ•શૂં*

હેનરીની•બાઈડીનુ•નાંમ•શૂ†*

ઈ•રાંણીઈ•શૂં•કાંમ•કીધું*

ઇઆરક•તથા•લાનકેશટર •વાલાઓમાં• શૂં•ઘણી•લડાઈઓ•થઇ•કે•શૂં*

કેઇ•લડાઇમાં•શ્રી•ઇઆરકનાં•ડીઉકની•ફોજ•હારી•ને•તે•પોતે•મારેઓ•ગીઓ*

કેઈ•લડાઇમાં•ડીઉકની તરફનાં•લોકો•પાછા•બલવાંન•થાઆ•અને•ફાવેઆ*

ઇઆરકની•તરફ•વાલાઓ•ફતેહપાંમેઆ•તેપછેકીઓ•ધણી•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•બેઠો*

ચોથો•ઈડવરડ•પાદશાહ•થાઓ•તેવારે•છઠા•હેનરીનું• શૂં•થાઉં*

શ્રી•ગલાશટરનો•ડીઉક•ઈકોણ•તથા•તેહેની•આબરૂ•કેહેવી•હતી*

ઇઆરકની•અને•લાનકેશટરની•લડાઇઓને•ગુલાબની• લડાઇ•કોઇ•વેલાઈ•શાશારુ•કેહેતા•હતા*

કેઇ•તરફ•વાલાઓ•(ટોપીમાં•)લાલગુલાબ•ખોશતા•હતા•અને•કીઆં શફેદ•ગોલાબ•ખોશતા•હતા*

લાનકેશટરનાં•ખાંનદાંનનાં•આપરા•કેટલા•પાદશાહ•થાઆ*

†શ્રી•આનજોવાલીમાર•ગારેટ*

LETTER XVII.

MY DEAR BOY,

As you seem desirous of attending to these short accounts which I send you of the reigns of the English kings, I am glad to write to you on this subject. If you remember well what I write, you will get a view of some of the principal parts of our history; and, when you are old enough to study a larger History of England, you will, perhaps, be able to gain more advantage from it than if you had begun with a large one at first; and even now, by means of these short accounts, you will not be wholly ignorant of the history of your own country.

In my last letter, I told you that Edward, the son of the duke of York, was proclaimed king, in the year 1461, by the title of Edward the Fourth. We are informed, that he was one of the finest and handsomest-looking men in the kingdom! But I have no respect for him on that account. I cannot read of any thing that was good in his conduct,—but I read of a great deal that was very disgraceful and wicked. He was dreadfully cruel, and revengeful, and profligate. The following story will show you the cruelty of his disposition, and his revengeful spirit. It happened one day, that he was hunting in the park of a gentleman, named Thomas Burdett. Now this gentleman was a great friend of the duke of Clarence, the king's brother: and, as the king was angry with his brother, on account of an old quarrel, he was glad to do a spiteful action to his brother's friend; and he, accordingly, killed a white buck which belonged to this gentleman, and which was a great favourite. Upon this, Burdett flew into a passion, and said, he wished the horns of the deer were in the belly of the man who advised the king to this insult. For these words, Burdett was tried for his life, and hanged at Tyburn. A horrible piece of cruelty, the thoughts of which make us glad that we do not live in such days of tyranny and oppression. We may be sure that the duke of Clarence was grieved and angry at this savage act of revenge, as well as at the loss of his friend; and he spoke out his sentiments plainly, and said that the sentence was both unjust and cruel. For speaking these words, the king ordered the duke of

Clarence himself to be put to death; and there is a strange story about the manner in which this sentence was executed. It is said, that the duke was allowed to choose what death he would die: and he chose to be drowned in a butt of Malmsey, a wine of which, it seems, he was very fond. Accordingly, a large cask of this wine was brought into the Tower, and into this the duke was thrown, with his head downwards, and thus was drowned.

The king was preparing for a war against the French, when he was seized with an illness, of which he soon afterwards died, at the age of about forty-one. This was in the year 1483.

It is impossible to read the history of ancient times, without shuddering at the horrible cruelties which were committed, and the tyrannical manner in which many of the kings of England, in former days, reigned over their people. And it seems that, in the days we are reading of, they were allowed to commit most dreadful acts of oppression, without any sort of check or control. How happy ought we to think ourselves, that we are secure, in these days, from such cruelties and oppressions! There are many people now who complain of the want of liberty, and talk a great deal against the king and the government, and seem full of anger and envy against every body who is richer and greater than themselves. I cannot help seeing that the greater part of these complaints are made without any reason at all. I am sure, if we would fairly consider these things, as we ought to do, that, instead of murmuring and complaining, we should find a great deal indeed to be thankful for. Such cruelties, as we read of in history, could not be practised in our days. Our king and our nobles do not seem to have any wish to injure their inferiors; but, if they had such a wish, the laws would not allow them to do it; and we ought to consider it a great blessing that we live under such just and merciful laws. The poor, as well as the rich, are defended against any injury to their persons or, their possessions; and we have all liberty to do every thing that is good and right for us to do, I never could make out what people meant by the cry of liberty, which we often hear so much of. I have lived to be an old man: and I never in all my life-time found that there was any law to prevent me from doing any thing that a Christian man ought to wish to do. As to my going and taking any other man's property, I am thankful to say, that I never had any wish for it:—if I had, the laws would have checked me, and very properly too; —but the same laws protect *my* property likewise. If a person is richer than I am, I have no liberty to go and take away his property from him; and this is very proper:—and nobody has any right to take away mine. This sort of restraint is good and necessary for us all; and, instead of taking away real liberty, is the very way to give us true security and happiness. But I am getting away from the History of England, and shall therefore stop.

I am, my dear boy,
Your affectionate father.

* * *

QUESTIONS.

In what year did Edward the Fourth come to the throne?
What was his appearance?
What was his character?
Can you relate the stroy of king Edward and the duke of Clarence, and sir Thomas Burdett? Try to relate it to me, in a clear and distinct manner; I don't require every word as it is in the book, but show me that you remember it; and it will be a piece of good practice for you that you may learn to express yourself in a straight-forward manner, without hesitating and stammering.
What relation was the duke of Clarence to the king?
Was the king about to engage in war?
Against what nation?
What prevented this?
How old was the king when he died?
In what year did he die?

પતર• ૧૭

માહારા•પેઆરા•છોકરા•

શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•પાહાદશાવોની•જે•ખીના•હુ•તમને•લખી•મોકલુય•તે•ઉપર•તમે•ધ્યાંન•રાખવા•માંગોય•માંટે•ઈ•બાબત•વીસે•હુ•તમને•લખી•મોકલવાને•ખુશી•છેઉ*હુ•જે•લખુય•તે•તમે•શારી•પખે•ઈઆદ•રાખશો•તો•આપણાં•(દેશની•)વારતાનો•ઘણો•ખરો•ભા

ગા•તમે જાંણશો• અને• જેવારે•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડની•વધારે•મોહોટી•વારતા શીખો• તેટલા• મોહોટા•થાશો•તેવારે•કદાચ• પેહેલવેહેલાં• લાંમબી• વારતા• શરૂ• કીધી•હતે• ને•જે•તમને• નફો•થતે• તે•કરતાં•તમને• તેથી વધારે•નફો•થાશે• અને• હવડાંબી•એ•ટુકા• એહેવાલથી•તમે•પોતાનાં દેશની• વારતાથી•બીલકુલ• અણજાણાં• નહી• હશો*

માહારાં•ગઈઆં•પતરમાં• મે•તમને•કહું• હતું• કે•શ્રી•ઈઆરક નાં•ડીઉકનાં• છોકરા• એડવરડને• ૧૪૬૧ નાં•વરશમાં•પાહાદશા•કીધો•ને•ચોથા•એડવરડનો• ખેતાબ• આપેઓ*આપંણને•માલંમ•પડેચ કે•રાજમાં•એ•ઘણી•શરવેથી •ખુબશૂરત•હતો*પંણ•તેટલા•વીશે•હુ તેહેને•માંન આપતો•નથી* હેની•ચાલ•શારી•હતી• હેવું•મહને•જણાંનુ• નથી• પંણ• હેનામાં• ઘણાંજ• નીલાજરાં• અને• પાણી• (લખાંણ•) હતાં• તે• હું•વાંચુચ*એ• ઘણી•ગતીઘણો•ઘાતકી• અને• કપટી•તથા• લુછો• હતો*હેઠલ• કહેલી• વાતથી• હેનાં• શગાવનુ• ઘાતકીપણું• તથા• હેનુ• કીનાંખોર• દેલ• તમને• માલંમપડશે* એક• દાહાડે• હેવું• બનેઉંકે• પાદશાહ• ટાંમશ• બરડેટ•નાંમનાં•શખશનાં•વગીચામાં•શેકાર•કરતો•હતો*એ•શખશ•પાદશાહનો•લાડ•શ્રી• કલારેનશનાં•ડીઉકનો•એક• મોહોટો• દોશત• હતો•અને•પાહાદશા•પોતાનાં•લાડ•શાથે•એક•આગલા•કજીઆને•લીધે• ગુશે•થાએલો•હતો• તેથી•તેણે• પોતાનાં•લાડનાં•દોશતની•ઉપર•વેર• લેવા•ચાહેઉં•માંટે• પાદશાહે• તે•શખશનુ•એક•ઉજરૂ•હરંણ•કેજે• તેહેને•ઘણુંજ• પેઆરુ• હતું• તે•મારીનાંખેઉં*તેઉપરથી• બરડેટ•ગુશામાં• આવેઓ• અને•કહુંકે• હું• હેવુ•ચાંહુચકે• જે•માંણશે• પાદશાહને• •હરંણને• મારવાની•શલાહ• આપી• હેનાં• પેટમાં•એ• હરંણનાં• શીગાડાં• નાકાએ* હેવુ• બોલેઓ•માંટે• બરડેટનાં•વાંકની•છાંડંણ•થાઈ•અને• તેહેને•શ્રી•ટાઈબરનમાં•ફાંશી•દીધો*એ•ઘણુંજ•ખરાબ• ઘાતકીપણું•હતું• તેથી• આપંણ•ખુશી•થાઈએચકે• તેહેવા•જુલંમ•તથા• જબર•જશતીનાં•જમાંનાંમે•આપરે•જનમેઆ•નથી*આપુને•નીશચે•કરી•જાંણવુ•જોઈએ જે• હેવુ• બેશરમ•ભરેલુ• ઘાતકી•કાંમ•થાએઆથી•તથા• પોતાનાં• દોશતનાં• મરણ•પાંમેઆથી•શ્રી• કલારેનશનો•ડીઉક•ઘણો•દુખી•થાએઓ•અને•તેણે• પોતાનો•વીચાર• મોટેથી•ઉઘાડો•કરી•કહો•અને•

કુંકે•એ•ચુકાદો•ગેર•વાજબી•તથા•ઘાતકી•પણાં•ભરેલો•હતો*શ્રી•કલારેનશનો•ડીઉક•હેવુ•બોલેઓ•તેથી•પાદશાહે•તે•ડીઉકનેબી•મારી•નાંખવાનો•હોકંમ•આપેઓ —એ•હોકંમ•બજાવેઓ•તે•વીશેની•એ•અચરત•શરખી•વાત•કેહેછે*એવુ•કેહેછેકે•તે•ડીઉકને•ગમે•તેહેવી•રીતે•મરણ•પાંમવાની•છુટ•આપી•હતી• — તેથી•તેણે•પોતેએ•જાતનો•દારુ•કે•જે•તેહેને•ઘણોજ•ગમતો•હતો•તે•દારુનાં•પીપમાં•ડુબીને•મરવા•ચાહેઉ*તેટલાશારૂં•તે•દારુનુ•એ•મોહોટુ•પીપ•ભરીને•બંદીખાનાંમો•લાવેઆ•અને•તેહેમાં•તે•ડીઉકને•ડોકી•પકડીને•નાંખેઓ•અને•તેહને•ડુબાવેઓ*

પાહાદશા•શ્રી•ફરાંશનાં•લોકો•શંગાથે•લડાઇ•કરવાને•વાશતે•તઇઆરી•કરતો•હતો•તેટલામાં•તે•આજારી•પડેઓ•તેપછે•તરત•જ•તે રોગથી•આશરે•૪૧ વરશની•વઇમાં•મરણપાંમેઓ* તે•બનાંવ• ૧૪૮૩ નાં•વરશમાં•બનેઓ*

જેવેલાએ•આપણ•અશલનાં•વખતની•વારતા•વાંચીઇયે•તેવારે•જેકાંઇ•નીલાજરાં•ઘાતકી•કાંમો•થાઆં•તથા•શ્રી•ઇંગ્લંડનાં•પાદશાહઓએ•પોતાની•રઇઅત•ઉપર•જુલમાત•ભરેલાં•રાજ•કીધાં•તે•જોઇને•આપરે•દુખી•થાઆ•વનાં•રેહેતા•નથી*અને•હેવું•નજર•આવેચકે•જે•વખતની•આપણ•વારતા•કહીઇયે•તે•વખતમાં•પાહાદશાઓ•ઘણાજ•ભઅંકાર•ભરેલાં•જુલમનાં•કાંમ•કરતા•હતા•પંણ•તેવોને•કોઇમનાં•અથવા•અટકાવ•કરનુ•નહી•હતું*આએ•જમાંનાંમાં•હેવી•હેવા•શખતીથી•તથા•જુલમથી•આપરે•દુર•અને•નચીત છેઇએ•માંટે•આપરે•કેહેવા•સુખી•છેઇએ*હવડાં•ઘણાંજ•લોકો છે•કે•જેવો•ફરીઆદ•કરેચકે•તેમને છુટાપણું•નથી•અને•તેવો•પાહાદશાહ•તથા•રાજ•ચલાવનારાઓની•શાંમણે•ઘણુંએ•બોલેચ•અને•જેકોઇ શખશ•કે•તેવોના•કરતાં•વધારે•તાલેવંત•તથા•વધારે•મોહોટા•હોઇયે•તેહેનાં•ઉપર•તેવો•ગોસે•થાઇયે•તથા•તેહેની•અદેખાઇ•કરેચ*હેમાંની•ઘણીખરી•ફરીઆદમાં•કાંઇજ•કારણ•નથી•તે•હું•જોઇ•શકતો•નથી* મહને•નીશચેછેકે•અગરજો•આપરે•એ•ચીજોને•અદલ•ઇનશાફથી•જેમ•આપણને•વીચારેઉં•જોઇએ•તેમ•વીચારીએતો•નારાજી•થાવા•તથા•ફરીઆદ•કીધાને•બદલે•આપંણને•ઘણાંજ•સુકરાંનાં•કીધાં•જોઇએ*જે•હેવી

શખતીઓ•આપણ•વારતાઓમાં•વાંચીઈચે• તે•આપરા•જમાંનાંમાં•થાઈ•શકે•નહી*આપણો•પાદશાહ•તથા•આપણાં•અમીરો• તેમનાં•તાબેદારોને•દુખ•દેવાની• મરજી•રાખતા•નથી• પણ•અગારજો• તેવો•હેવી•મરજી•રાખતા• હોઈ• તોબી•કાઈદાથી•તેવો• તેમ•કરીશકે•નહી અને•આપણાં•હુકમાં•ઈ•વાત•ઘણી•શારી છે•કે•આપણાં•અદલ• અને દઆલુ •કાઈદા છે*ગરીબનાં•અથવા•તવંગારનાં•બદનને•ઈઆ•તેવોની મીલકતને•નુકશાંન•થાતુ•નથી•પણ• તે•(કાઈદાથી)બનચેછે•અને•જેકાંઈ શારું• અને• ઘટતું• હોઈછે• તે• શઘલું•કરવાની• આપણને•શરવે•વાતથી છુટછે*લોકો•જે •છુટા•પણાંનો•બુમાટો•ઉડારેચ•અને•જે•વીશે•આપણ• ઘણી•વખત•ઈટલું•બધું•શાંભલીઈચે• તેહનો•માઈનો•શું•તે•હું•કહી• શમજતો•નથી*હું•બુઢો•આદમી•થઓચ•અને• મેં•માહારા•શઘલા•જનમારામાં•કદી•જાંણેઉંતું•નહી•કે•જેકાંઈ•ખરીશટીઆંન•ધરંમ•પાલનાર•આદમીને•કીધું•જોઈઈ• તે•કરવાથી•મહને•અટકાવ•થાઈ• હેવો•કોઈબી•કાઈદો•મેં• જોઈઓ•નથી*હું•શુકર•કરીને•કેહુંચકે•હું•જઈને•બીજા•કોઈઆદમીની•મીલકત•લેઉ•હેવી•માહારી ઈછા•કદી•થઈ•નથી• અને•અગારજો• હેવી•માહારી•ઈછા•હતે તો•વાજબીજાંરીને•શીરેશતાથી•મહને•અટકાવ• કરતે — પણ• તેજ•શીરેશતા•માહારી•મીલકતનેબી•બનચાવેચ* અગારજો•કોઈ•શખશ• માહારા•કરતાં•વધારે•તવંગાર•હોઈતો•જઈને• તેહની•પાશેથી•તેહેની•મીલકત• લેવાની•મહને•છુટ•નથી•અને•ઈ•ઘટતું છે — અને•માહારી•મીલકતબી• લેવાનો•કોઈનો•હક•નથી*હેવો•અટકાવ•આપણ•શરવેનાં•હુકમાં•શારો• અને• ઘટતો છે•અને• ખરું•છુટાપણું•છીનવીં•લીધાને• બદલે•આપણને•નચીતાઈ• અને•શુખ•મલેચ*પણ•હું•શ્રી•ઈંગાલંડની•વારતાથી•વેગલો•જાઉંચ•માંટે•હવે•બશ•કરુંચ*

હું• છું•માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•
તમારો•માઆલુ•બાપ*

શવાલો*

કીઆં•વરશમાં•ચોથો•ઈડવરડ•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો*

તેહેની•શુરત•કેહેવી•હતી*

તેહેની•આબરૂ•કેહેવી•હતી*

ઈડવરડ•પાદશાહ•તથા•શ્રી•કલારેનશનો•ડીઉક•તથા•શર•ટામશ•બરડેટ•ની•વાત•કહો*શાપ•અને•શમજણ•પડે•કહેવી•રીતે•તે•વાત•કહો — જેપરમાણે•ચોપડીમાં•લખેલું છે•તેમ•બોલે·બોલ•શું•શાંભલવા•માંગાતા•નથી•પણ•મહને•કહેવું•જાણવા•દેવોકે•તમને•તે•વાત•ઉઆદછે•અને•તમે•શીધી•રીતે•આપકેઆ•અને•થરથરેઆ•વીનાં•બોલવા•શીખ્યો તો•તમને•ઘણોજ•શારો•અને આશા•થાએ*

શ્રી•કલારેનશનો•ડીઉક•પાદશાહનો•શો•શગો•થાએ*

પાદશાહ•લડાઈ•કરવા•માંગાતા હતા•શું*

કીઆ•લોકો•શંગાથે*

કેનો•શાથી•અટકાવ•થાએઓ*

પાદશાહ•જેવારે•મરણ•પામેઓ•તેવારે•તે•કેટલા•વરશની•વએનો•હતો*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરણ•પામેઓ*

LETTER XVIII.

MY DEAR BOY,

I TOLD you, in my last letter, that Edward the Fourth died in the year 1483. He left three children, two sons and a daughter. The eldest son was named Edward, and the next Richard: the daughter's name was Elizabeth. The eldest son was, therefore, now Edward the Fifth; but, as he was too young to govern, being only thirteen years of age, his uncle, Richard, duke of Gloucester, was appointed Protector. This was the same man, as I have already told you, who was afterwards Richard the Third, and is sometimes called Crooked-back Richard; because they say that he was born with a shrivelled and crooked form;—and his mind was still worse than his body. Instead of taking care of his little nephews, he determined to kill them, that he might be king himself. But, as these children had many friends ready to defend and protect them, their bloody-minded uncle thought, that, before he could kill them, he must get rid of their friends.

There was a powerful man, Lord Hastings, who was a great friend to the young king and his brother; and, therefore, Crooked-back Richard was determined to kill him; and, for this purpose, he one day summoned him to a council, in the Tower of London. When the council was assembled, Richard came in, frowning and looking very frightful; and the lords of the council saw that something terrible was going to happen. Then Richard showed them his bare, withered arm, and said that Jane Shore and her accomplices had withered it by their witchcraft; which you know, was a mere pretence, because all stories about witchcraft are idle tales: and, besides, they all believed that Richard's arm was shrivelled when he was born. Lord Hastings said, "if they have done so, they deserve to be punished." "if!" said the Protector, with a loud voice; "dost hou answer me with 'Ifs?' I tell thee, that they have laid a plot for my death; and that thou thyself art one of them." He then struck the table twice; and a number of armed soldiers immediately came in. Richard ordered them to take Lord Hastings away; and he made a vow that he would not dine till he had seen his head taken off. And his head was immediately struck off on a block of wood that happened to be near the place.

The more we look back upon the history of our country, the more reason we have to be thankful that we live in times when no person, however high his rank, would be allowed to commit such dreadful barbarity. I have often made this remark to you before, and I see fresh reason to repeat it, the more I consider the true state of things in former days and at present.

I mentioned Jane Shore. She was the wife of a citizen of London, a goldsmith in Lombard-street; and she had left her husband to live with the late king, Edward the Fourth. For this wickedness she was severely punished; yet, it was not because of her real crimes that Richard was enraged against her, but because she felt compassion for the late king's children, and was desirous of taking their part against their cruel uncle. It was formerly the custom for persons who had been guilty of any notorious crime, to do penance as it was called; that is, to walk to church barefooted, in a white sheet, with a candle in their hands; Jane Shore walked in this manner through the streets of London to St. Paul's Church; and, after this, every one was forbidden to give her any thing to eat or drink, or to take her into their houses; and thus she wandered about in the greatest misery and poverty; which she must have felt the more severely, from having formerly been accustomed to every kind of luxury and splendour:—and the sense of her own sins, no doubt, hung heavy upon her mind. Every body, however, pitied her, because, though she had been guilty of a great crime, yet she had been kind and generous when she had the power. But nobody dared assist her; and, after wandering about a long time, in rags and poverty, she at last sunk down and died.

The wicked Richard now began to think of taking possession of the throne; and, by his hypocrisy and false pretences, he persuaded many of the people to be on his side. And then the mayor and aldermen of London came and offered him the crown. He pretended that he did not wish to be king; but this was only a piece of deceit to hide his wicked design. He thought, however, that he could not reign in peace, as long as his nephews lived; and, therefore, he determinded to murder the young king, and his little brother, the duke of York. He ordered Brackenbury, the governor of the Tower, to put them both to death. This merciful man refused to be guilty of such a crime; he was, therefore, removed from his office, and another person, called Sir James Tyrrel, was put into his place. This Tyrrel hired three cruel wretches to do the dreadful deed; they came at night, when the dear children were fast asleep, and they went into the chamber and smothered them both with pillows, whilst the wretch Tyrrel stood at the door. Then they buried the bodies at the foot of the stairs, and covered them up, and put the stone pavement in its place again, so that, for a long time, nobody knew where the bodies were. They were found by some workmen under the stairs, many years afterwards.

The reign of poor Edward the Fifth, you see, was very short, not many months; and, indeed, as he was, during this time, shut up in the Tower, and was there cruelly murdered in his childhood, he cannot properly be said to have reigned at all.

And now, this wicked duke of Gloucester was king, by the title of Richard the Third. His reign was so cruel and tyrannical, that he was detested by all his subjects, and they heartily wished to get rid of him. This encouraged the duke of Richmond to raise an army, and to endeavour to get the crown from the detested Richard. This duke of Richmond belonged to the red rose party, that is, the house of Lancaster; and he had been obliged to quit the kingdom whilst the kings of the house of York were in power. Trusting that the people, from hatred of their tyrant, would support his cause, he came over from France with a small army, and landed at Milford-haven, in Wales, without opposition. Richard, who was a bold man, soon prepared to meet him. Richmond had been joined by many of the English; and the two armies met at Bosworth-Field, in Leicestershire, when Richmond was completely successful, and Richard was killed.

Richmond was then proclaimed king, by the title of *Henry the Seventh*, to the great joy of the nation. It is true that he had no real right to the crown; he got it by conquest; but the people were so glad to get rid of Richard, that they did not seem desirous of inquiring too strictly into the claims of Henry.

In this letter I have given you an account of *two* kings, Edward the Fifth and Richard the Third. The first was king about two months; the other about two years, being killed in Bosworth-Field, in the year 1485.

I am, &c.

QUESTIONS.

In what year did Edward the Fourth die?
How many children did he leave?
What were their names?
How old was the eldest when his father died?
Who was oppointed Protector?
What was the Protector's character?
What nobleman did the Protector put to death?
Under what pretence?
What was the real reason why he destroyed Lord Hastings?
Who was Jane Shore?
How was she punished?
How did the protector treat the young king and his brother?
Is it supposed that the bodies of these young princes were found some years afterwards?
Is it supposed that the bones afterwards found in the Tower, by some workmen, belonged to these young princes?
Who became king after the death of these children?
How did Richard conduct himself?
Who raised an army against him?
What was the consequence of the duke of Richmond's opposition to Richard?
Where was the battle fought between them?
Who then became king?
In what year was Richard the Third killed?

પતર• ૧૮

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

માહારાં•ગઈઆં•પતરમાં• મેં•તમને•કહુ•હતુ•જે•ચોથો•ઈડવરડ• ૧૪૮૩ નાં•વરશમાં• મરંણ• પાંમેઆ* તેહેનાં• તરંણ• છોકરાં• હતાં• તેમાં•બે•છોકરા• અને•ઈક• છોકરી•હતી*વડા• છોકરાનુ•નાંમ•ઈડવરડ હતુ•અને• બીજાનુ•નાંમ•રીચરડ•હતુ•અને• તે• છોકરીનુ•નાંમ•ઈલીસેબેથ• હતુ*માંટે• હવે•વડો• છોકરો• પાંચમો•ઈડવરડ• પાહાદશા•થાઆ• પણ તે•રાજ•કરવાને•વાસતે • ઘણોજ• નાંહાંનો• તેર•વરશની•ઉમરનો હતો•માંટે• તેહેનો•રીચરડ•કાકો•શ્રી•ગલાશટરનો•ડીઊક•હતો•તેહેને રાજનો•શાંભાલ•કરનાર•ઠેરવેઆ* મે•તમને•આગલ•કહોય તેજ•ઈ•શાખશછે—ઈ•ઘણી•પછવાડેથી• તરીજો•રીચરડ•પાહાદશા• થાઆ•અને•હેને•કોઈ• વેલા• વાંકી•પીઠનો•ઈઆને•ખુન પો• રીચરડ•કરી• કેહે છે• શાવાશ તેજે• તે•જનમથી•વાંકાં•બદનજો• પેદા•થાઆ•હતો• અને• હેનાં•આં

ગા• કરતાં• હેનુ• દેલ• ઘણુંજ• ખરાબ• હતું* તેણે• પોતાનાં• નાંહાના• ભતરીજાઓની• શંભાલ• લીધાને• બદલે• તેઓને• મારી• નાંખવાનો• વીચાર• કીધો• એટલાંવાશતે જે• તે• પોતે• પાદશાહ• થાએ* પણ• એ• છોકરાંઓને• તેમનાં• ઘણાં• દોશદારો• તેઓને• બચાવવા• તથા• મદત• કરવા• તઈઆર• હતા• માંટે• તેઓનાં• ખુની• દેલનાં• કાકાએ• વીચારેઉં જે• તેઓને• મારી• નાંખેઆની• આગામચ• તેઓનાં• દોશદારોને• વેગલા• કાહાડવા• જોઈએ*

લારડ• હેશટીંગશ• નાંમનો• એક• ઘણોજ• કાબુ• વાલો• ધણી• હતો• તે• એ• જવાંન• પાદશાહનો• તથા• તેહેનાં• ભાઈનો• મોહોટો• દોશત• હતો• અને• તેટલાશારૂ• ખુનધા• રીચરડે• તેહેને• મારી• નાંખવાનો• મનશૂબો• કીધો• અને• એ• કાંમને• વાશતે• તેણે• એક• દીવશે• શ્રી• લંડનનાં• બુરજમાં• એક• શભા• થાઈ• તાંહાં• હેશટીંગશને• બોલાવી• મંગાવેઓ* જેવારે• કે• તે• શભા• ભરાઈ• તેવારે• રીચરડ• ચીડાતો• અને• ઘણો• ગુશે• થાતો• અંનદર• આવેઓ• અને• તે• શભા• વાલા• ઉમરાવોએ• જોએઉં કે• કાંઈ• ઘણું• ભુંડુ• કાંમ• થાવાનુ• હશે* તેવારપછે• રીચરડે પોતાનો• શૂંકાઈગીએલો• હાથ• ઉઘાડો• કરીને• તેઓને• દેખાડેઓ• અને• કહું કે• જેનશોર† તથા• તેહેનાં• શોબતીઓએ• જાદુથી• એ• હાથને• શૂકવી• નાંખેઓચ—તમે• જાંણો• ચ કે• એ• (જાદુનું) અમશથકુ• બાંહાંનુ• કાહાડેઉં• કાંએ જે• જાદુની• શબલી• વાતો• જુઠી• હોએ છે• અને• તેશીવાએ• તેઓ• શરવે• ખચીત• કરીને• જાંણતા• હતા• જે• રીચરડ• પેદા• થાએઓ• તે• દાહાડાનો• હેનો• હાથ• શૂકાઈ• ગીએલો• હતો* લારડ હેશટીંગશ• બોલેઓ કે• “અગરજો• તેઓએ• હેવું• કીધુચ તો• તેઓને• શજા• દેવી• લાએક છે*” રીચરડ• મોહોટે• આવાજે• બોલેઓ• “શૂં• અગરજો—તું• મહને• ‘અગરજો•’ કહીને• હેવો• જવાબ• આપવાની• તાકત• રાખેચ? હું• તુહુને• કેહુંચ કે• તેઓએ• મહને• મારી• નાખવાનો• મનશૂબો• કીધોચ• અને• તેહેમાં• તુબી છે”* પછે• તેણે• બે• વખત• ટેબલ• ઠોકી• અને• તરતજ• કેટલાએક• હથીઆરબંદ• શીપાઈઓ• અંદર• આવેઆ* રીચરડે• તેઓને• હોકંમ• કીધો કે• લારડ• હેશટીંગશને• પકડી• લઈજાએ• અને• તેણે• શોગંદ• ખાધા કે• જાંહાંશૂધી• હું• હેનું• માથું• કાપી• નાખતાં• જોશ• નહી• તાંહાંશૂધી• હું• ખાવાનો• નહી* અને• તે• જગોની• આ

---

† એ• જેન• શોર• ચોથા• એડવરડની• રાખેલી• બાએડી• હતી*

ગલ એક લાકડાંનુ ઢીમલું હતું તેઉપર મેલીને હેનું માથું તરતજ કાપી નાંખેઉ*

આપણાં પોતાંનાં દેશની અગાઉની વારતા જેમ વધારે જોઈએચ તેમ તેમ આપરે શૂકરાંનાં કરીએચ કે આપરે હેવા વખતમાં છેઈએ કે જે વખતમાં કોઈ શખશ ગમે તે હેવા મોહોટા દરજાનો હેએ પંણ તેહેનાંથી હેવું જુલ્મ અને ઘાતકી કાંમ થાઈ શકે નહી* મે તમને અગાઉ ઘણી વખત એ વીચાર કહેલો છે અને જેવારે કે અગાઉનાં વખતમાં અને હવડાંનાં વખતમાં કાંમ કેમ ચાલતુ હતું તે વીશે હુ વધારે વીચાર કરૂચ તેવારે તે વીચાર ફરીથી કેહેવાનું મહને બીજું નવુ કારંણ દીસેચ*

હું એ જેનશોરનુ નાંમ દીધું હતું* શ્રી લંડંન શેહેરનાં રેહેવાશી એક શોની કે જે લાંમબારડ ઈશતરીટ નાંમનાં મોહોલામાં રેહેતો હતો તેહેની એ બાએડી થાએ અને તેણીએ પોતાનાં ભરથારને મેલી દેઈને તેમરનાર ચોથા એડવરડ પાદશાહ શંગાથે રેહેતી હતી* એ દુશટ કાંમને વાશતે તેહેને ઘણીજ કઠંણ શીખશા મલી તોપંણ તેહેનાં ખરા અપરાધને વાશતે રીચરડ તેહેનાં ઉપર ગોશે થાઓ નહી પંણ તેણે મરંણ પાંમેલા પાદશાહનાં છોકરાંઓની દયા ખાધી અને તેવોનાં ઘાતકી કાકાની શાંમણેં થાઈને તેવોની તરફ થાવાને ચાહેહું તેવાશતે તે રીચરડ તેહેનાંઉપર રીશે ભરાએઓ* અગાઉનાં વખતમાં હેવો શીરેશતો હતો કે જે શખશોએ કાંઈ મોહોટો ગુનાહ કીધો હોએ તેવોને તપ કરવી પડતી હતી એટલે જે આંગ ઉપર શફેદ ચાદર હોડીને હાથમાં બતી પકડીને ઉઘાડે પગે ચાલતા દેવલમાં જવું જેનશોર હેવી રીતે ચાલતી શ્રી લંડંન શેહેરમાં રશતામાં થઈને શેનટ પાલનાં દેવલમાં જાતી હતી અને એ પછે કોઈ શખશ તેહેને કાંઈ ખાવા પીવાનું આપે નહી અથવા કોઈ હેને પોતાનાં ઘરમાં લીએ નહી હેવી મંને થાઈ (એટલે જે તેહેને નેઆત બાહેર કાહાડી મેલી) એપરમાંણે તે અશતરી અતીઘણાં દુખ તથા દલદરીમાં ભટકતી ફરતી હતી અને તે દુખ તેહેને ઘણુંજ લાગુ હશે કાંએજે આગામચ હરેક તરેહેની મોજ તથા મોહોટાઈ કરવાની તેહેની આશરમ પડી હતી અને હેમાં કશો શંધે નથી કે તેહેનાં દેલમાં પોતાનાં પાપનો પશતા

વો•ત્યારે•હશે*તોપણ•શરવ•કોઈ•તેહેની•દયા•કરતુંહતું•કાંઈ જે•તે•ત્યારે•તકશીરવાર•થાઈલી•હતી•તોબી•જેવારે•તેહેનાંમાં•શકતી•હતી•તેવારે•તે•મા આલુ•તથા•શખી•હતી*પણ•કોઈથી•તેહેની•મદત•થાઈ•શકે•નહી•અને•ઘણોઈક•વખત•શુધી•ચીથરાં•પેહેરીને•દલદરીમાં•ભટકીને•પછે•અંતે•ઝુરીગઈ•અને•મરણપાંમી*

હવે•ઈ•પાપી•રીચરડ•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•વીચાર•કરવા•લાગો•અને•ફૈશલાવેઆથી•તથા•જુઠાં•બાંહાંનાથી•તેણે•ઘણાં•લોકોને•પોતાની•તરફ•ખેંચી•લીધા*તેવારે•શ્રી•લંનડંનનાં•મેઅર•અને•આલડરમેન•(ઈટલે જે•અમલ•તથા•હોદેદારે•) આવીને•તેહેને•તાજ•આપેઉં*તેણે•હેવો•ઢોંગ•કીધોકે•હું•પાહાદશા•થવા•ચાહાતો•નથી•પણ•પોતાનો•નાપાક•મનશુબો•શાંતી•રાખવાને•વાશતે•તેણે•હેવી•ઠગ•વીદેઆ•કીધી*તેણે•હેવું•જાંણેઉંકે•જાંહાંલગણ•તેહેનાં•ભતરીજા•જીવતા•છે•તાંહાંશુધી•તેહેનાંથી•શંપતમાં•રાજ•થાઈ•નહી•માંટે•તેણે•જવાંન•પાહાદશાને•તથા•તેહેનાં•નાંહાના•ભાઈ•શ્રી•ઈઆરકનાં•ડીઉકને•મારીનાંખવાનો•ઈરાદો•કીધો*તેણે•બરાકનબરી• નાંમનાં•તે•બંદીખાંનાંનાં•અમલદારને•હોકંમ•કીધો•જે•તેવોને•મારી•નાંખે*ઈ•દયાલુ•આદમીઈ•હેવો•અપરાધ•કરવા•નાપાડી•માંટે•તેહેને•તે•હોદા•ઉપરથી•કાહાડી•મેલેઆ•અને•શર•જેમશ• ટીરલ•નાંમનાં•ધણીને•તેહેની•જગાઈ•રાખેઆ*ઈ•ટીરલે•તરણ•ઘાતકી•ચંડાલોને•ઈ•ભુડું•કાંમ•કરવા•મોકલેઆ—રાતનાં•જે•વખતે•ઈ•પેઆરાં•છોકરાંવો•મશ•શુતેલાં•હતાં•તેવારે•તેવો•આવેઆ•અને•તે•ઓરડામાં•જઈને•તેવોઈ•તે•બંદો•છોકરાવોને•તકીઆથી•ગુગારાવીને•મારીનાંખેઆ•તાંહાંશુધી• પેલો•પાપી•ટીરલ•દરવાજા•આગલ•ઉભો•રહો*પછે•શીડીરીની•હેઠલ•તેવોનાં•મુરદાંને•ડાટેઆં•અને•તેહેને•મટોરી•ઢાંકીને•પથરની•લાદીઓ•તેહેની•જગાઈ•પાછી•મુકી•તેથી•ઘણુંઈક•શુધી•કોઈને•માલંમ•પડેઉં•નહી•કે•તે મુરદાં•કાંહાંછે*ઘણાંઈક•વરશપછે•કાંઈ•મજુરોને•તે•મુરદાં•શીડીની•હેઠલથી•મલેઆં*

તમે•જોવો•કે•ગરીબ•બીચારા•પાંચમાં•ઈડવરડનું•રાજ•ઘણુંજ•ટુંકું•થોડા•મહીનાંનું•હતું•અને•ઈ•પાહાદશાને•બંદીખાંનાંમાં•ઈટલું•શુધી•કેદ•કીધો•હતો•અને•તે•બચપણનાં•વખતમાંજ•મારેઆ•

ગીઓ•હતા•માંટે•ખરેખર•બોલીએ•તો•તેણે•કાંઈ•મુતલક•રાજ•કીધું•નહી*

હવે•એ•પાપી•શ્રી•ગલાશટરનો•ડીઉક•પાહાદશા•થાઓ•ને•તેણે તરીજા•રીચરડનું•નાંમ•લીધું*હેનું•રાજ•હેવું•તો•ઘાતકી•અને•જુલંમ•ભરેલું•હતું•કે•હેની•શઘલી•રઈએત•હેને•ધીકારતી•હતી•અને•તેવો ઘણુંજ•ચાહાતાં•હતા•કે•તેવો•હેનાંથી•છુટે*એ•ઉપરથી•શ્રી•રીચમંડનાં•ડીઉકને•ફોજ•એકઠી•કરવાની•હીમત•થાઈ•અને•તેણે•ધીકારેલા રીચરડ•પાશેથી•તખત•છીનવી•લેવાની•મેહનત•કરવા•માંડી*એ•શ્રી•રીચમંડનો•ડીઉક•લાલ•ગોલાબ•વાલાઓની•તરફનો•ઈઆને•લાનકેઆશટરનાં•ખાંનદાંનનો•હતો•અને•જાંહાં•શુધી•ઈઆરકનાં•ખાંનદાંન•વાલા•પાહાદશાઓનો•કાબુ•હતો•તાંહાંશુધી•(શ્રી•ઈંગાલંડનું•) રાજ•છોડી•દેઈને•તેહેને•જતું•રેહવું•પડેઉંતું*રઈએત•પોતાનાં•જુલંમગાર•(પાહાદશાને•)ધીકારેચ•તેથી•તેવો•હેને•મદત•કરશે•હેવું•જાંણીને•એ•ધણી•શ્રી•ફરાંશથી•એક•નાંધુલી•ફોજ•લેઈને•શ્રી•વેલશમાં•વગાર•અટકાવથી•મીડફરડ•હેવનને•બંદરે•આવી•ઉતરેઓ*રીચરડ•જે•ઘણો•બાહાદુર•શખશ•હતો•તેણે•તરતજ•તેહેની•શાંમને•થાવાની•તઈઆરી•કીધી*રીચમંડની•શંગાથે•ઘણાંએક•ઈંગાલીશ•લોકો•શાંમેલ•થાઈઆ•હતા—અને•એ•બંને•ફોજ•શ્રી•લેશટર•શીઅરનાં•પરાંતમાં•બાશવરથફીલડ•નાંમની•જગો•આગલ•એકઠી•થાઈ•તે•વેલા•એ•રીચમંડ•બીલકુલ•ફતેહ•પાંમેઓ•અને•રીચરડ•મારેઓગીઓ*

પછે•રીચમંડને•શાતમાં•હેનરીનો•ખેતાબ•આપીને•પાહાદશા•કીધો•અને•તેથી•શઘલા•લોકો•ઘણાંજ•ખુશી•થાઆ*એ•વાત•ખરી•છે કે•તેહેનો•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•કશો•ખરો•દાવો•નહી•હતો•અને•ફતેહ•કીધાથી•તેણે•તખત•લીધું•પંણ•રીચરડનાં•ગુમ•થાઈઆથી•રઈએત•હેવીતો•ખુશી•થાઈ•કે•તેવોએ•હેનરીનાં•દાવાની•શારી•પેઠે•તજવીજ•કરવાને•ચાહું•નહી*

આએ•પતરમાં•મેં•તમુને•બેએ•પાહાદશાઓનો•એહેવાલ•લખેઓચ•તેવોનાં•નાંમ•પાંચમો•એડવરડ•તથા•તરીજો•રીચરડ*એક•પાહાદશાએતો•આશરે•બેએ•મહીનાં•રાજકીધું•ને•બીજાએ•આશરે•બે•વરશ•શુધી

રાજ•કીધું•અને•તે•શ્રી•બાશવરથફીલડમાં• ૧૪૮૫ નાં•વરશમાં•મારે ઓ•ગીઓ*

હું•છું•તમારો•અને•તે•વનાઈ*

શવાલો*

ચોથો•એડવરડ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*
તેહેનાં•કેટલાં•છોકરાં•હતાં*
તેવોનાં•નાંમ•શું*
વરા•છોકરાનો•બાપ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તારે•તે•કેટલા•વરશનો•હતો
રાજ•કારભાર•ચલાવવાને•કોંણને•ઠેડવેઓ*
તે•શભાવે•કેહેવો•હતો*
તેણે•કીઆ•ઉમરાને•મારેઓ*
શું•બાંહાનું•કાહાડીને•તેહેને•મારેઓ*
લારડ•હેશટીંગને•મારી•નાંખવાનું•ખરૂં•કારંણ•શું*
જેનશોર•કોંણ•હતી*
તેહેને•શી•તરેહે•શજા•આપી*
જવાંન•પાહાદશાને•તથા•તેહેનાં•ભાઈને•રીચરડે•શું•કીધું*
કેહેવુ•ધારેઆમાં•આવેચકે•એ•જવાંન•શાહાજાદાઓનાં•મુરદાં•તેવાર•પછે•મલેઆંકે•શું*
શું•કેહેવુ•ધારેઆમાં•આવેચકે•બંદીખાંનાંમાં•પ છવાડેથી•કાંઈ•કારીગરો ને•જે•હાડકાં•મલેઆં•તે•એ•શાહાજાદાઓનાં•હતાં•કે•શું*
એ•છોકરાવો•મરંણ•પાંમેઆં•તે•પછે•કોંણ•પાહાદશા•થાઓ*
રીચરડ•શીતરેહે•ચાલેઓ*
તેહેની•શાંમને•લડાઈ•કરવાને•વાશતે•કોંણે•ફોજ•એકઠી•કીધી*
શ્રી•રીચમંડનાં•ડીઊકે•રીચરડની•શાથે•લડાઈ•કીધી• તેહેનું•શેવટ• કેમ•થઉં*
તેઓ•વચે•કાંહાં•લડાઈ•થઈ*
તે•પછી•પાહાદશા•કોંણ•થઓ*
કીઆ•વરશમાં•તરીજો•રીચરડ•મારેઓગીઓ*

LETTER XIX.

MY DEAR BOY,

I SUPPOSE you were, like all people who read the History of England, very glad that Richard the Third was killed, and that Henry the Seventh was made king in his place. And I suppose you would have been, like the people of England in those days, so glad to have had a new king instead of Richard, that you would not have been very scrupulous to inquire what right this new king had to the throne. It is, however, necessary that the true line of succession should be observed; otherwise we should have endless disputes and pretensions to the crown,—all which are prevented by giving it to a known and fixed heir. But Henry the Seventh was not the right heir to the throne. The proper person was the princess Elizabeth, the sister of the young princes whom Richard had murdered in the Tower. Henry, however, married this princess, and, thus, no reason was left for disputing; and there were no more quarrels between the houses of York and Lancaster; for Henry was of the Lancaster family, and Elizabeth of the York; and thus the two houses were united, and there was a happy peace. Henry endeavoured, by all the means in his power, to govern the kingdom properly :—but there are some people who are never satisfied, and who cannot rest contented without trying to excite rebellion and disturbance. So it was in the reign of Henry the Seventh, and so it would be in our days, if the greater part of the people had not more sense and judgment than to listen to the clamour of those who would persuade them that they are at all times ill-used and oppressed.

Henry, by prudence and good management, studied to render the nation flourishing and powerful : he tried too, by his gentle behaviour, to pacify those whose minds had long been harassed by disturbances and rebellions. There were, however, some people who were too turbulent to live at ease, and be satisfied,—and they had been so long accustomed to plots and conspiracies, that they still endeavoured, by some means or other, to raise disturbances and discontent. These people set up a man of the name of Lambert Simnel, the son of a baker, who pretended that he was the son of that duke of Clarence who was drowned in a butt of Malmsey in the Tower. This was, however, so plain a piece of imposition, that few people were found willing io join the rebels :—some people, however, did join them; and, among these, some powerful people; and an army was raised on the side of the rebels; but the greater part of the nation remained loyal to their king. A battle was, however, fought between the king's forces and the rebels, at Stoke, in Nottinghamshire, and the rebels were beaten. The king did not think it worth while to use any great severity towards this Simnel, because he was a poor weak young man, led on by his superiors, who ought to have known better. He was made a scullion in the king's kitchen, and afterwards raised to be keeper of the king's hawks, in which employment he died.

Not long afterwards, another pretender to the crown was set up. This was one Perkin Warbeck. He gave it out that the younger of the children, said to have been murdered in the Tower, was in fact not murdered, but was still living ;—and Warbeck said that he was this young prince, Richard, duke of York. Many people supported this youth's pretensions; and his manners were so good, and he managed himself with so much prudence, that he found himself very powerfully supported; and his story was believed by many persons of rank and consequence. The king took great pains to learn the history of Perkin's birth, and to find out who were the contrivers of the plot. Many of those were taken and executed, and some were pardoned.

When a check was thus given to this youth's progress in England, he went into Scotland, where he found great support from the Scotch king, James the Fourth; and then he came again to England, with a considerable army, but he found few of the English willing to join him. Then he went to Ireland, to try his success there. Then he came again to England, landed in Cornwall, and was joined by several of the Cornish men, and then took upon himself the title of Richard the Fourth. He had now an army of seven thousand men. Soon, however, he heard that the king was coming with an army to oppose him, and he then gave up all hopes of success, and left his army to the mercy of the king. Some of the ringleaders were executed, the rest were pardoned. A pardon was offered to Warbeck, upon condition that he would deliver himself up, and confess the circumstances of his imposture; this he consented so do;—but there was so much contradition in this confession, that, even at this day, some persons believe that his pretensions to be the duke of York were not without foundation. I cannot tell how this is, but we know that strange things are set down by writers, according to their own views, or the party to which they belong.

If any of the favourers of Richard the Third had written the history of these times, they would perhaps have made the best of his character, and said every thing that they could find amiss against the character of Henry the Seventh. Just so, as the history, which has come down to us, was probably written by the friends of Henry, it has, perhaps, made the worst of Richard's character, and the best of Henry's. It has, however, generally been understood that the two young princes were murdered in the Tower; and, if it were so, then, of course, Warbeck was an impostor;—but this matter I shall not attempt to decide. We may learn, however, to be cautious how we believe the accounts of party writers. There are many such in our own days; and if we were to believe all they tell us, we might imagine that we were even now grievously oppressed and ill-used, and that we were living in a miserable country, and that all our liberty was gone. And some people will read such accounts till they fancy themselves surrounded with every misery, and reduced to wretchedness and slavery. How strange all this seems to you and me, who feel that we have liberty to do just any thing we please that a Christian man would wish to do! We know, too, that many people are living in great wretchedness, and we hear them complain against the government: but we can see plainly enough that the government has no share in causing their misfortunes, but that they are very frequently brought on by themselves;—we see that sober and prudent people are generally thriving and prosperous, and that drunken and careless people are generally in distress and poverty. It is true, that sorrow and affliction sometimes visit us, notwithstanding all our exertions; but no government can possibly prevent this.

I am, however, forgetting my history. Henry seems to have been of a gentle disposition; but the perpetual disturbances and rebellions which occurred in his reign, appear to have forced him to frequent acts af severity.

Towards the latter end of his reign, the country became more calm and composed. He died in the year 1509.

Believe me, my dear boy,
Your affectionate father.

QUESTIONS.

In what year did you say that Richard the Third was killed?
Who became king after him?
Was Henry, duke of Richmond, the rightul heir to the crown?
Who was?
Whom did Henry VII. marry?
How was it that this marriage put an end to the wars of the houses of York and Lancaster?
Did Henry govern the kingdom well?
And yet were rebellions excited against him?
Who made pretensions to the crown?
Whom did Lambert Simnel pretend to be?
Was any battle fought between the king's troops and the rebels?
Where was it fought?
Which side conquered?
What became of Simnel?
Did any other pretender to the crown arise?
What was his name?
Whom did Perkin Warbeck pretend to be?
Was he supported by many people of rank?
Are there people who still believe that Perkin Warbeck was really the duke of York, who was said to have been murdered in the Tower by Richard the Third?
In what year did Henry the Seventh die?

પતર• ૧૯

માહારા• પેઆરા•છોકરા•

હું•ધારૂચકે•શઘલા•લોકો•જેવો•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશની•વારતા•વાંચેચ•તેવોની•પેડે•તમેબી•ખુશી•થઆ•હશોકે•તરીજો•રીચરડ•મારેઓ•ગીઓ•અને•તેહેની•જગો•ઉપર•શાતમાં•હેનરીને•પાહાદશા•ઠેડવેઆ*અને•હું•હેવુબી•ધારૂચકે•તે•વખતનાં•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•લોકોની•પેઠે•તમેબી•હેવુ•ચાહાતા•હશોકે•રીચરડને•બદલે•કોઈ•નવો•પાહાદશા•થાએ•માંટે•એ•નવા•પાહાદશાનો•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•શૂહક•હતો•તે•વીશે•તમે•કાંઈ•પુછ•પરેછ•કરતે•નહી* તોપણ•વારશો•પેહેડીદર•પેહેડી•કોણને•પોચેચ•તે•તપાશેઉ•જોઈએ•નહીતો•તખત•લેવા•શારું•બેશૂમાર•કજીઆ•અને•દાવા•થાએ•માંટે•એક•જાંણીતા•અને•મુકરર•કીધેલા•વારશનેજ•તખત•આપેઆથી•તેહેવુ•નહી•બને*પણ•શાતમો•હેનરી•તખતનો•વાજબી•વારશ•હતો•નહી*જે•શાહાજાદાઓને•રીચરડે•બંદીખાંનાંમાં•મરાવી•નાંખેઆ•હતા•તેવોની•બેહેન•ઈલીજેબેથ•શાહાજાદીનો•તખતઉપર•બેશવાનો•વાજબી•હક•હતો*પણ•હેનરી•એ•શાહાજાદી•શંગાથે•પરણેઓ•અને•હેવુ•કીધાથી•લડાઈ•કજીઓ•કરવાની•કશી•ગરજ•રહી•નહી•અને•લાનકેશટર•તથા•ઈઆરકનાં•ખાંનદાંન•વચે•હવે•પછી•કાંઈ•બીજી•લડાઈ•થાઈ•નહી•શાવાશતે•જે•હેનરી•લાનકેશટરનાં•ખાંનદાંનનો•હતો•અને•ઈલીજેબેથ•ઈઆરકનાં•ખાંનદાંનની•હતી•(તેવો•બંનેનાં•લગન•થાએઆથી•)એ•બંને•ખાંનદાંન•એખટાં•થાએઆં•અને•શૂખ•તથા•શૂલેહે•થાઈ*હેનરીથી•જેકાંઈ•બની•શકેઉ•તેમ•એણે•તે•રાજ•કારભાર•શારી•પખે•ચલાવાની•તજવીજ•કીધી•પણ•(દુનીઆંમાં•)કેટલાએક•લોકો•છેકે•જેવોનુ•મનપતીજ•કદી•થતુ•નથી•અને•જેવો•કાંઈબી•દંગો•ફીશાદ•કીધા•વીનાં•રેહેતા•નથી*તેમજ•શાતમાં•હેનરીનાં•વખતમાં•બનેઉં•અને•આગાર•જો•હવડાં•ઘણાં•ખરા•લોકોને•વધારે•અકલ•અને•હોશીઆરી•નહી•હોતે•અને•તેવોને•કોઈ•શખશો•શંમજાવતે•કે•હમારા•ઉપર•શઘલી•વેલા•ભારે•જુલંમ•અને•દુખછે•તેમણુ•કહીઉં•તેવો•માંનતેતો•હવડાંનાં•વખતમાં•પણ•તેમજ•થાતે*

હોશીઆરીથી•તથા•શારી•તદબીરથી•હેનરીએ•પોતાની•રઈએતને•આબાદ•તથા•જોરેમંદ•કરવાની•મેહનત•લીધી•અને•જે•લોકોને ફીશાદ•તથા•દંગાથી•દુખ•પોહોચુ•હતું•તેવોને•પોતાની•નરમાશથી•દેલાશો•આપેઓ* તોપંણ•કેટલાએક•લોકો•હતા•જેવો•જારે•તોફાંની•હતા•માંટે•તેવોથી•નચીત•અને•શંતોશમાં•રેહેવાએ•નહી•અને•તેવોની•ઘાણુંએક•સૂધી•બંડ•તથા•દંગો•કરવાની•આશરંમ•પડી•ગેઈ•હતી•માંટે•તેવોએ•કાંઈએક•તરેહેથી•ફીશાદ•તથા•તોફાંન•ઉઠી•ઉભુ•કીધું*હેવાં•લોકોએ•એક•રોટલી•વાલાનાં•લાંમબરટ•શીમનેલ•નાંમનાં•છોકરાને•ઉઠી•ઉભો•કીધો—તે•શખશે•શ્રી•કલારેનશગો ડીઉકજે•બંદીખાંનાંમાં•દારૂનાં•પીપમાં•ડુબી•ગઓ•હતો•તેહેનો•છોકરો•થાએ•હેવો•ઢોંગ•તેણે•કીધો*એ•ઠગ•વીદેઆ•હેવી•તો•ઉઘાડી•માલંમ•પડીકે•થોડાજ•લોકો•એ•તોફાંન•કરનારાઓ•શંગાથે શાંમેલ•થાઆ•તોપંણ•કાંઈ•લોકો•તેવોને•મલીગીઆ•તેહેમાં•કાંઈ કાબુ•વાલા•લોકોબી•તેવોની•તરફ•થાઆ•અને•એ•ફીશાદ•કરનારાઓએ•એક•ફોજ•એકઠી•કીધી•પંણ•ઘાણીખરી•રઈએત•પોતાનાં•પાહદશાની•તરફ•રહી*નાંટીગાહાંમ•શાએર•પરાંતમાં• શ્રી•ઈશટોક•નાંમનાં•શેહેર•આગલ•પાહાદશાની•તથા•ફીશાદ•કરનારાઓની•ફોજ•વચે•લડાઈ•થાઈ•તેહેમાં•ફીશાદી•લોકો•હારેઆ*એ•શીમનેલ•નાંમનાં શખશ•ઉપર•જુલમ•અથવા•શખતી•કરવી•પાહદાશાએ•ઘટારત•જાંણી નહી•કાંએજે•તે•ધાણી•બીચારો•અને•નબલો•જવાંન•હતો•તેહેનાં ઉપરીઆ•કે•જેવોને•વધારે•શારું•જાંણેઉં•જોઈતુતુ•તેવોએ•હેને•ઉભો•કીધો•હતો*તેહેને•પાહાદશાનાં•બબરચીખાંનાંમાં•પકાવનાર•કરી•રાખેઓ•અને•પછે•તેહેને•પાહાદશાનાં•બાજનો•રખેવાલ•બનાવેઓ•તે•હોધામાં•તે•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ *

એ•પછી•થોડેએક•દીવશે•બીજો•ધાણી•તખત•ઉપર•દાવો•કરનાર•ઉઠી•ઉભો•થાઓ*તે•પરકીનવારબેક•જાંમનો•ધાણી હતો*એ શખશ•હેવુ•બોલવા•લાગોકે•જે•જવાંન• શાહાજાદાવોને•બંદીખાંનાંમાં•મરાવી•નાંખેઆ•હતા•તેહેમાંનાં•નાંધલા•છોકરાને•મારેઆ•તો•નહી•પંણ•તે•હજુર•સૂધી•જીવતો•હતો•અને•વારબેકે•એમ•કહુકે•હુજ•એજવાંન•શાહાજાદો•છેઉં•ને•માહારું•નાંમ•રીચરડ•શ્રી•ઈઆરકનો

ડીઉક*ઘણાં•લોકોએ•એ•જવાંન•શખશનાં•દાવાને•આશરો•આપેઓ અને•હેનાં•ચાલ•ચલણ•હેવાંતો•શારાં•હતાં• અને• તેણે• હેવીતો• હોશીઆરીથી•પોતાનુ•કાંમ•ચલાવેઉં•કે•તેહેને•મજબુત•આશરો•મલેઓ•અને•ઘણાંએક•મોહોટા•હોદેદાર•તથા•નાંમ•વાલા•ધણીઓએ•હેની•વારતાને•ખરી•કરી•માંનેઆમાં•લાવેઆ*પરકીનનાં•જનમની વારતા•જાણવાને•વાશતે•તથા•એ•દંગો•ઉઠી•ઉભો•કરનારા•કોણ• લોક•હતા•તેવોને•શોધી•કાહાડવાને•શારૂં• પાહાદશાએ•ઘણી•મેહનત•લીધી*તેહેમાંનાં•ઘણાંએક•લોકોને•પકડેઆ•અને•ફાંશી•દીધા• અને•કેટલાએકને•માફ•કીધા*

જેવારે•શ્રી•ઈંગાલંડમાં•એ•જવાંન•ધણીનુ•કાંઇ•આગાલ•ચાલેઉ•નહી•તેવારે•તે•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડમાં•ગીઓ•તાંહાં•ઈશકાચ•લોકોનાં•રાજા•ચોથા•જેમશ•હેની•વારે•મદત•કીધી—પછે•તે•એક•મોહોટી•ફોજ•લેઇને•પાછો•શ્રી•ઈંગાલંડમાં•ગીઓ•પંણ•થોડાજ ઈંગાલીશ•લોકો•તેહેની•શાથે•શાંમેલ•થાવાને•રાજી•દેખાગઆ*પછે•તે•પોતાનુ•નશીબ•અજમાવી•જોવાને•વાશતે•શ્રી•આઆરલંડમાં•ગીઓ*તે• પછે•ફરીથી•શ્રી•ઈંગાલંડમાં•પાછો•ગીઓ•અને•શ્રી•કોરનવાલમાં•આવી•ઉતરેઓ•તાંહાંનાં•કેટલાએક•લોકો•હેની•તરફ•થાઇ•ગીઆ•તેવારે•તેણે•પોતે•ચોથા•રીચરડનો•ખેતાબ•લીધો*હવડાં•હેની•પાશે•શાત•હજાર•આદમીની•ફોજ•હતી* પંણ•તેણે•તરતજ•શાંભલેઉંકે•પાહાદશા•એક•ફોજ•લેઇને•તેહેની•શંગાથે•લડાઇ•કરવા•આવેચ•તેવારે•તેણે•ફતેહ•પાંમવાની•આશા•મેલી•દીધી•અને•પોતાની ફોજ•મેલી•દીધી•તેહેને•પાહાદશા•ગમે•તેમ•કરે*ફીશાદ•કરનારાવોનાં•કેટલાએક•મોહોટા શરદારોને•ફાંશી•દીધા•અને•બાકીનાં•લોકોને•માફ•કીધા*વારબેકને•માફ•કરવા•માંગેઉં•તેહેવી•શરતથી•કે• અગર•જો•વારબેક•પોતે•આવીને•(પાહાદશાને•) હવાલે•થાએ•અને તેણે•જે•જુઠો•દાવો•ઉઠી•ઉભો•કીધો•હતો•તેહેની•શઘલી•બીનાં કબુલ•કરે•તેમ•કરવા•શારૂં•વારબેક•રાજી•થાઓ•પંણ•તેણે•જે•કબુલ•કીધું•તેહેમાં•એટલુતો•જુઠ•હતુકે•આજદીન•શુધીબી•કેટલાએક લોકો•હેવું•જાંણેચ•કે•એધણીએ•જે•દાવોકીધો•હતો•કે•તેજ•પોતે શ્રી•ઇઆરકનો•ડીઉક•છે• તે•દાવો•કાંઇ•કારણ•વગર•કીધો•નહી

હતો*એમ• શીતરે• હોએ• તે• હુ• કહી•શખતો•નથી• પણ• આપણને માલંમછે• કે•લખનારાવોએ• પોતપોતાની• ધારણાં• પરમાંણે•અથવા• જેહની•તરફેણનાં• તેવો• હોએ• તે•પરમાંણે• તેવો• અચરત•જેહેવી• વાતો•લખી•ગીઆય*

અગાર• જો•તરીજા•રીચરડની•તરફૈણ•વાલાઓમાંથી• કોઈ• એ•એ•વખતની• વારતા•લખી• હતે તો• તેવોએ• વારબેકની• આબરૂને ઘણીજ•વધારી•હતે•અને•શાતમાં•હેનરીની•આબરૂની•તીરૂધમાં•તેહને•બટો•લગાડવા•શારૂ• હરેક•કાંઇ•બીનાં•મલતે• તે•શરવે•લખી જાણાંવતે*તેજપરમાંણે• જે•વારતા•આપણને•મલેલીછે• તે•કદાચ• હેનરીનાં• દાશતોએ•લખી• હતી•માંટે• તેહેમાં•રીચરંડની• આબરૂ•શરવેથી•ખરાબ•લખીય•તથા•હેનરીની•આબરૂ•શરવેથી•શારી•દેખડાવીય*પણ•શરવ•કોઈ• હેવું•જાંણતા•હતા• કે•એ• બંધે• જવાંન•શાહજાદાઓને• બંદીખાંનાંમાં• મારી•નાંખેઆ•હતા• અને•અગારજો•એમ હોએતો• તારે•વારબેક•નીશચે•એક• ઠગ•હતો• —પણ• હું•એ•વાતનો•ચુકાદો•કરવા•માંગતો•નથી*તોપણ•એક• તરફેણનાં•લખનારાઓનાં• હેવાલને•શીતરેહે•માંનીએ• તે•વીશે•આપણને•ખબરદાર•રેહવું જોઈએ*આપરા•વખતમાંબી• હેવા•ઘણાં•લખનારાઓછે•માંટે•અગાર જો• તેવો•જે• આપણને• કેહેય• તે•શરવ•આપરે• ખરૂં•માંનીએતો• આપરા•ધારેઆમાં•આવશે•કે•આપરા•ઉપર•લારે•જુલંમ• અને•દુખ•પડેય•તથા•આપરે•એ•દુખી•મુલકમા•રહીએય•અને•આપણું• છુટાપણું• શઘલુ•જતુ•રહુય* અને•કેટલાએક• લોકો• હેવી•રીતની•લખેલી•બીનાં• વાંચી•એમ•વમાશેય•કે• તેવોનાં•ઉપર•શઘલી• તરફથી•દુખ•આવી•પડેઉંય•અને•તેવોની• લુંડી•તથા•ગોલાંમની•અવશતા• થાઈ•ગોઈય* પણ•મહને• તથા•તમને•એ•શઘલુ•કેહેવું•અચરત•જેહવું•નજર•આવેય•કાંએજે•આપરે• જાંણીએય•કે•કરીશટીઆંન•જેકાંઈ•કરવાને•ચાહેય• તેમજ• આપરી• ખુશીમાં•આવે•તેહવું•કરવાની• આપણને• છુટછે* આપરે•જાંણીએય•કે•ઘણાંએક• લોકો•લારે•દલદરીમાં•જનમારો• ગાગાવેય•અને• તેવો• રાજાની•ફરીઆદ•કરેય• તે•આપરે•શાલહીએય• પણ આપણને•શાફ•જાણાંએય• કે• હેવી•કમબખતી•કાંઈ• રાજાથી•થાતી•

નથી•પણ•તે•તેવો•પોતાથી•ઘણીવાર•થાએછે•—આપરે•જોઈએ•કે ભલા•અને•હોશીઆર•લોકો•ઘણું•કરીને•શારી•તથા•આબાદ•અવશતાંમાં•હોએચ•અને•છાટકા•તથા•આલશૂ•લોકો•ઘણુંકરીને•દુખમાં•તથા•દલીદરીમાંછે*એ•વાત•ખરીછે•કે•કોઈ•વેલા•આપણનેબી•દુખ•અને•દરદ•થાએછે•પણ•રાજાથી•કાંઈ•હેનો•અટકાવ•થાઈ•શખતો•નથી*

પણ•હું•માહારી•વારતા•વીશરી•જાંઉચ*હેવું•દીશેચ•કે•હેનરી•ઘણોજ•નરમ•શભાવનો•હતો•પણ•હેનાં•રાજમાં•હમેશાં•ફીશાદ•તથા•દંગો•થઆ•કીધો•તેથી•હેને•હરઘડી•શખત•જુલમનાં•કાંમ કરવાં•પડેઆં•હેવું•નજર•આવેચ*

હેનું•રાજ•આખર થાવા•આવેઉ•તે•વખત•મુલકમાં•વધારે•નીરાંત•તથા•શુલેહ•થાઈ*હેનરી•૧૫૦૯નાં•વરશમાં•મરણ•પાંમેઓ*

માહારા•પેઆરા•છોકરા•હું•છું•
તમારો•માએઆલુ•બાપ*

શવાલો*

તરીજો•રીચરડ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મારેઓ•ગીઓ*
તેહેની•પછી•કોણ•પાહાદશા•થાઓ*
શ્રી•રીચમંડનો•ડીઉક•હેનરી•રાજનો•હકદાર•વારેશ•હતો•કે•નહી*
તારે•કોણ•હકદાર•વારશ•હતો*
શાતમો•હેનરી•કોણની•શાથે•પરંણિઓ*
ઈઆરક•અને•લાંનકેશટરનાં•ખાંનદાંન•વચે•જે•કજીઆ•ચાલેઆ•હતા•તે•એ•લગાંન•થાઆથી•કેમ•મીટી•ગીઆ*
શૂં•હેનરીએ•શારી•રીતે•રાજ•ચલાવેઉં*
એમ•છતાં•પંણ•તેહેની•ઉપર•દંગો•ઉઠી•ઉભો•થાઓ•કે•શૂં*
વારૂ•રાજ•લેવા•શારૂં•કોણે•દાવો•કીધો*
લાંમબરટ•શીમનેલ•પોતાને•કોણ•કરી•કેહેવા•લાગો*
દંગાખોરોની•તથા•પાદશાહની•ફોજ•વચે•કાંઈ•લડાઈ•થઈશૂં*
તે•લડાઈ•કાંહાં•થઈ*
કોણ•જીહીતેઉં*

શીમનેલને•શું•કીધું*
બીજોબી•કોઇ•રાજ•લેવા•શારું•દાવો•કરવા•લાગોકે•શું*
તેહેનુ•નાંમ•શું*
પરકીન•વારબેક•પોતાને•કોણ•કરી•કેહેવા•લાગો*
કોઇ•મોહોટા મોહોટા•આબરુવાલા•લોકોએ•તેહેની•મદત•કીધીકેશું*
તરીજા•રીચરડે•જે•શ્રી•ઇઆરકનાં• ડીઉકને•બદીખાંનાંમાં•મારી•નાં
ખેઆ•હતો•તેજ•શખશ•પરકીન•વારબેક•હતો•હેવુબી•કોઇ•લોકો
હજુર•શુધી•માંનેચ•કે•શું*
શાતમો•હેનરી•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

LETTER XX.

MY DEAR BOY,

We have now got as far, in our History of England, as the reign of king Henry the Eighth; and, as we come nearer to our own times, it becomes so much the more necessary for us to remember an the particulars of what we read. The reign of Henry the Eighth is highly deserving of our attention. It was in this king's reign that the great work of the Reformation was begun in England. By the *Reformation,* we mean the changing the religion of the country from the Roman Catholic to the Protestant. Whilst the Roman Catholic religion prevailed in the Christian world, many practices were allowed and encouraged which were very different from what the Gospel taught and required. The power, too, over religious affairs, was wholly in the hands of the pope of Rome, and he would often interfere in temporal matters too. This was altogether wrong; for what right had the pope, who lived at Rome, to attempt to regulate any of the affairs of this kingdom, or of any other? But the worst part of the Roman Catholic religion was, that we could get no Bibles and Prayer Books in our own language; they were all written in Latin, os that they were of no use at all to the greater part of the nation. People indeed, went to church; and there were many grand processions and splendid shows; but, as the Bible was shut up, there was no knowledge of the truth; and even the public worship could be of no use to any but those few who understood Latin. A great deal of abuse had, indeed, crept into the Church; and those things which were, at first, perhaps, intended for a good purpose, were now applied to very bad ones; and it suited the plans of the popish clergy to keep the people in ignorance,—for a knowledge of the truth would have shown how far they had gone from the directions of Scripture. The people were, for a long time, thus kept from the knowledge of scriptural truth,—and it was very easy to keep them in such ignorance before the art of printing was known, and when books were very dear and difficult to be got at: for there were, indeed, no books at all, but manuscripts, that is, books written by the hand; and these, we may be sure, could be but few. But, in the reign of Henry the Eighth, the art of printing had become pretty generally known; and, as books became more common, people were able to read them, and judge for themselves. I do not exactly know when the art of printing was invented; but they say that the first book printed in England was by Caxton, in the year 1471; which was, you know, in the reign of Edward the Fourth; but I believe that there were printed books in England rather sooner than that time.

When we speak of the Reformation, we generally think of Henry the Eighth, and are thus apt to give him the credit of it; which is indeed much more than he deserved: for whatever he did, he did from self-interest, and not from any wish, as far as I can see, of doing good. First he supported the pope, and then he opposed him, just as his humour or his interest inclined him: sometimes he would punish people for being Papists, and sometimes for being Protestants, and there was indeed no principle and no consistency in any thing that he did. It is impossible, in the space of a letter, to give you any thing like a full history of the Reformation: you may, perhaps, read more on the subject in some books that you may meet with:—but we shall see, as we go on in our history, that it was not completed, but only begun, in Henry's reign, and that the greater part of the work was done in the reign of his son, Edward the Sixth. Henry the Eighth was, however, made an instrument, in the hands of Providence, of doing much good; and, by allowing the Bible to be translated into English, and read, he fforded encouragement to good and learned men to lay the truth before the people; and thus the way was paved for that further progress in the Reformation, which was made in the days of his son.

But we must now look at other affairs that happened during the reign of Henry the Eighth.

Henry was eighteen years of age when he came to the throne. He was extravagant and fond of pleasure, and soon began to waste, in his expensive vanities and follies, those sums which his wiser father had carefully saved. His chief minister and adviser was cardinal Wolsey, a haughty proud man, and as extravagant and profligate as his master. He was born in an humble station of life; but the king raised him to the highest honours and dignities in the state,—which made him an object of envy and hatred to all ranks and conditions of the people. But miserable is that man who builds his hopes on earthly greatness! Wolsey's high honours only made his fall the more ruinous: for he did fall as soon as the king's inclinations, and *his* interests, disagreed. You have often heard that Henry the Eighth had six wives,—the first was Catherine of Arragon. And, when Henry was tired of her, and could not fairly get rid of her, he made a strange excuse for parting with her, and he expected Wolsey to help him: but this did not suit the cardinal, and the king, therefore, was determined to ruin him. Wolsey was compelled to give up his palace at York, where he was archbishop; and the king seized all his splendid plate and rich furniture, and then ordered him to be arrested and brought to London, to take his trial for high reason. He began his journey, and proceeded as far as Leicester; but he had great difficulty in performing this long journey, for he was then old, and sick, and feeble. When he got to Leicester, he whent to the obbey, and the monks came out to meet him. He told them, that he was come to die among them, and begged them to give him, for charity's sake, a little earth to cover his weary bones.

> ——with easy roads, he came to Leicester,
> Lodg'd in the abbey; where the reverend abbot,
> With all the convent, honourably receiv'd him;
> To whom he gave these words: "O, father Abbot,
> An old man, broken with the storms of state,
> Is come to lay his weary bones among you;
> Give him a little earth for charity."
>
> SHAKSPEARE.

Soon after this, he died, full of sorrow and remorse,—grieving that he had wasted all his life in pursuit of worldly greatness, instead of aiming at that heavenly kingdom, where the happiness and rich reward are all-glorious and everlasting! "Had I but served my God," he cried, "with half the zeal that I have served my king, he would not in mine age have given me over to mine enemies."

The reason which Henry pleaded to get rid of his wife was, that his marriage was not lawful, as she was the widow of his elder brother, Arthur. This, however, he did not think of, till the queen had lived eighteen years with him, and had a daughter by him, (who was afterwards the bloody queen Mary.) The truth was, that he had found a young and handsome lady in his court, whom he liked better than his wife; this was Anna Bullen; and he was determined to divorce Catherine, that he might marry *her*;—this did not please Wolsey and the Papists, because Anna Bullen was inclined to the Protestant religion: and it was Wolsey's unwillingness to encourage this match, which first provoked the king's anger against him, and brought on his fall. The king, soon after this, married Anna Bullen privately; and, after a time, he publicly acknowledged her:—she brought him a daughter, who was afterwards the famous Queen Elizabeth. Soon, however, the king grew weary of this queen, as he had done of the former one, and he seemed determined to get rid of her, and to marry another beautiful lady, called Jane Seymour. To effect his purpose, he endeavoured to find some accusation against the queen, which might justify him in cutting her off; she was accused of loose behaviour and high treason, and she was condemned to death; and was soon afterwards executed on Tower Hill. She was beheaded by the executioner of Calais, who was brought over from France on purpose, being considered more expert than any in England. Her body was thrown into a common chest, and was buried in the Tower. If you ever go to see the Tower of London, they will show you the very axe which was used in beheading Queen Anna Bullen.

The very next day, the cruel tyrant married Jane Seymour; and he declared that both his daughters, Mary by his first wife, and Elizabeth by the second, were illegitimate, and that they were neither of them to succeed to the crown. Such savage and tyrannical acts of the king, we may be sure, excited great hatred in the minds of the people, and there were many insurrections and rebellions;—the king denied the power of the pope, but still he held the doctrines of popery, so that he persecuted the Papists for supporting the pope's supremacy, and he persecuted the Protestants for denying the popish doctrines;—his angry passions, indeed, were dreadful; and the discontents and oppositions of his subjects filled him with fury. He was, however, put in better humour for a time, by the birth of a son, (who was afterwards that excellent prince, Edward the Sixth;) but his queen died two days afterwards,

Not long after this, the king resolved to have another wife, and here he took a foreign lady, whom he had never seen;—her picture was painted for him; and the artist (Holbein) had made it handsome; but when she came over, and the king met her at Rochester, he declared that she was a fat, ugly person, and that he never could like her. However, he still determined to marry her, because it was a match that would gain him friends and allies on the Continent, and add to his power. The king's dislike, however, to this lady, continued, and he resolved to get rid of her:—and, moreover, he had fixed his affections upon another lady, Catherine Howard, and he turned off his queen, and married this new favourite. Henry seemed for a time delighted with his new wife,—he was soon, however, informed that her character was bad, and that she had been guilty of much improper conduct, both before and after her marriage. She was tried, and found guilty, and beheaded on Tower Hill.

All this time, the king pretended to be concerned about the affairs of religion; he had indeed, a good deal of what is called *learning* on these matters; but religious *learning* is a very different thing from true religious faith and practice. The king wrote some books on the disputes of that day, between the Catholics and protestants. He had some time before this written a book in defence of the *seven* Sacraments, for the Catholics say there are seven Sacraments; we Protestants say that there are only *two*, namely, *Baptism* and the *Lord's Supper;* and we say this, because we do not find any thing in Scripture which justifies us in saying that there are any more Sacraments than these two. Henry, however, pleased the pope by defending the seven sacraments, and gained the title of "Defender of the Faith," which was indeed a good title in itself, and has been kept by the kings of England ever since; there was, however, nobody who ever deserved it less than Henry the Eighth. About a year after the death of the late queen, Henry married another wife, Catherine Parr, a widow; she was a discreet and pious woman, and studied, by her gentle behaviour, to calm the savage temper of the king. This, however, was beyond her power; and at one time she was in great danger of losing her own life, in consequence of some difference with the king on religious subjects. However, she managed to pacify him on this point; but his savage temper broke out towards his subjects; and many excellent and worthy people were put to death by him. As his end approached, the pains of his body seemed to increase the violence of his temper. He had a painful disorder in his legs, which, growing worse and worse, at length carried him off, in the year 1547. There is a great deal of very interesting matter in this reign: but I only attempt to give you a few heads of the History of England, and you may, perhaps, when you have leisure and opportunity, read more fully for yourself, on this subject.

I am your affectionate father.

◆

QUESTIONS.

In what year did Henry VIII. begin to reign?
What great change was made in the state of religion during his reign?
What is meant by the Reformation?
Who was considered as at the head of the Church before the Reformation?
Where does the pope live?
In what language were the Bibles and Prayer-Books written before the Reformation?
Was the art of printing books known in the reign of Henry VIII?
Had it been long known?
Who was the first person that printed a book in England?
Had not the art of printing a great effect in leading the minds of the people to right thinking?
How were books made before printing was known?
Were they then very scarce and dear, and difficult to come at?
Was Henry a real and steady friend to the Reformation?
Was the Reformation completed in Henry's time, or only begun?
Who was Henry's chief minister and adviser?
What was Wolsey's character?
Who was Henry's first wife?
When the king wished to get rid of his first wife, would cardinal Wolsey encourage and assist him in this plan?
How did the king then treat Wolsey?
Can you tell me where Wolsey died, and can you relate the circumstances of his death?
What plea did the king make for getting rid of his wife?
How long had they been married?

Had they a daughter, and what was her name? and what was she afterwards?
Whom did the king wish to marry?
Was Anna Bullen a Papist or a Protestant?
Had Anna Bullen any child?
What was its name, and what did it afterwards become?
Did the king, at length, grow tired of Anna Bullen?
What was her fate?
Whom did the king next marry?
How did the king treat the Protestants and the Papists?
Had this third queen, Jane Seymour, any child?
What was its name? and who was it afterwards?
What was the end of this queen?
After her death, did the king seek for another wife?
Who was she?
What was her appearance?
Who had painted her picture for the king to see before he married her?
Was the picture like her?
Was the king, at that time, attached to another person?
How did he get rid of his present wife, Anne of Cleves?
How many *Sacraments* do Papists acknowledge?
But how many do we Protestants say that "Christ ordained in his Church?"
Did king Henry pretend to be skilled in explaining religious matters?
Dia he write a book on the subject of the Sacraments?
Did he take the Popish or the Protestant side in this question?
Did the king's book please the pope?
What title did the pope then confer on the king?
Have the kings of England kept that title ever since?
Did the king marry another wife?
What was her name?
What became of Catherine Howard?
After the execution of Catherine Howard, did Henry marry another wife?
What was her name?
Was she a good queen?
Did Catherine Parr outlive the king?
In what year did this king die?

પતર• ૨૦

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ• દેશની• વારતામાં• આઠમાં• હેનરીની• પાહાદશાહી• શુધી• આપરે• આવી• પોહોંચેઆચ• અને• જેમ• જેમ• આગે• વખતની• નજદીક• આવતા• જઈએ• તેમ• તેમ• જે• કાંઈ• શઘળું• આપરે• વાંચીએ• તે•

આપુને•ઇઆદ•રાખવું•જોઇઈ* આઠમાં•હેનરીના•રાજ• ઉપર•આપણને•ઘણુંજ• હેઆંન•પોહોંચાડવું•લાઈક છે* ઈ•પાહાદશાનાં•વખતમાં•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમાં•ધરંમની•શ્રુધરાઇનું•કાંમ•શરુથઉં*ઈ•શ્રુધરાઈનેમાઈનો•ઈ કે•ઈ• દેશનો• રોમંન• કેથોલીક•ધરંમ• બદલાઓ• અને પરોટેશટેનટ•ધરંમ•થઓ• તેહેને•કેહે છે* જાંહાં•શ્રુધી•દુનીઆંનાં•ખરીશટીઆંન•લોકોમાં• રોમન•કેથોલીકનો•ધરંમ•ચાલતો•હતો•તેવારે•ધરંમ•પુશતકમાં•જેકાંઇ•કહીઉંચ• અને•ફરમાવેઉંચ• તેથી•ઉલટી•ચાલ•ચલણ•પરીગેઇ•અને•જારી•થાઇ* ધરંમબાબેનો•શઘળો•અખતીઆર•શ્રી•રુમના• પોપનાં•હાથમાં•હતો• અને•રાજનાં •કાંમોનીબી• તે• પોપ• ઘણી•વખત•વચમાં•પડતો•હતો*ઈ•બીલ•કુલ•અણ•ઘટતુ•હતું•કાંઈ કે•ઈ•પોપ•કે•જે•શ્રી•રુમમાં•રેહેતો• હતો•માટે•આઈ•(શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનાં•)રાજ•અથવા•બીજાં•કોઇ•રાજનો•કારભાર•ચલાવવાનો•તેહેનો•શ્રું• હક•હતો*પણ• રોમન• કેથોલીક•ધરંમમાં•ઈ•ઘણું•ખરાબ•હતું કે•આપણને•ધરંમ•પુશતક•તથા• બંદગી•કરવાની• ચોપડી•આપણી• પોતાંની• બોલીમાં•મલી• નહી•શકતીતી•તે શઘલી• પોથીઓ•લાટીન•બોલીમાં•લખેલી•હતી• માંટે•ઘણા•ખરા•લોકોને•કાંઇ• કાંમ•આવે•નહી* લોકો• દેવલમાં• જતાંહતાં•ખરાં•અને•મોહોટાં•મોહોટાં•શરગાશ•અને•ઘણાંજ•ઓતમ•તમાશા•થાતા•હતા•પણ•ધરંમ•પુશતક•છુપેઉં•રાખેલું•હતું• તેથી•શાચી•વાતો•માલંમ•પડતી•નહી•હતી•ને•થોડાકલોકો•જેવો•લાટીન•જાંણતાહતા તેવો•શીવાઈ•બીજા•કોઇને•જાહેર•નીમાજથી•ફાઈદો•થાઈ•નહી* ઈ•ધરંમમાં•ઘણીઈક•માઠીચાલ• પડી•ગેઇ•હતી• અને• જે•ચીજો• પેહેલાં•શારાં•કાંમને•વાશતે•કીધેલી•હતી• તે•હવડાં•ખરાબ•કાંમે•લગાડી•અને•ઈ• પોપની•તરફનાં• પાદરીઓની•ધારણા•હેવીજ•હતી કે•શઘલા• લોકોને•મુરખ•તથા•અંનજાંણાં• રાખવાં•કાંઈજે•આગરજો તેવો•ખરી•વાત•જાંણતે•તો•ધરંમ•પુશતકના•ફરમાવેઆથી•પાદરીઓ•કેટલા• આડા•ચાલેઆય• તે•માલંમ•પડીઆવતે* ઈ•પરમાંણે• •ઘણી•ઈક•મુદત•શ્રુધી• શઘલા• લોકોને• ધરંમની• ખરી• વાતો• માલંમ• હતી• નહી•અને •જાંહાં• શ્રુધી•છાપવાનો•હોનર • માલંમ • પડેઓ• તાંહાં•શ્રુધી •તેવોને•ઈ• વાતોથી•બે• ખબર •

શાખવું•શેહેલ•હતું•અને•તે•વખત•ચોપડીઓ•મલી•નહી•શકતી•હતી•કાંઈ•જે•હાતની•લખેલી•ચોપડીઓ•શીવાઈ•બીજીકાંઈ•ચોપડીઓ•હતીજ•નહી•અને•ઈ•લખેલી•ચોપડીઓબી•થોડીજ•હશે•તે•આપણને•ખચીત•કરી•જાંણવું* પણ•આઠમાં•હેનરીનાં•વખતમાં•છાપવાની•વીદેઆ•શારી•પખે•માંલંમ•પડેલી•હતી•અને•પુશતકો•ઘણાં•થાઆં•તેથી•લોકો•તે•વાંચવા•તથા•પોતાની•મેરે• વીચાર• કરવાને•શકતી•વાંન•થાઆં* હું•ચોકશ•જાંણતો•નથી•કે• છાપવાની•હીકમત•કેઈ•વખત•શોધી•કાહાડી•પણ•હેવું•કેહે છેકે• પેહેલવેહેલાં•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાં•કેકશટંન•નાંમનાં•શખશે• ૧૪૭૧ નાં•વરશમાં•ઈટિલે જે•ચોથા•ઈડવરડના•વખતમાં•પેહેલું•પુશતક•છાપેઉ•પણ•હું•ધારું ચકે•તેવખતની•જરાઈક•આગામચબી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાં• છાપેલાં•પુશતકો•હતાં*

જેવારે•આપરે•સુધરાઈ•વીશે•બોલીઈચે• તેવારે•આપણને•ઘણું•કરીને•આઠમો•હેનરી•ઈઆદ•આવેચ•માંટે•ઈ•વાતની•ઈ•પાહાદશાને•શાબાશી•આપીઈચે•તે•શઘલું•તેહેને લાઈઆક•નથી•કાંઈ•કે•જેકાંઈ•તેણે•કીધું•તે•પોતાંનાં•ભલાંને•વાશતે•કીધું•અને•શારું•કરવાની•ઈછા•ઉપરથી•ઈણે•કાંઈ•કીધું•હોઈ•તે•મહને•દીશતું•નથી* પેહેલાં•તો•તેણે•પોપને•આશરો•આપેઓ•અને•પછે•પોપની•શાંમણે•થાઓ•અને•તેહેનાં•મંનમાં•જેકાંઈ•આવેઉં•અથવા•તેહેનાં•લાભમાં•જેકાંઈ•નજર•આવેઉં•તેમ•કીધું — કોઈ•વખતે•લોકો•રોમંન• કેથોલીક•હતા•ઈ•માંટે•અને•કોઈ•વખત•તેવો•પરાટેશટેનટ•હતા•ઈ•માટે•હેનરી•તેવોને•શજા•આપતો•હતો•અને•જેકાંઈ•ઈ•ધણી•કરતો•હતો•તે•ઈક•રીતે•અને•વાજબી•હતું•નહી*ઈ•શઘલી•સુધરાઈની•વારતા•ઈક•પતરમાં•તમને•લખાઈ• શકાઈ•નહી•પંણ•કદાચ•તમુને•કાંઈ•ચોપડીઓ•મલે•તેહમાં•તમે•ઈ•બાબત વીશે•વધારે• વાંચશો •પંણ•જેમ•આપરે•વારતા•આગાલ•ચલાવતા•જઈશું• તેમ•તમે•જોશો•કે•ઈ•સુધરાઈ•હેનરીનાં•વખતમાં•પુરી•નહી•થાઈ•હતી•માતર•હેનો• પરારંભ•થાઈઓ•હતો•પંણ•ઈ•કાંમ•ઘણુંખરું•હેનાં•છોકરા•છઠા• ઈડવરડનાં•વખતમાં• થઈઉં* તોપંણ•ઈશવરે• આઠમાં•હેનરીનાં•વશીલાથી•

ઘણુંજ•શારું•કીધું•અને•તેણે•ધરંમ•પુશતકનો•અંગરેજી•બોલીમાં•તરજુમો•કરાવેઓ•તથા•તે•વાંચવાનો•હોકંમ•આપેઓ• તેથી•શારા•અને•ભણેલા•પંનડીત•લોકોને•રઇએતની•આગલ•શાચાઇનો•ખોલાશો•કરવાનો•દીલાશો•મલેઓ•અને•એ•પરમાંણે•શુધરાઇ•જે•હેનરીનાં•છોકરાનાં•રાજમાં•વધી•તેહેની•શરુઆત•થાઇ*

પંણ•આઠમાં•હેનરીનાં•રાજમાં•બીજી•બીનાંઓ•બની•તે•કેહેવી•જોઇએ*

હેનરી•જેવારે•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો• તેવારે•તેહેની•અઢાર•વરશની•ઉમર•હતી*એ•પાદશા•અતી•ઘણો•ખરચાઉ•હતો•અને•હેને•મોજ•ઘણીજ•પશંદ•હતી•અને•જે•પઇશા•હેનાં•ચતુર•બાપે•શંભાલીને•એકઠા•કીધા•હતા• તે•પઇશા•મગારુરીનાં•તથા•મુરખાઇનાં•કાંમોમાં•ખરાબ•કરવા•લાગો*દેવલનો•વડો•અધીકારી•ઉલશી•નાંમનો•શખશ•હતો•તે•હેનો•વડો•પરધાંન•તથા•મશલતીઓ•હતો•એ•શખશ•મગારુર•અને•ગારવ•વાલો•હતો•અને•પોતાનાં•પાદશાનાં•જેહેવો•એ•બી•ઉડાઉ•અને•લુછો•હતો*એ•ધણી•એક•નીચને•પેટ•જનમેઓ•હતો•પંણ•પાદશાએ•તેહેને•રાજમાં•શરવેથી•મોહોટી•પદવીએ• અને•શરવેથી•વધારે•આબરૂ•વાલે•દરજે•ચહડાવી•દીધો• તેથી•શઘલે• વાંધેનાં•લોકો• તેહેની•અદેખાઇ•કરવા•લાગાં•અને• તેહેને•ધીકારવાલાગાં*પંણ•આએ•પરથવીની•મોહોટાઇ•ઉપર• જે•શખશ•આશા•રાખેચ• તે•શખશ•દુખીછે*ઉલશીને•જે•મોહોટી• મોહોટી•આબરુ•મલી• તેથીજ•તેહેનો•જુડો•નાશ•થાએઓ•કાંએ•કે•જેવારે• તેહેની•મરજી•અને•પાદશાની•ઇછા•એક•નહી•મલી•તેવારે•તેહેની•ખરાબી•થાઇ* તમે•ઘણી•વેલા•શાંભલેઉંચ•કે•આઠમાં•હેનરીની•છ•બાએડી•હતી•તેહેમાં• પેહેલી•બાએડી•આરાગોનની•કેથેરાઇન•નાંમની•હતી*અને•જેવારે•હેનરી•તેહેની•શંગાથે•ધરાઓ•અને•વાજબીથી•તેહેને•છોડી• દેવાઇ•નહી•તેવારે•તેહેની•શાથે•છુટાછેરા•કરવાનું• તેણે•એક•આજબ•જેહેવું•બાંહાંનું•કાહાડેઉં• અને•એ•કાંમમાં•ઉલશી•તેહેની•મદત• કરશે•હેવું•તે•ધારતો•હતો•પંણ•એ•વાત•ઉલશીને•ગમી•નહી•એટલા•શારું•પાદશાએ• તેહેની•ખરાબી•કરવા•માંડી*ઉલશી•શ્રી•ઇઆરકનો•આરચબીશપ•(એટલેજે•મુખીઅ•પાદરી•)હતો• તેહેને• ઇઆરકમાં• જે•મે

હેલ•આપેલો•હતો•તે•તેહેની•પાશેથી•છીનવી•લીધો•અને•પાદશાઈ•તેહેનાં•શઘલાં•કીમતી•વાશણો•તથા•ઉનમેં•ઘરશીનગારવાનો•શામન•જપત•કરી•લીધો•અને•પછે•તેહેને•પકરીને•કેદ•કરાવેઓ•અને•મોહોટી•તકશીરને•વાશતે•તેહેની•છાંડણી•કરવા•શ્રી•લંડન•બોલાવી•મંગાવેઓ* તેણે•શફર•શરૂ•કીધી•અને•શ્રી•લેશટર•ગીઓ•પણ•ઈ•લાંમબી•શફર•કરતી•વખત•હેને•ઘણીજ•મેહેનત•પડી•કાંઈજે•ઈ•બુઢો•આજારી•અને•કમજોર•હતો* જેવારે•તે•શ્રી•લેશટર•આવી•પોહોચેઓ•તેવારે•તે•દેવલમાં•ગીઓ•અને•તાંહાં•પાદરીઓ•તેહેને•મલવા•આવેઆ* તેણે•તેવોને•કહુંકે•હું•તમારી•આગલ•મરવા•આવેઓચ•અને•અરજ•કરૂપકે•ધરમને•વાશતે•થોડીઈક•મટોડી•મહને•આપો•કે•તેથી•માહારાં•થાકી•ગીઈલાં•હાડ•દફનાઈ*

— હલવે•હલવે•શફર•કરતો•તે•શ્રી•લેશટર•આગલ•આવેઓ•
દેવલમાં•આવીને•ઉતરેઓ•અને•તાંહાં•બુજરોગ•પાદરી•
તથા•દેવલનાં•શઘલાં•લોકોઈ•તેહેને•ભારે•માંન•આપેઉં•
ઈણે•આઈ•બોલ•તેવોને•કહ્યા•“— રે•બુજરોગ•પાદરી•
ઈક•જઈફ•આદમી•કે•જેહેની•રાજધાંનીનાં•તોફાંનથી•ખરાબી•
થાઈય•
તે•પોતાનાં•થાકેલાં•હાડ•તમારી•આગલ•દટાવાને•વાશતે•આવેઓય•
તેહેને•ધરમને•વાશતે•થોડીઈક•મટોડી•આપો*”

શેકશપીઅર*

પછે•તે•દુખ•અને•પશતાવા•ભરેલો•થાઈને•તરત•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•અને•દુખી•થાતો•હતો•કે•તેણે•દુનીઆંની•મોહોટાઈ•મેલવવામાં•પોતાનો•આખો•જનમારો•ખરાબ•કીધો•તેહેને•બદલે•તેણે•શવરગમાં•જવાનો•વીચાર•કીધો•નહીકે•જાંહાં•કાંરત•તથા•શુખ•તથા•કાંમતી•ઈનાંમ•શદાકાલ•હોઈછે* તે•બોલેઓ•કે• “મે•જેહેવી•મેહેનત•લેઈને•માહારા•પાદશાની•ચાકરી•કીધીય•તે•કરતાંને•હરધી•મેહેનત•લેઈને•અગારજો•મે•માહારા•ઈશવરની•શેવા•કીધી•હતે•તો•માહારા•બુઢાપામાં•તે•મહને•માહારા•શતરૂને•હવાલે•કરતે•નહી*”

હેનરીએ• પોતાની•બાએડીને•દુર•કરવાનું • કારણ•એમ•બતલાવેઉં •કે• હેનાં લગાન• રૂકવાજબી•નહી•હતાં•કાંએજે•એ•બાએડી• હેનરીનાં•વડાભાઈ•આરથરની•વીધવા•હતી*પણ• એ•રાંણી• હેનરી શાથે•અઠાર•વરશસુધી•રહીને• તેહેને•પેટે•એક• દીકરી• થાઈ•(કે જેહેને•પછવાડેથી•ખુનીં•રાંણી• મેરી•કરીકેહેતા•હતા•)તાંહાંસુધી એ•કારણ• હેનરીનાં•મનમાં•આવેઉં •નહી*હેનું •ખરૂ•કારણ•એ•હતું જે•હેનરીની•કચેરીમાં•એક•જુવાંન•અને•ખુબસુરત•અશાતરી •હતી તેહેને• પાદશાહ• પોતાની• બાએડી•કરતાં•વધારે•ચાહાતા•હતા• તેહેનું •નાંમ•આનાં•બુલન•હતું •અને•હેનરીએ• તેહેની•શાથે•પરણવા • શારૂં • કેથેરાંએનને• દુર•કરવાનો•વીચાર•કીધો•એવાત•ઉલશીને•તથા• પેપીશટી• (એટલે જે• રોમનકેથોલીક•)લોકોને•ગમી•નહી•શાવાશતે• જે• આનાબુલન• પરોટેશટેનટનો• ધરંમ•પશંદ•કરતી•હતી• અને•એ•લગાન•કરાવાને•શારૂં • ઉલશીનાં•રાજી•હતા•માંટે•પાદશાહ• તેહેનાં ઉપર• ગુશે•થએઆ• અને• તેહેનો•નાશ• કીધો*એપછે•જલદીથી• પાદશાહ આનાબુલન•શંગાથે•ગુપતમાં• પરણીઆ•અને• થોડાએક•વખત•પછી તેહેને•જાહેરમાં•(પોતાની•બાએડી•)કબુલ•કીધી• તેહેને•પેટે•એક• છોકરી•થઈ•તે•નાંમીચી• એલીજબેથ•રાંણી•હતી*પણ• પાદશાહ•જેમ•આગલી•રાંણીથી• ધરાઆ• હતા• તેમજ•એ• રાંણીથીબી• વેહેલોજ•કંટાલેઆ•અને• હેનેબી• દુર•કરવા•માંગી• અને•બીજી•જેન શીમોર•નાંમની•ખુબશુરત•અશાતરી•શંગાથે•પરણવા• માંગેઉં*એ• કાંમ•કરવાને•વાશતે•તેણે•રાંણીની•ઉપર• એક•દાવો•લાવવાનો• ગોઠી•કાહાડેઆ•કે• જેથી• તેહેને•એનશાફની•રીતે•મરાવી• નાંખે — તેહેનાં•ઉપર•છીનાલાનો• મોહોટો•ગુના•ઠેડવેઆ•અને•તેહેને•ગરદન•મારવાની•શજા•આપી•અને•ટાવરહીલ•નાંમની•જગો•ઉપર•તેહેનું •ડોકું •કાપી•નાંખેઉં*શ્રી•કેલેશનો•જલાદ• કે• જે•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં• કરતાં•વધારે•ચાલાક• જાંણીઆમાં• આવતો• હતો• તેહેને• શ્રી•ફરાંશથી• બોલાવી•મંગાવેઆ•હતો•તેહેને•હાથે•એ•અશાતરીને• ગરદન•મરાવી*તેહેનાં•મુરદાંને• એક•હલકી• પેટીમાં•નાંખીને• ટુરંગમાં•ડાટેઉં*અગરજો•તમે• કોએ• વેલા•શ્રી•લંડનની•ટુરંગ•જોવા•જશોતો•

જે•કુહાડીથી•આનાબુલન•રાંણીનું• ડોકું•કાપી•નાંખેઉં•હતું•તે જ•કુહાડી•તેઓને•દેખાડશે*

હેને•બીજે•દીવશે•એ•ઘાતકી•અને•જુલંમગાર•પાદશાહે•જેનશીમોર•શંગાથે•લગાંન•કીધાં•અને•તેણે•કહુકે•મારી•પેહેલી•બાએડીને•પેટની•મેરી•તથા•બીજી•બાએડીને•પેટની•છોકરી•ઈલીજેબેથ•એબંધેનો•કાંઈ•હકનથી•અને•તેહેમાંની•કોઈબી•છોકરી•તખત•ઉપર•બેશે•નહી*આપંણને•ખચીતકરી•જાંણવું•જોઈએકે•પાદશાહનાં•હેવાં•ઘાતકી•અને•જુલંમનાં•કાંમોથી•લોકોનાં•મંનમાં•ઘણોજ•કંટાલો•ઉતપન•થઆ•અને•ઘણીએક•ફીશાદ•તથા•બલવો•થઆ—અને•પાહાદશાએ•પોપનો•અખતીઆર•નાકબુલ•કીદો•તોબી•તે•પોપનો•ધરમ•પાલતો•હતો•માંટે•જે•કેથોલીક•લોકો•પોપને•હરેક•કાંમમાં•વડો•અને•મુખીઅ•કરી•જાંણતા•હતા•તેવોને•પાહાદશા•ભારે•શીખશા•કરતો•હતો•અને•જે•પરોટેશટેનટ•લોકો•પોપનાં•ધરમને•કબુલ•કરતા•નહી•હતા•તેવોનેબી•શજા•દેતો•હતો—હેનો•ગોશો•ઘણોજ•બીહાંમણો•હતો•અને•હેની•રઈએત•નારાજી•હતી•તથા•અડચંણ•કરતી•હતી•તેથી•પાહાદશા•ઘણોજ•ગુશે•ભરાતો•હતો*પંણ•તેહેને•પેટે•છોકરો•અવતરઆ•તેથી•તેહેનો•શભાવ•થોડીએક•મુદત•લગણ•સુધરેઆ•(એ•પછે•તે•છોકરો•છઠા•એડવરડ•નાંમનો•ઓતમ•પાહાદશા•થઆ•)પણ•તેહેનાં•જનમેઆને•બીજે•દીવશે•પાહાદશાની•રાંણી•મરંણ•પાંમી*

એ•પછે•થોડેક•દીવશે•પાહાદશાએ•બીજી•બાએડી•કરવા•માંગી•અને•એ•વખત•એણે•એક•પરદેશની•અશાતરી•જેહેને•પાહાદશાએ•કદી•જોઈ•નહી•હતી•પંણ•હોલબેન•નાંમનાં•ચીતારાએ•તેહેની•શબી•ખુબ•સુરત•બનાવેલી•હતી•પંણ•જેવારે•તે•અશાતરી•(વ.•ઈંગલંડમાં•આવી•અને•પાહાદશા•તેહેને•શ્રી•રાચેશટર•આગલ•મલેઆ•તેવારે•તેણે•કહુકે•એતો•માતી•અને•બદ•સુરત•બઈરીછે•માંટે•તે•મહને•કદી•પશંદ•પડનાર•નહી*તોપણ•તેહેની•શંગાથે•લગાન•કરવાનો•તેણે•ઠરાવ•કીદો•કાંએજે•એ•લગાનથી•(શ્રી•ઈઆરોપનાં•)ખંડ•ઉપરનાં•લોકો•હેનાં•મીતર•અને•મદત•કરનારા•દોશત•થાશે•અને•હેનું•

બળ•વધ્યો*તોપંણ•એ•અશાતરી•પાહાદશાને•ગમતી•નહી•હતી•માંટે તેહેને•દુર•કરવા•માંગી•અને•વલી•તે•શીવાએ•પાહાદશા•કેથેરાઈન•હાવારડ•નાંમની•બીજી•અશાતરીને•ચાહાતો•હતો•અને•તેણે•એ•રાંણીને•કાહાડી•મેલી અને•નવી•માશુક•શંગાથે•પરણેઆ*થોડેક શુધી•હેનરી•પોતાની•નવી•બાઈડી•શંગાથે•મજા•દેખાઆ•પણ•હેને•તરતજ•ખબર•મલીકે•તેહેનાં•ભુડાં•લખણ•હતાં•અને•લગન•થઆની•આગમચ•તથા•લગન•પછેથી•નાલાએક•કરતુકનાં•વાંકમાં•આવી•હતી*તેહેનો•ઈનશાફ•થાઆ•અને•તે•તકશીરવાંન•ઠરી•અને•તેહેને•ટાવરહીલ•નાંમની જગા•ઉપર•ગરદન•મારી*

એ•શઘલા•વખત•શુધી•પાહાદશા•ધરમનાં•કાંમમાં•ગુંતેલો•હતો•અને•ખરેખર•એ બાબત•વીશે•હેને•શારી•વીદેઆ•આવડતી•હતી•પંણ•ધરમની•વીદેઆ•જેછે•તે•ખરા•ધરમ•તથા•ધરમની•ચાલ•ચલણથી•જુદીછે*તે•વખત•કેથોલીક•તથા•પરાતશટેનટ•લોકો•વચે•કજીઆ•(થતા•હતા•તે) વીશે•પાહાદશાએ•કાંઈ•પુશતકો•લખેઆં*હેની•આગાઉ•પાહાદશાએ•ધરમની•શાત કીરીઆજાં•લાભમાં•એક•પોથી•લખી•હતી•કાં: જે•કેથોલીક•લોકો•કેહેચકે•શાત•કીરીઆછે•અને•આપરે•પરાટેશટેનટ•લોકો•કહીજીએચકે•માતરે•બેજ•ધરમની•કીરીઆછે•તેહેની•વીગત—બેપટીશમ•(એટલેજે•ઈશાઈ•ધરમમાં•લાવીને•કરીશટીઅંન•કરવાની•કીરીઆ•)અને•લારડશ•શપર•(એટલેજે•ઈશુની•ઈઆદ•ગારીનાં•જમણની•કીરીઆ•)અને•આપરે•હેવુ કહીએ•તેએટલા•વાશતે•જે•ધરમ•પુશતકમાં•હેવુ•કાંઈ•(લખેલુ•) આપણને•જણાતુ•નથી•કે•જે•ઉપરથી•આપરે ખરા•પણાંથી•કહી•શકીએકે•એ•બેથીબી•વધારે•ધરમની•કીરીઆછે* એ•શાતે•ધરમની•કીરીઆનો•હેનરીએ•બચાવ•કીધો•તેથી•પોપ•ખુશી•થઆ•અને•તેહેને•"ધરમને•બચાવનાર"નો•ખેતાબ•આપેઆ=એ•શારો•ખેતાબ•હતો•અને•એ•દીવશથી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•પાહાદશાવો•એ•ખેતાબને•રાખતા•આવેઆચ•અને•આઠમાં•હેનરીને•એ•ખેતાબ•ઘટતો•નહી•હતો*મરનાર•રાંણીનાં•ગુજરેઆપછે•આશરે•એક•વરશે•હેનરીએ•બીજી•બાઈડી•કીધી•તે•કેથેરાઈનપાર•નાંમની•વીધવા•હતી•અને•હોશીઆર

તથા•ધરંમી•અશતરી•હતી•અને•પોતાની•માઆલુ•ચાલથી•પાદશાહનાં ઘાતકી•શલાવજે•ડંડો•પારવા•માંગાતી•હતી*પંણ•કે•વાત•કાંઈ•તેહેનાં•હાતમાં•હતી•નહી•અને•કે•વખત•ધરંમની•બાબત•વીશે•પાદશાહ•શંગાથે•તેહેને•કાંઈ•રદબદલ•થાઈ•તેથી•નજદીક•તેહેનો•જાંન•જતો•રેહે•હેવી•ધાશતી•હતી*તોપણ•કે•બાબત•વીશે•તેહેને•કાંઈ•તરેહેથી•નરમ•પાડેઓ•તોપણ•પાદશાહકે•પોતાની•રઈઅત•નાં•ઉપર•ઘણીજ•શખતી•કીધી•અને•તેંણે•ઘણાંક•ઓતમ•અને•લાઈકી•વાલા•શખશોને•મારી•નાંખેઆ*જેમ•હેનું•મોહોત•પાશે•આવતું•ગીઉં•તેમ•હેનાં•શરીરનાં•દરદથી•હેનો•મીજાજ•વધારે•નઠારો•અને•શખત•થતો•ગીઓ*હેનાં•પગમાં•કે•દરદ•ભરેલો•આજાર•હતો•તે•રોગ•ઘણોજ•બીગારતો•ગીઓ•અને•અંતે•પાદશાહ•તેથી• ૧૫૪૭ નાં•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*કે•પાદશાહનાં•રાજમાં•ઘણીકે•હેઆંન•પોંચાડેઆજોગ•બાબતો•બનીચ•પણ•હું•તમને•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશની•વારતાનાં•મથારાં•કહી•શલલાવા•માંગુચ•અને•કદાચ•જેવારે•તમને•ફુરશદ•અને•વખત•હોઈ•તેવારે•કે•બાબત•વીશે•તમારી•મેરે•શારીપખે•વાંચજો*

હુંછું•તમારો•માઈઆલુ•બાપ*

શવાલો*

આઠમો•હેનરી•કીઆ•વરશમાં•રાજ•કરવા•વાગો*

કે•પાદશાહમાં•રાજનાં•ધરંમ•બાબે•શું•મોહોટી•ઉલટપાલટ•થાઈ*

ધરંમની•શુધરાઈનો•શું•અરથ*

ધરંમમાં•શુધરેઆની•અગાઉ•ખરીશટી•ધરંમમાં•કોણને•વરો•કરી જાંણતા•હતા*

પોપ•કાંહાં•રેહે•છે*

ધરંમનાં•શુધરેઆની•અગાઉ•બાઈબલ• (કેટલેજે•ધરંમ•પુશતક•) તથા•બંદગી•કરવાની•ચોપડીઓ•કેઈ•ભાશામાં•લખી•હતી*

આઠમાં•હેનરીનાં•રાજમં•છાપવાનો•હુનર•માલમ•હતો•કે•નહી*

તેહેની•ઘણીકે•મુદત•અગાઉ•તે•હુનર•જાંણેલો•હતો•શું*

શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•દેશમાં•પરથમ•કીઆ•શખશે•કેતાબ•છાપી*

છાપેઆથી•લોકોમાં•વીદીઆ•વધી•કે•નહી*

છાપવાનો•હુનર•જાણાંઆ•નહી•હતો•તેવારે•કેતાબો•કેમ•બનાવતા•હતા*

તે•વખત•કેતાબો•ઘણી•થોડી•તથા•મોઘી•હતી•તથા•તે•મલવાને•અડચણ•પડતી•હતી•કે•શું*

શું•હેનરી•શૂધરાઇનો•ખરો•અને•ચુશત•દોશત•હતો•કે•શું*

હેનરીનાં•વખતમાં•શૂધરાઇ•પુરી•થાઇ•હતી•અથવા•શરૂથતી•હતી*

હેનરીનો•મુખીઅ•પરધાંન•તથા•મશલત•આપનાર•કોણ•હતો*

ઉલશીની•આબરૂ•કેહેવી•હતી*

હેનરીની•પેહેલી•બાઈડી•કોણ•હતી*

જેવારે•હેનરીએ•પોતાની•પેહેલી•બાઈડીને•છોડી•દેવા•માંગેઉં•તેવારે•કારડીનાલઉલશીએ•તે•કરમ•કરવાશારૂં•હેનરીને•શલાહ•આપી અને•મદત•કીધી•કે•શું*

તેપછી•હેનરીએ•ઉલશીને•શું•કીધું*

ઉલશી•કાંહાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તે•તમે•કહી•શકોચ•અને•તેહેનાં•મરંણની•બીનાં•શરવે•કહી•શકશો•કે•શું*

પાદશાહે•પોતાની•બાઈડીને•મુકી•દેવાશારૂં•શું•બાંહાંનું•કાહાડેઉં*

પાદશાહનાં•તે•અશતરી•શાથે•કેટલું•થઉં•લગાંન•થઆં•હતાં*•

પાદશાહની•તેહેને•પેટે•છોકરી•થઇ•હતી•અને•તેહેનું•નાંમ•શું*

તથા•પછવાડેથી•તે•કોણ•થઇ*

તેપછી•પાદશાહે•કોણની•શાથે•પરણવા•માંગેઉં*

આંનાબુલેન•પોપનાં•ધરંમમાં•હતી•અથવા•પરોટેશટેનટ•ધરંમમાં•હતી*

આંનાબુલેનને•પેટે•કાંઇ•છોકરાં•થઆં•કે•શું*

તેહેનું•નાંમ•શું•તથા•તે•આગલ•કોહોન•થઇ*

અંતે•પાદશાહ•આંનાબલેનથી•ધરાઓ•કે•શું*

પછી•તેહેનું•શું•થઉં*

તેપછી•પાદશાહ•કોણની•શાથે•પરંણેઓ*

પાદશાહઈ•પરોટેશટેનટ•તથા•પેપીશટ•લોકોને•શૂં•કીધુ*
હેની•તરીજી•રાંણી•જેન•શીમોરને•પેટે•કાંઈ•છોકરુ•થઉં*
તેહેનું•નાંમશૂં*•તથા•તે•હવેપછે•કોણ•થઆ*
ઈ•રાંણીનું•શેવટ•શૂં•થઉં*
ઈ•મુવાપછી•પાદશાહઈ•બીજી•રાંણી•શોધી•કે•શૂં*
તેહેનુ•નાંમશૂં*
તેહેનો•ચેહેરો•કેહવો•હતો*
પાદશાહે•તેહેની•શાથે•લગાંન•કીધાની•અગાઉ•તેહેની•તશવીર•પાદશાહને•દેખાડવા•શારુ•કીઆ•ચીતારાઈ•કાહાડી•હતી*
તે•તશવીર•તેહેનાં•જેહવીજ•હતી•કે•શૂં*
તે•વખત•પાદશાહ•કોઈ•બીજી•અશતરી•ઉપર•આશક•થાઈઓ•હતો•કે•શૂં*
શ્રી•કલીવશની•આંન•ઈ•રાંણીને•પાદશાહે•શી•તરેહે•દુર•કીધી*
પેપીશટ•લોકોનાં•ધરમની•કેટલી•કીરીઆ•છે*
આપરે•પરોટેશટેનટ•લોકો•કેટલી•“કરાઈશટની•ફરમાવેલી•ધરમની•”કીરીઆ•કબુલ•રાખીઈએ*
હેનરી•પાદશાહ•ધરમનાં•કાંમમો•પંડીત•કેહવાતો•હતો•કે•શૂં*
તેણે•ધરમજી•કીરીઆ•વીવેઈક•પુશતક•બનાવેઉ•હતુ•કેશૂં*
ઈ•બાબતમાં•હેનરી•પોપજી•અથવા•પરોટેશટેનટની•તરફ•થાઈઓ•હતો*
પાદશાહનુ•(બનાવેલુ•)પુશતક•પોપને•પશંદ•પડેઉં•કેશૂં*
તે•વેલાઈ•પોપે•પાદશાહને•શૂં•ખેતાબ•આપેઓ*
તે•ખેતાબ•તે•દીવશથી•શ્રી•ઈગલંડનાં•પાદશાહ•રાખતા•આવેઆચ•કેશૂં*
પાદશાહે•બીજી•બાઈડી•કીધી•કે•શૂં*
તેહેનુ•નાંમશૂં*
કેથેરાંઈન•હાવારડને•(પાદશાહે)•શૂં•કીધું*
કેથેરાંઈન•હાવારડને•ગારદન•મારેઆ•પછે•હેનરીઈ•બીજી•રાંણી•કીધી•શૂં*

તેહનુ•નાંમ•શું*
તે•રાંણી•શારી•હતી•કે•શું*
કેથેરાંઈન•પાર•પાદશાહની•પછવાડે•જીવતી•રહીકે•શું*
૬•પાદશાહ•કીઆ•વરશમો•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ*

LETTER XXI.

MY DEAR BOY,

I TOLD you that Henry the Eighth left behind him two daughters and a son. The daughters were Mary and Elizabeth, and they both, afterwards, became queens; but the son reigned before either of his sisters. This son was Edward the Sixth. He was no more than nine years old when his father died, and he only lived till he was sixteen. He was a prince of excellent qualities, seeming to find all his pleasure in the pursuit of what was good. He was a good scholar; and, what was much better still, he studied to cultivate a religious spirit in himself, and to encourage it in others. He was particularly anxious to promote the great cause of the Reformation, and to get rid of those errors, which the Roman Catholics had grafted on the religion of the Bible; and, during his reign, the superstitious practices of the Church of Rome were almost wholly laid aside. The nation was glad to receive this change, and rejoiced to see the king so earnest in his support of the truth. The people, now, were encouraged to think for themselves, and were able to judge what was the true doctrine of the Scripture; for the Bible was translated into the English language, and they could now read it themselves; and this led them to see that many of the ceremonies, which were taught by the Romish Church to be necessary, had no foundation at all in Scripture, and that they ought, therefore, not to be continued. There were, besides, many learned and enlightened bishops, who strove earnestly to promote the Protestant religion. You have heard of archbishop Cranmer, and bishops Ridley and Latimer, who, with other good men, took great pains to make known the Gospel of Christ, and to bring the people to the knowledge and love of the truth. The young king took great pleasure in hearing these good men preach, and in reading the books which they wrote, for he wished to know the doctrines of the Gospel, and the duties which belonged to his station; and he was anxious that his subjects should learn the same things. We have reason to be thankful, even at this day, that it pleased the Almighty to graft in the heart of this young prince, the love of his name. The mercy has come down to ourselves,—we are ourselves partakers of it,—the vain ceremonies of Popery are laid aside by us. But we have all need to examine ourselves, to see whether we really, from our hearts, embrace the religion which we profess, and whether we are really anxious to live according to those divine instructions, which it is our happiness, and our great privilege, tó have now within our reach. The great object of the Reformation was to get rid of those abuses which had been introduced into the Church. There are, no doubt, good and excellent men among the Papists; and such persons, being naturally attached to the religion in which they have been educated, are inclined to defend those practices in the Romish Church which we condemn; they tell us, that these practices either have their foundation in Scripture, or that they were introduced for some good purpose. Whatever might have been the original intention of the Roman Catholic ceremonies, that religion had certainly introduced many practices among the people which we cannot at all consider to be scriptural, and many which lead to very mistaken notions of the religion of Christ. They had their churches filled with images, and pictures of saints, and of the Virgin Mary: and to these the people would kneel down, and offer a sort of worship, which we consider to belong only to the Supreme Being himself. Then they thought, that, by inflicting punishment on temselves, and undergoing severe mortifications, they could atone for their past sins; and this was an opinion which would naturally lead them to trust to their own penances for the forgiveness of sin, and thus draw their thoughts from the only true atonement made for sin,—the sacrifice of Christ. On the merits of our blessed Saviour we are to depend for the pardon of our sins;—and, whilst we receive this, our atonement, for our past sins, we are to make it our great desire and endeavour, for the time to come, to forsake sin;—for, unless this be our aim, we are not living in a state of preparation for that kingdom which Christ hath purchased for us. She Gospel of Christ teaches us, that we are to cultivate a spirit of holiness, and of obedience to the will of God, and shows us, that, from him, we are to derive our help, to enable us thus to live to his service.

How thankful then, ought we to be, that, in this country, the Protestant religion is established, which enables us to search the Scriptures, and thus puts us in possession of those important truths which concern our everlasting happiness! And how anxiously ought we to endeavour to live according to the teaching of those Scriptures, which are now within the reach of us all!

When king Henry the Eighth died, his son Edward was too young to govern the nation; and the business of the state was committed to the management of executors and guardians. At the head of these was the duke of Somerset, the king's uncle, who was called the *Protector*. This nobleman was an earnest supporter of the Reformation; and his exertions were of great service to the cause. It flourished in a wonderful manner, and was favoured by nearly all the nation, although there were some persons who still adhered to the ancient opinions, and tried to check the progress of the reformed religion. Some disturbances were excited by these, and some blood unhappily was shed. Two bishops, Gardiner and Bonner, of whom we shall hear more by and bye, still clung to the Romish faith, and, for their opposition, they were sent to the Tower. We cannot help lamenting, when we see that not only Papists, but Protestants also, should have recourse to violence, for the sake of propagating their opinions. The Papists, we know, were dreadfully cruel towards those who differed from them. *We* ought to show a better spirit. So good a cause does not require to be supported by oppression and force. This king's short reign, though so happy for the nation, was one of much grief and trouble to himself. You recollect that he had two sisters, Mary and Elizabeth ; and, in case of the king's death, the crown would naturally belong to the eldest of these sisters. But, it was said, that the late king had set them both aside by his will, declaring that they were not born in lawful wedlock, as he acknowledged neither of their mothers to have been his lawful wife. This was exactly in accordance with the tyrannical spirit of Henry the Eighth. If these daughters had really been illegitimate, the next heir to the throne would have been the queen of Scotland, for she was the grand-daughter of a sister of Henry the Eighth. There was, however, another lady, called Jane Grey, an excellent lady, who was related to the king, but not near enough to give her any claim to the crown.

This good lady Jane, indeed, never wished to put in any such claim ; but there happened to be a proud ambitious nobleman, the duke of Northumberland, who contrived that his son, lord Guildford Dudley, should marry lady Jane ; and then he entered into a scheme to get this lady to be acknowledged the heir to the throne ; and he even prevailed on the young king to declare that lady Jane should be his successor.

I ought to tell you, that this young king had a very delicate constitution ; and his health was now in a very bad state, and he began to show strong symptoms of decline ;—and this was probably the reason why the duke of Northumberland was so desirous of having lady Jane at once declared heir to the throne. The king's illness increased, and his end seems to have been hastened by bad management. The duke of Northumberland was constantly about him: he sent away the regular physician, and had the king entrusted to the care of an ignorant old woman, who declared that she could cure him. Whether this was a contrivance of Northumberland to get rid of the king, as some historians say, I will not pretend to determine. From the time, however, that the old woman was introduced, the king continued to grow worse. This, indeed, was likely enough to be the case, without our being obliged to believe the severe accusation against the duke. The king died in the year 1553, at Greenwich,—where there was then a royal palace,—in the sixteenth year of his age, and the seventh of his reign. His loss was lamented by all the good people in the kingdom; for so early a love of all that was excellent, did, indeed, give the best hopes of a happy and prosperous reign.

I am, &c.

QUESTIONS.

In what year did Henry VIII. die ?

How many children did he leave ?

What were their names ?

Which of these reigned first ?

How old was Edward VI. when he began to reign ?

What was his character ?

Did he encourage the Reformation ?

What does the Reformation here mean ?

What three bishops are particularly mentioned as great encouragers of the Reformation ?

Did the young king take great pleasure in hearing these good men preach ?

In the Roman Catholic times, had the people the Bible in their own language ?

Did not the ignorance of Scripture lead to many superstitious practices ?

Will making long prayers, and kneeling before the statues of the Virgin Mary and of Saints,—or will any pains or penances we can inflict on ourselves, take away the guilt of our sins ?

Who is it, alone, that can atone for our sins ?

But may we go on in the practice of sin, because Christ has atoned for our past offences ?

You are aware, then, that it is the duty of one who believes in Christ to forsake sin, and to be desirous of serving God ; or, as the Scripture expresses it, to be " zealous of good works."

Ought we Protestants, then, who can read the Scriptures, to be very anxious to believe what they teach us, and to live according to their directions ?

As the king was very young, was it not necessary that he should have guardians to manage the affairs of the nation ?

Who was at the head of these ?

What was he called ?
Did *Protector* Somerset favour the Reformation ?
And did the cause of the Reformation flourish during this young king's reign ?
What two bishops, in particular, still clung to the Roman Catholic cause ?
Were they sent to the Tower ?
Who was mentioned, by some persons, as the right person to reign, in case of the king's death ?
Who encouraged lady Jane Grey to claim the crown ?
What was now the state of the king's health ?
In what year did the king die?
How old was he ?
How long had he reigned ?

પતર• ૨૧

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

મેં•તમને•કહુહતું જે•આઠમાં•હેનરીને•બે•છોકરીઓ•તથા ઈક•છોકરો•થઈઓ•હતો*તે•છોકરીઓનું•નાંમ•મેરી•અને•ઈલીજબેથ•તેવો•બંને• પછવાડેથી•રાંણીઓ•થાઈ• પંણ•તે•છોકરાઈ•પોતાની• બેહેનોની• આગમચ• રાજ•કીધું* ઈ•છોકરાનું•નાંમ•છડો•ઈડવરડ*જેવારે•હેનો•બાપ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તેવારે•ઈ•નવ•વરશથી•વધારે•ઉમરનો•હતો•નહી•અને•તે•સોલ•વરશનો•થઓ•તેવારે•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*ઈ•રાજપુતરનાં•ગુણ• ઓતંમ• હતા• જેકાંઈ•શારૂ• તેજ•હેને•ગાંમતું• હતું*ઈ• પોતે• શારીપઠે• ભણેલો•હતો•અને•બીજો•શારો•ગુણ•ઈ•હતો•કે•ઈ•પોતે•ધરંમનાં•મારગમાં લાગીને•બીજાને• પંણ•તે•મારગે•લગાડવાશારૂં • મેહેનત•કરતો•હતો*તે•શ્રુધરાઈનું• મોહોટું •કાંમ•કરવાને•ઘણોજ• ચાહાતો•હતો અને•ખરીશટી•ધરંમમાં•રોમંનકેથોલીક•લોકોઈ•જે•ભુલચુક•દાખલ•કીધી•હતી•તે•કાહાડી•નાંખવા•માંગતો•હતો•અને• રોમંનકેથોલીક• લોકોમાં•જે• અંનઘટતી• ચાલચલંણ•હતી•તે•હેનાં•રાજમાં•તદન•છોડી•દીધી*અને•શારવ•લોકો•ઈ•ફેરફાર•જોઈને•આંનદ•થાઆ•અને પાદશાહ•ઈ•ખરા•ધરંમને•મદત•કરવા•માંગતો•હતો•તે•જોઈને•લોકો•ઘણાંજ• ખુશી• થાઆ*બાઈબલ• (અથવા•ધરંમપુશતક)નો•અંગરેજીભાશામાં•તરજુમો•થઓ•માટે• લોક•તેવાંચીને•વીચાર•કરવા•લા

ગા•અને•ધરંમપુશતકની•ખરીવાતો•ફેરફેર છે• તે•તપાશવા•લાગા— અને•ઈ ઉપરથી• તેવોને•હેવું•જાણાંઉં કે• ઘણીઈક•કીરીઆ• જે•ભારે આગતની છે• હેવું •કેથોલીકનાં•જે• પાદરીઓ• શીખવતા• હતા•તે•ખરીશટીનાં•શાશતરમાં•કાંઈ•લખેલી•નથી• ઈટલા•શારું• તે•કીરીઆ•જારી•રાખવી•જોઈએ•નહી*ઈ•શીવાઈ•ઘણાંઈક•પંનડીત•તથા•મોહોટા વીદીઆવાંન•પાદરીઓ• હતા•જેવોઈ•પરોટેશટેનટ•ધરંમને•મદત•થઈને• તેહેને•વધારવા•લાગા*કરાંમર•કરીને•જે•આરચબીશપ•(ઈટલે જે•મુખીઅ•પાદરી)તથા•રીડલી•તથા• લાટીમર•કરીને•જે•બીજા•પાદરીઓ•તથા•બીજાં•શારાં•માંણશો•હતાં•જેવોઈ•કરાઈશટનો•ધરંમ પરગટ•કરવાને•શારૂં•તથા•લોકો• શચાઈને•ચાહે• અને• ઓલખે•હેવી•જેવોઈ•મેહેનત•કીધી• તેવોનાં•નાંમ•તમે•શાંભલેઆં•હશે* ઈ•શારા•પુરશો•જે•ભાશાંન•(અથવા•વાહેજ•) કરતા•હતા•તે•શાંભલવા•તથા•ઈવોઈ•જે•કીતાબો•બનાવી•હતી•તે•વાંચવાને•જવાંન•પાદશાહ•ઘણોજ•ખુશી•હતો•કાંઈજે•ધરમ•શાશતરમાં• શું છે•તથા• પોતાનાં• ઓહોદાનુ•શું •કાંમ છે•તે•પાદશાહ•જાંણવા•માંગતો•હતો•અને• હેવુ•ચાહાતો•હતોજે• પોતાંની•રઈઈતબી•તેજ•પરમાંણે•જાંણવા•શીખે* હમોને•આજદીન•શુધી•શુકર•કરવુ•જોઈએચકે• પરમેશવરની મરજી•હેવી•થાઈ• કે• આઈ•જવાંન•શાહજાદાનાં• દેલમાં•ઈશવરને•ચહવાની•તથા•પીછાંનવાની•ઈછા•કીધી*ઈ•ઉપકાર•આપણને•મલેઓચ— અને•આપરે•તેહેનાં•ભાગીદાર• થાઈઆચ• — પોપનાં•ધરમની• ફેકટ•કીરીઆવો•જે•હતી• તે•આપણે• છોડી•દીધીચ*પણ•આપણને ઘટેચકે• પોત પોતાની•તપાશ•કરીઈ•અને• પોતાનાં•દેલથી•વમાશીઈકે•જે ધરમમાં•આપરે•છઈઈ•તે•ઉપર•આપણે• ખરેખર•ચુશત•છઈઈ•અથવા•નહી•અને•આપણને•ઈશવરની•જે• શીખાંમણ•મલીચ•કે•જેથી• આપણું• મોદું •શુખ• થાઈ છે•અને•જે• આપણા•હકછે• તે•પરમાંણે•ચાલવાને•વાશતે•આપણે• ચાહીઈચ•અથવા• નહી• તે•તપાશવુ• જોઈઈ*ખરીશટી• ધરંમની• શુધરાઈ•કરવાની• મોટી•મતલબ•ઈ•હતી કે• રોમંન•કેથોલીકનાં•ધરંમમાં• જેકાંઈ•બે• પરવાઈ•ચાલી•હતી• તે• કાહાડી•નાંખવી*ઈમાં•કાંઈ•શક•નથી•કે• રોમંન•કેથોલીક•લોકોમાં

પણ•શારા•અને•ઉતંમ•શખશો છે•અને•હેવા•શખશો•પોતાનાં•જનમથી•જે•ધરમમાં•તેવો•ફેરવાઈઆય તે•ઉપરથી•જેકાંઈ•રોમંન કેથોલીકનાં•ધરમમાં•ચાલ છે•અને•જે•ચાલને•આપરે•ધીકારીઈએ•તેહને•તેવો આશરો•આપેચ — અને•તેવો•આપણને•કેહેચકે•ઈ•ચાલ•ચલણ•ધરમ•પુશતકમાં•ફરમાંવેલી છે•અથવા•કાંઈ•શારાં•કાંમને•વાશતે•બનાવેલી છે*રોમંનકેથોલીક•લોકોનાં•ધરંમની•કીરીઆની•અમે•તેહેવી•મતલબ•હોઈ•પંણ•તે•ધરંમનાં•લોકોમાં•કેટલીઈક•ચાલ•ચલણ છે•તે•કીરીઆ•ધરંમ•પુશતકમાં•ફરમાંવેલી•નથી•હેવું•આપણાં•જોઆંમો આવેચ•અને•તેવી•બીજબી•ઘણીઈક•કીરીઆવો છે•કે•જેથી•કરાઈશટનાં•ધરંમ•બાબે•કેટલાઈક•ખોટા•વીચારો•ઉતપંન•શાઈએ* રોમંનકેથોલીક•લોકો•પોતાનાં•દેવલોમાં•પુતલાં•તથા•શાધુઓની•તથા•કુમારી•મરીઅમની•તશવીરો•રાખતા•હતા•(અને•રાખે છે)અને•તે•પુતલાંવો શાંમને•તે•લોકો•ગુડંણ•મુકીને•પગે•પરેશ•અને•હેવી•તરેહની•પુજા•કરેચ•કે•જે•ઈખલા•પરમેશવરનીજ•કરવી•ઘટેચ•હેવુ•આપણી•નજરમાં•આવેચ*તે•લોકો•તે•વખતે•ધારતા•હતા•કે•પોતાનાં•બદંનને•ઈજા•પોંહોંચાડેઆથી•અને•ઘણીજ•કશટી•ભરેલી•તપકીધાથી•તેવોનાં પાપ•કપાઈ•અને•હેવા•વીચારથી•તે•લોકો•પોતે•તપ•કરીને•પોતાનાં અપરાધની•માફ•માગાતા•અને•કરાઈશટનુ•બલીદાંન•આ પેઆથી•આપણાં•પાપનો•ખરો•બદલો•થાઈ છે•તે•વાત•તેવો•વીશરી•જતા*આપણે•અપરાધ•માફ•થાશે•હેવો•ભરોશો•આપણાં•બંચાવનાર•પેગંમબર•ઉપર•રાખેઓ•જોઈએ•અને•જારેકે•આપણને•આપણાં•કીધેલા•પાપની•માફી•મલેચ•તેવારપછે•આપણે•પાપને•દુર•કરવો•ઘટેચ — કાંઈકે•આપણે•હેવું•કરીઈનહી તો•જે•પાદશાહી•કરાઈશટે આપણે•વાશતે•માંગી•લીધેલી છે•તે•આપણને•મલશે•નહી*કરાઈશટનુ•ધરમ•શાશતર•આપણને•હેવું•શીખવેચ•કે•આપણને•પાક•રેહેવું•જોઈઈ•તથા•ઈશવરની•મરજી•પરમાંણે•નમીને•ચાલવું•જોઈઈ•અને•(તેજ•શાશતર)કેહેચકેઈ•પરમાંણે•ઈશવરની•સેવા•કરવાનુ•આપણને•શામરથ•મલે•ઈટલા•શારુ•આપણને•ઈશવરનીજ•મદદ માંગી•લેવી•જોઈએ*

તેવારે•આપણે•કેહેવી•સુકર•કરવી•જોઇયે•કે•આ•દેશમાં પરોટેશટેનટ•ધરંમ•ચાલે•છે•કે•જેથી•આપણે•ધરંમ•પુશતકોને•સોધી•શખીયે•અને•તે•(સોધેઆ)થી•જે•ખરી•વાતો•આપણી•હમેશાંજી•સુખાકારીને•વીસે•લખેલી•છે•તે•આપણને•મલેચ*અને•આપણને•એ•ધરંમ•પુશતકોની•શીખાંમણો•કે•જે•આપણને•રારવને•મલી•શખેચ•તે•પરમાંણે•ચાલવાને•વાશતે•આપણને•શારી•પડે•મેહેનત•લેવી•ઘટેચ*

આઠમો•હેનરી•જેવારે•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તે•વખત•હેનો•છોકરો•એડવરડ•નાંહાંનો•હતો•તેથી•રાજ•ચલાવાની•તેહનાંમાં•લાએકી•નહી•હતી•એ•શારું•તેહેનું•પાલંન•કરવાને•જે•ઠેડવેલા•હતા•તેવોને•રાજકારભાર•સોપેઓ*એ•પાલંન•કરનારાવોમાં•શ્રી•શાંમરશેટનો•ડીઉક જે•ધણી•પાહાદશાનો•કાકો•થાએ•તે•મુખીઅ•હતો*એ•ઉમરાવ•સુધરાઇને•ઘણોજ•આશરો•આપતો•હતો•અને•એ•કાંમમાં•એણે•જે•મેહેનત•લીધી•તેથી•ઘણોજ•ફાએદો•થાએઓ*અચરત•જેહેવી•રીતે•સુધરાઇ ચાલી•અને•આખી•કોમનાં•લોકો•સુધારાઇ•ઉપર•રાજી•હતાં•તોપણ•કેટલાએક•લોકો•હતા•જેવો•જુનાં•ધરંમ•ઉપર•મુશત•હતા•અને તેવોએ•ધરંમની•સુધરાઇને•અટકાવવા•શારું•મેહેનત•લીધી*એથી•થોડાએક•ફીશાદ•થાઓ•અને•લાએગા•માંઠાં•તેથી•કાંઇ•ખુન•પણ•થઉં*ગારડીનર•તથા•બોનર•નાંમનાં•બેએ•મોહોટા•પાદરીઓ•જેઓ વીસે•હવે•પછે•આપરે•વધારે•શાંભલીસુ•તેવો•હજુરસુધી•રોમન કેથોલીકનાં•ધરમને•વલગી•રહેલા•હતા•અને•તેવો•શાંમને•થાએઆ એટલાશારુ•તેવોને•બંદીખાંનાંમાં•મોકલાવેઆ*આપણથી•દલગીર•શાએઆ•વીનાં•રેહેવાતું•નહી•જે•એખલા•પેપીશટ•લોકો•નહી•પણ•પરોટેશટેનટ•લોકોનેખી•પોતાનો•ધરમ•વધારવાશારૂ•જાશતી•અને•જુલંમ•કરવોપડે*આપરે•જાંણીયેકે•જે•લોકો•પેપીશટનાં•મતથી•જુદા•હતા•તેવો•ઉપર•કેથોલીક•લોકોએ•જારે•રાખતી•કીધી*આપણને•વધારે•શારી•રીતે•ચાલેકે•જોઇએ*કેહેવી•શારી•ખાખાતે•મદદ•આપવા•શારુ•જુલંમ•તથા•જાશતી•કીધી•જોઇએ•નહી*આ એ•પાહાદશાનાં•ટુકાંરાજમાં•લોકોનુ•શારૂ•થાએઉ•તોપણ•પાદશાને•

પોતાને•ઘણુંજ•દુખ•થઉ•અને•ઘણીજ•મેહેનત•પડી*તમને•ઈમાદ•હશેકે•મેરી•તથા•ઈલીજેબેથ•નાંમની•પાહદશાહની•બેઈ•બેહેનો•હતી•અને•અગારજો•ઈ•પાહદશાહ•મરંણ•પાંમેતો•ઈ•બેહેનોમાં•જે•વરી•બેહેન•હોઈ•તેહેને•રાજ•મલે*પણ•હેવું•કેહેતા•હતાજે•મરનાર•(હેનરી•)પાહદશાહે•પોતાનું•વશી•અત•કીધુ•હતું•તેહેમાં•ઈ•બંન્ને•બેહેનોને•દુર•રાખી•હતી•અને•હેવું•કહુહતુજે•હક•વાજબી•હઠાવ•થાઈઆપછે•તેવો•જન•મેઆંતાં•નહી•કાંઈજે•તેવોની•માઈઓને•તે•પોતાની•મોહોરદાર•બાઈડીઓ•કરી•કબુલ•રાખતોતો•નહી* આઠમાં•હેનરીનાં•જુલંમનાં•કાંમ•ઈમ•હોઈય*અગારજો•ઈ•છોકરીઓ•ખરેખર•મોહોરદારને•પેટની•નહી•હતેતો•ઈડવરડની•પછી•ઓસકાટલંડની•રાંણી•તખત•ઉપર•બેશે•કાંઈજે•ઈ•રાંણી•આઠમાં•હેનરીની•બેહેનની•છોકરીની•છોકરી•હતી*પણ•ઈક•બીજી•અશાતરી•વારશ•હતી•તે•જેનગારે•નાંમની•ઘણીજ•શારી•અશાતરી•હતી•અને•પાહદશાહની•શગી•હતી•પંણ•હેવી•છેક•પાશેની•શગી•નહી•કે•તેહેનાંથી•તખત•લેવાનો•દાવો•થાઈ•શકે*

આઈ•શારી•અશાતરી•જેનકાંઈ•હેવો•દાવો•કરવા•ચાહાતી•નહી•હતી•પંણ•શ્રી•નારથંમબરલંડનો•ડીઉક•ઈક•મગરુર•અને•લોભી•અમીર•હતો•તેણે•હેવી•હીકમત•કીધી•કે•પોતાનાં•છોકરા•ગીલપરડ•ડડલીને•જેન•શંગાથે•પરણાંવો•અને•પછે•તેણે•ઈ•અશાતરીને•તખત•મલે•હેવી•વેતરણકીધી•અને•જવાંન•પાહદશાનેબી•શમજાવેઓ•કે•હેનાં•પછે•ઈ•અશાતરી•તખત•ઉપર•બેશે•હેવો•ઈકરાર•કરે*

માહારે•તમને•કહુ•જોઈએ•ઈ•જવાંન•પાહદશાહનુ•ઘણુંજ•નાજુક•બદન•હતું•અને•હેની•તબીઈત•ઘણીજ•બગડી•હતી•અને•ઈ•મરીજશે•હેવી•હેનાંમાં•નીશાંની•દેખાવા•લાગી•ઈટલા•શારુ•શ્રી•નારથંમબરલંડનો•ડીઉક•ચાહાતો•હતો•જે•ઈકદમ•જેન•તખતની•વારશદાર•થાઈ*પાહદશાહનો•આજાર•વધેઓ•અને•તેહેનો•ખરાબ•ઉપાઈ•કીધો•તેથી•તેહેનુ•મોહોત•વેહેલુ•આવેઉં* શ્રી•નારથંમબરલેંડનો•ડીઉક•હર•ઘડી•તેહેની•પાશે•હતો=તેણે•પાહદશાની•દવાઈ•કરનાર•હકીમને•મોકલાવી•દીધો•અને•ઈક•મુરખ•ઘરડી•બઈરીઈ•ક

કહે•હું•શારું•કરશ•તે•બઈરીને•પાહાદશાની•દવાઈ•કરવા•શોપેઓ* પાહાદશાને•મારી•નાંખવાને•વાશતે• નારથંમબરલેંડ• હેવી•વેતરણ• કીધી•એમ• કેટલાએક•વારતા•લખનારાઓ•કેહેચ•તે• હું• ચોકશ•કહી• શકતો•નથી* જે•વખતથી•એ•બુઢી•બઈરીને• લાવેઆ•તે•વખતથી•પાહાદશાનો•હાલ•વધારે•ખરાબ•થાઓ*એ•ડીઉકનાં•ઉપર•મોહોટાં• ઠપકા•મેલેઓચ• તે•માંનીએ•નહી•તોબી• હેવુ•થાઈ•શકેચ* પાહાદશા•શોલ•વરશની•વએમાં•તથા•શાત•વરશ•રાજ•કીધા•પછે• ૧૫૫૩ નાં•વરશમાં•શ્રી•ગારીજીચમાં• મરણ•પાંમેઓ• તાંહાં• તે•વખત•એક•પાહાદશાઈ• મેહેલ•હતો*રાજનાં•જેકાંઈ•શારા•લોકો• હતા•તેવો•શરવ•એ•પાહાદશાનાં•મરણ•પાંમેઆથી•શોક•કરવા•લાગાં•કાંએકે•જેકાંઈ શારૂ• અને• ઓતંમ હતું•તે•નાધલી•ઉમરથી•એ• પાહાદશા• ચાહાતો• હતો•માંટે•એ•ધણી•શારું•અને•શૂખ•ભરેલું•રાજ•કરશે•હેવી•આશા (શરવ•કોઈ•) રાખતું•હતું*

હું• છેઉં•તમારો• અને• તે•વનાંએ*

શવાલો*

આઠમો• હેનરી•કીઆં•વરશમાં•મરણ•પાંમેઓ*
તેહેનાં•કેટલાં•છોકરાં•હતાં*
તેવોનાં•નાંમ• શૂં*
તેહેમાંથી• પેહેલાં• કોણે• રાજ•કીધુ*
છઠો•એડવરડ• જેવારે• રાજ•કરવા•લાગો• તેવારે• તે•કેટલા•વરશનો•ઉમરનો• હતો*
તેહેની• આબરૂ•કેહેવી• હતી*
તેણે•શૂધરાઈને•આશરો- આપેઓ•કે•શૂં*
શૂધરાઈનો•હીઆં•શૂં•માંએનો•થાએછે*
કીઆ•તરણ•પાદરીઓએ• શૂધરાઈને• આશરો•આપેઓ*
એ•શારા•પુરૂશોનુ•ભાશણ•શાંભળવાને•જવાંન• પાહાદશા•ઘણો•ખુશી હતો• કે•શૂં*
રોમન•કેથોલીકનાં•વખતમાં• ધરંમ•પુશતક• લોકો•પાશે• તેવોની• પોતાની• બોલીમાં•લખેલું•હતું•કે•શૂં*

ધરંમ•શાશતરથી•લોકો•નાવાકેફ•હતા•માંટે•ઘણીકિ•ખોટી•ધરંમની•ચાલ•પરી•ગેઇ•કે•નહી *

એકોટી•બંદગી•કર્યાથી•તથા•કુમારી•મરીઅમ•અને•શાધુઓની•મુરતી•આગાલ•ગુઠણ•ઉપર•ઉભા•રહ્યાથી•અથવા• આપણને•પોતાનાં•ડીલ•ઉપર•શખતી•ખેચેઆથી•અથવા•તશદી•ભોગાવેઆથી•શૂં આંપણો•પાપ•કપાએ*

આપણાં•પાપનો•બદલો•કોણ•આપી•શકેચ*

આપણાં•કીધેલા•પાપની•કરાઇશટે•માફી•કરાવી•દિલા•વાશતે•શૂં આપરે•પાપ•કરેઆ•જોઇએ*

તેવારે•તમે•જાંણોછકે•જેકોઇ•કરાઇશટને•માંનેચ• તેહેને•પાપ•છોડવો•જોઇએચ•તથા•પરમેશવરની•શેવા•કરવાની•ઇછા•રાખવી•જોઇએચ•અથવા•જેમ•ધરંમ•શાશતર•કેહેચ•તેમ•“નેક•કાંમો•કરવાની•મેહેનત•લેવી•જોઇએ”*

તેવારે•શૂં•આપરે•પરોટેશટાંનટ•લોકો•જેવો•ધરંમ•શાશતર•વાંચીશખીએચ•તેહેમાં•જેકાંઇ•ફરમાવેઉંચ•તે•આપણને•માંનવું•જોઇએ•અને•તેહનાં•હોકંમ•પરમાંણે•ચાલવું•જોઇએ*

પાદશાહ•ઘણોજ•જવાંન•હતો•માંટે•રાજનો•કારભાર•ચલાવવાને•વાશતે•રખેવાલ•લોકોને•રાખવા•જરુર•હતા•કે•નહી*

મુખીઅ•રખેવાલ•કોણ•હતો*

તેહેનું•નાંમ•શું•હતું*

શાંમરશેટ•રખેવાલે•શૂધરાઇને•મદત•કીધી•કે•નહી*

એ•જવાંન•પાદશાહનાં•રાજમાં•શૂધરાઇનું•કાંમ•શારી•પખે•ચાલેઉં કે•શૂં*

કીઆ•બેએ•પાદરીઓ•હજુરશૂદી•રોમનકેથોલીકનાં•ધરંમમાં•હતા*

તેવોને•બંદીખાંને•મોકલેઆ•કે•શૂં*

કોઇ•શખશોનાં•કહા•પરમાંણે•પાદશાહ•મરંણ•પાંમેતો•હકથી•તખત•ઉપર•કોણ•બેશે*

જેનગારે•નાંમની•શાશતરીને•તખત•લેવાનો•દાવો•કરવાશારૂ•કોણે•તેહેને•હીમત•આપી*

પાદશાહની•તબીએત•હવડાં•કેહેવી•હતી*

પાદશાહા•આકી•વરશમાં•મરણ•પાંમેઆ*
તેહેની•કેટલા•વરશની•ઉમર•હતી*
તેણે•કેટલા•વરશ•શૂધી•રાજ•કીધું*

LETTER XXII.

MY DEAR BOY,

WHOEVER reads the history of Edward the Sixth, must be grieved to think that he lived so short a time; and it is still more melancholy to find that his successor was a most cruel and violent persecutor of the Protestants. This was queen Mary, his eldest sister, commonly known by the name of Bloody Mary. We saw how much good was done, in the reign of king Edward; but we shall now see that Mary undid it all. She was a bigoted Papist, and she set herself against all the good and pious men who had been the means of bringing about the Reformation; and she encouraged all the violent and cruel people who were the enemies of the Protestants, and who were desirous of bringing the nation back again to all their old bad customs and errors. There were two bishops, Bonner, bishop of London, and Gardiner, bishop of Winchester, both Papists, and great enemies to the Reformation. I think I told you before, that these bishops had been sent to the Tower. Queen Mary set them at liberty, and they lent all the aid they could to assist her in persecuting the Protestants. Some of the best and most pious men in the nation were burnt during these cruel persecutions; five bishops, twenty other clergy, and some hundreds of people besides; and all this because they would not agree to support a religion, which, in their consciences, they believed to be full of error. You have heard of those truly pious and worthy men, bishops Ridley and Latimer. These two aged servants of God were put to death at the same time and place. When Ridley was brought to the stake to be burned, he found that his old friend Latimer was there before him. They helped to comfort one another in this trying hour; and they were wonderfully supported from above, and enabled to undergo, in the cause of truth, all the torments which their enemies could inflict; and they died, encouraging one another, and offering up their prayers and praises to God. These were truly devout and excellent men, and they were great and learned men besides; and they had done much, by their writings, to spread the knowledge of the Gospel, and to further the work of the Reformation.

Soon after this, that good and learned man, archbishop Cranmer, was burned to death. He once, in an evil hour, had been tempted, by the love of life, to sign a paper, declaring that he was no friend to the Reformation. But, if a good man, at any time, by the power of temptation, does fall into a sin, his conscience will not allow him to be happy: and so it was with Cranmer; for, after signing this paper, he could no longer be at peace with himself; and he then spoke his real sentiments, and declared himself the friend of the Protestant religion. For this, he was brought to the stake; and he seemed to glory in being called to suffer in so righteous a cause. As soon as the fire was kindled around him, he thrust his right hand into the midst of the flames, and there held it till it was consumed; it was *that* hand that had signed the paper which so tormented him, and he was, therefore, determined that *that* hand should be the first to suffer; and, in the midst of his torments, he frequently cried out, "that unworthy hand!"

Besides these persecutions for the sake of religion, I should have told you, that, at the beginning of her reign, queen Mary caused lady Jane Grey, and her husband, lord Guildford Dudley, to be put to death, because their ambitious friends had persuaded them that this lady was heir to the throne, and because she did not refuse the offer so firmly as she ought to have done. This cruel execution raised the pity and compassion of all ranks and descriptions of people; for neither lady Jane nor her husband had any wish to disturb the queen in her government, but had been only brought forward by the ambition of their relations. Lady Jane and her husband were very young, and handsome, and amiable; but Mary had no compassion on them, and they were both beheaded at the Tower on the same day. Lord Guildford was the first that suffered; and, whilst lady Jane was going to the place of execution, she met the officers of the Tower carrying the headless body of her husband streaming with blood. She looked at the body for some time, and then, sighing, bade her conductors to lead her on. She behaved, at her execution, with the greatest firmness, submitting, with a serene countenance, to the stroke of the executioner.

Queen Mary was married to Philip the Second, king of Spain, who was himself a stern Catholic, and encouraged her in her opposition to the Reformation. We cannot suppose, that, in the midst of these dreadful scenes, the queen herself could be happy. No, her dark and cruel disposition was torment enough to her; and the miseries which she caused could give no feeling to her mind but that of gloomy wretchedness.

The temporal affairs of the kingdom, too, were in a wretched state. Calais, which had been in possession of the English ever since the reign of Edward the Third, was now taken from us by the French; and such was the wretchedness of the queen, upon this loss, that she was heard to say that, when she was dead, "the name of Calais would be written on her heart." It seems to me that there were *other* things which might have pressed upon her mind, and tormented her more than *this*.

All things at this time seemed to combine to harass and disturb the queen. Her husband had no affection for her; the people murmured against her; the Protestant religion increased, in spite of all her cruelties, and she was unsuccessful in all her warlike attempts; all these things together, worked upon her body as well as her mind, and brought on a consumption. Her dark and cruel temper gave strength to her disease, and threw her into a lingering fever, and of this she died in the forty-third year of her age, after a miserable reign of about five years. This happened in the year 1558.

Now, though most of the accounts which we find in history, relate to the affairs of kings and queens, yet they read us a lesson which may be useful to persons in *any* condition of life: may God grant that we may profit by it! And, when we know the misery and wretchedness which is brought on by a want of regard to the religion of the Gospel; and when we see what cruelty of disposition will often possess the heart, if it be not softened by the gracious influences of true religion, it becomes us, indeed, to make it our prayer and our study, to receive, in humble faith, the pure doctrines of Christ's religion, to seek for divine grace, that we may be guided by its rules, and to labour to convey to others the knowledge of the Holy Scriptures, which will lead them to all truth, and all duty, and all happiness *here*, and show them the way to everlasting salvation in the *world to come*. And, when we see how the faithful followers of Christ are supported in the midst of the most severe trials, and the most acute suffering, what a lesson is this for us to embrace that faith which gives its followers such constancy in the hour of trial! May we always be thankful for the knowledge of the truth, and may we ever make it our desire, and endeavour to follow its heavenly guidance!

I am your affectionate father.

QUESTIONS.

In what yaar did Edward the Sixth die?

Who reigned after him?

What relation was queen Mary to Edward the Sixth?

What was her character and disposition?

Did Mary encourage the Protestant religion, or not?

What two bishops assisted her in persecuting the Protestants?

Were many persons put to death in Mary's reign for professing the Protestant religion?

What two bishops are particularly mentioned as having been burned to death for the sake of the Protestant religion?

Had Ridley and Latimer exerted themselves greatly, by preaching and writing, to spread the Protestant religion?

What other bishop soon afterwards suffered death in the same cause?

Had archbishop Cranmer ever failed in showing a firmness of resolution in support of the Protestant cause?

Had he signed a declaration in which he showed a want of courage in support of his opinion?

How did he feel, after he had signed this?

How did he act afterwards?

Why did he thrust his right hand into the fire, and what did he say on doing so?

Was a claim to the crown set up in favour of any other person, against queen Mary?

Who was this person?

What became of lady Jane Grey?

Who was her husband, and what decame of *him?*

Was queen Mary married?

Who was her husband?

Did the temporal affairs of the nation go on well during Mary's reign ?

What town in France, belonging to the English, was lost during this reign?

How did the queen bear this loss, and what did she say?

What was the disposition of her husband?

What religion did he profess?

How did he behave to the queen?

Was she happy?

In what year did she die?

How long had she reigned?

પતર• ૨૨

આહ્યારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા

જેધણી• છઠા• ઈડવરડની• વારતા• વાંચશે• તે• દલગીર• થાશે• કે• ઈ• (પાહ્દશા)ઈટલી• ટુકી• મુદત• શુધી• જીવેઓ• અને• તે• કરતાંને બીજી• વધારે• શંનતાપ• ભરેલી• વાત• ઈછેજે• હેનાંપછે• જેણે• રાજ• ચલાવેઉં• તેણે• પરોટેશટાંનટ• લોકો• ઉપર• ભારે• શખતી• તથા• જુલંમ કીધો*(છઠા• ઈડવરડનીપછે) તેહેની• વડીબેહેન• મેરી• નાંમની• રાંણી જેહેને• ખુની• મેરી• કરી• શરવ• કોઈ• ઓલખેછે• (તેણે• રાજકીધું*) ઈડવરડ• પાદશાહ્નાં• રાજમાં• કેટલુંબધું• શારૂં• થઉ• તે• આપરે• જાંણિઉં• અને• હ્વે• આપણને• નજર• આવશેકે• મેરીઈ• તે• શઘલું• કાંમ• ખરાબ• કીધું *મેરી• કેથોલીકનાં• ધરંમ• ઉપર• ચુશ• હ્તી• અને• જે• શ

ઘલા•શારા•અને•ધરમી•લોકોએ•શુધરાઈ•કરવા•માંડી•તેવોની•શાંમને•તેથાઈ•અને•જે•જુલંમ•કરનારા•તથા•ઘાતકી•લોકો•જેવો•પરોટેશટાંનટ•લોકોનાં•દુશમંન•હતા•અને•ચાહતા•હતાં•જે•શઘલી•રઈતિ•પોતાની•અશલી•ખરાબ•ચાલ•તથા•જુલમુક•પાછી•પકડે•(તેહેવા•શઘલા•લોકોને•એ•રાંણી•)ટેકો•આપતી•હતી*બે•મોહોટા•પાદરીઓ•(બીશપ)હતા•તેવોનાં•નાંમ•બાંનર•શ્રી•લંડનનો•મોહોટો•પાદરી•તથા•ગારડીનર•શ્રી•વીનચેશટરનો•પાદરી•એ•બંન્ને•કેથોલીકનાં•ધરંમમાં•હતા•અને•શુધરાઈનાં•શતરૂ•હતા*હું•જાંણુંચકે•મે•તમને•અગાઉ•કહેલું•છેજે•એ•પાદરીઓને•બંદીખાંનાંમાં•કેદ•કીધેલા•હતા*મેરી•રાંણીએ•તેવોને•છોડી•દીધા•અને•પરોટેશટાંનટ•લોકોની•ઉપર•જુલંમ•કરવાને•વાશતે•તેવોથી•જેકાંઈ•થાઈ•શકેઉં•તેમ•તેવોએ•રાંણીને•મદત•કીધી*એ•ઘાતકી•જુલંમનાં•વખતમાં•કેટલાએક•શારા•અને•ધરમી•લોકોને•જીવતા•બારી•નાંખેઆ•તેહેમાં•પાંચ•મોહોટા•તથા•બીંજા•વીશ•પાદરીઓ•અને•તે•શીવાએ•બીજા•શેકરો•લોકોને•બારી•નાંખેઆ•તે•એટલા•વાશતે•જે•તેવો•જુલમુક•ભરેલા•ધરમ•ઉપર•રાજી•નહી•હતા*રીડલી•તથા•લાટીમર•નાંમનાં•ઘણાંજ•ધરમી•તથા•શારા•પાદરીઓ•વીશે•તમે•શાંભલેઉંચ*એ•બંન્ને•પરમેશવરનાં•ઘરડા•શેવકોનેબી•એકજ•દાહાડે•અને•એકજ•ઠેકાંણે•મારી•નાંખેઆ*જેવારે•રીડલીને•બલતા•ચુલા•આગલ•બારી•નાંખવાને•વાશતે•લઈ•આવેઆ•તેવારે•તેણે•જોએઉં•કે•પોતાનો•જુનો•દોશત•લાટીમરબી•તેહેની•અગાઉનો•તાંહાં•આવેલો•હતો*મોહોતની•વખત•તેવોએ•એક•બીજાને•દીલાશો•આપેઓ•અને•તેવોને•ઈશવરેબી•આચરત•શરીખો•આશરો•આપેઓ•હતો•તેથી•ખરાંને•વાશતે•તેવોનાં•દુશમનોએ•તેવો•ઉપર•જે•વીપત•પાડી•તે•તેવો•ખમીશકેઆ•અને•એક•બીજાને•દીલાશો•આપતાં•તથા•ખોદાએની•બંદગી•અને•વખાંણ•કરતાં•કરતાં•મરણ•પાંમેઆ*એ•ખરેખર•ધરમી•તથા•ઓતંમ•પુરશો•હતા•અને•તે•શીવાએ•તેવો•ઘણાંજ•મોહોટા•અને•હોશીઆર•હતા•અને•તેવોએ•જેકાંઈ•લખેઉં•તેથી•ધરમ•શાશતરનું•ગનેઆંન•વધેઉં•અને•શુધરાઈનું•કાંમ•આગલ•ચાલેઉં*

ઈ•પછે•થોડે•દીવસે•મુખીઅ•પાદરી•(આરચબીશપ•)કરાંનમર•નાંમનો•જે•નેક•અને•ભણિલો•ઘણો•હતો•તેહેને•બાલીને•મારીનાંખેઓ*પોતાનાં•જીવને•ચાહેઓ•તેથી•તેણિ•ઈક•વખત•ઈક•કાગળ•ઉપર•પોતાની•શહી•આપી•તેહેમાં•હેવો•ઈકરાર •કીધો•જે•હું•સુ.ધરાઈગો•દોશત•નથી*પણ•અગરજો•કોઈ•વખતે•કોઈ• નેક•આદમી•લાલચથી•પાપમાં•ગીરફતાર•થાઈયતો• તેહેનાં• મંનમાં• તે•કદી•સુખી•રેહેતો•નહી•અને•જિ•પરમાંણે• કરાંનમરને• પંણ•થઈઉં•કાંઈ•જે•ઈણિ•ઈ•કાગળ•ઉપર•શહી•કીધી• તે•પછે• તેહેને•કાંઈ•ચેન•પડેઉં•નહી• તેવારે• તેણિ• પોતાનાં•ખરા•વીચાર•કહી•શંભલાવેઆ•અને•કહુ•કેહુ•પરોટેશટાંનટ•ધરંમનો• દોશત• છેઉં*ઈટલા• વાશતે• તેહેને•બાલી•નાંખવા•લેઈ•આવેઆ•અને•હેવાં•નેક•કાંમને•લીધે• તેહેને•મરવું•પડેઉં•માંટે•તે•ખુશી•દેખાઓ*હેની•આશપાશ• આતશ•શલગાવેઓ•તેવારે• તેણિ•પોતાનો•જમણો•હાથ•બરતાંમાં•મુકેઓ•અને• તે•બરી•ગીઓ•તાંહાંસુધી• આતશમાં• રેહેવા• દીધો•કાંઈ•જે•તે•હાતે•ઈણિ•કાગળ•ઉપર•શહી•કીધી•જેથી•હેને•ઈટલુંબધું•દુખ•ઉપજેઉં•માંટે•તેણિ•શરવેથી•પેહેલાંજ•તે•હાત• બારીનાંખેઓ•અને• પોતે•આતશમા•બરતી•વેલા•ઘણી•વખત •મોહોટે•આવાજે•બોલેઓ•“કે•ઈ•નઠારો•હાત”*

ધરંમને•લીધે•હેવા•જુલમો•થઆ•તે•શીવાઈ•માહારે•તમને•કહુ•જોઈતું•તું•કે•મેરી•રાંણી•જેવારે•રાજ•કરવા•લાગી•તેવારે•તેણિ•જેનગારે•તથા•તેહેનાં•ભરતાર•લારડ•ગીલફરડ•ડડલીને•મારીનખાવેઆં•તેનું•કારંણઈજે•તેમનાં•લોભી•મીતરોઈ•તેવોને•શમજાવેઉં•કે•જેન•અશાતરીને•તખત•મલેઉં•જોઈઈ•અને•તે•તખત•લેવાની•તેણિ•ખચીતપણાંથી•ના•કેહેવી•જોઈઈ•તેમ•કહી•નહી*ઈવોને•બાતકીપણાંથી•ગારદન•મારેઆં•માંટે•શઘલે•વાંચેનાં•લોકો•અફશોશ•કરવા•લાગાં તથા•દઆ•ખાવા•લાગાં•કાંઈજે•જેનની•અથવા•તેહેનાં•માંટીની•કોઈની•ઈછા•હતી•નહી•જે•રાંણીને•રાજ•કરતાં•કશી•તરેહેની•હરખત•કરે•પંણ•તેમનાં•શગાવોઈ•હેવો•બોલ•કીધો•હતો*જેન•તથા•તેહેનો•માંટી•ઈ•બંધે•ઘણાંજ•જુવાંન• અને•ખુબસુરત•

અને•પેઆરાં•હતાં•તોપંણ•મેરીઈ•તેવો•ઉપર•કાંઇબી•દઆ•કીધી•નહી•અને•ઈકિજ•દાહાડે•તેવો•બંધોનાં•ગુરંગા•આગલ•ડોકાં•કપાવી•નાંખેઆં*પેહેલાં•લારડગીલપરડને•મારી•નાંખેઓ•અને•જેન•જેવારે•ગારન•મારવાની•જગો•આગાડ•જતી•હતી•તેવારે•તેહેનાં•માંટીનું•ડોકાં•વગારનું•લોહીલુવાંન•થાઈલું•મુરદું•ગુરંગાનાં•આમલદારો•લઇ•જતા•હતા•તેવો•તેહેને•મલેઆ*તેવાર•તેણે•થોડાઈક•વખત•શુધી•તે•મુરદાની•તરફ•જોઈઉં•અને•પછે•હાઈ•મારીને•લોકોને•કહુકે•મહને•લઇજાઓ*મરતી•વખત•તેણિ•પોતાનું•દેલ•ઘણુંજ•શાખત•રાખેઉ•અને•જલાદે•જેવારે•તેહેને•ઝટકો•મારેઓ•તે•ઝટકો•વગાર•ધબરાટથી•તેણે•ખાદો*

શ્રી•ઈશપેનનાં•રાજા•બીજા•ફીલપ•શંગાથે•મેરી•રાંણીઈ•પોતાનાં•લગાંન•કીધાં•તે•રાજા•પોતેબી•કેથોલીક•ધરંમ•ઉપર•ચુશ•હતો•માંટે•શુધરાઇરાની•શાંમે•થાવાશારૂ•રાંણીને•ટેકો•આપેઓ*આપરે•કેવું•ધારી•શકતાનથી•કે•હેવાં•તઆંકાર•કાંગો•થઆં•તેહેવામાં•રાંણીબી•પોતે•શુખી•હોઈ*નહી•હોઈ•શાથી•જે•તેહેનાં•કપટી•અને•ઘાતકી•શભાવથી•તેહેને•દુખ•થાતું•હતું•તે•ઘણું•હતું•અને•ઈણિ•જેકાંઇ•બીજાવોને•દુખદીધાં•તેથી•તેહેનાં•મનમાં•કકલાટ•શીવાઈ•બીજું•કાંઇ•ઉતપન•થાઈ•નહી*

રાજધાંનીનો•કારભારબી•ધણિજ•બીગાડેઓ•હતો*તરીજા•ઈડવરડનાં•વખતથી•હજુરશુધી•આ•કેલેશનું•શેહેર•ઇંગલીશ•લોકોનાં•હાતમાં•હતું•તે•ફરંચ•લોકોઈ•આપરી•પાશેથી•હવડાં•પાછુંલીધું•અને•રાંણીનો•શંતાપ•હેવો•હતો•કે•તેણે•કહુકે•જેવારે•હું•મરી•જાંઉ“તેવારે•આ•કેલેશનું•નાંમ•માહારી•કબર•ઉપર•કોતરે”*મહને•હેવુ•દીશેચકેઈ•કરતાં•બીજીબી•ઘણીઈક•ચીજોથી•રાંણીને•ઘણુંઈક•દુખ•ઉપજેઉ*

ઈવખત•શઘલી•ચીજનો•હેવો•તો•જથો•થાઓકે•તેથી•રાંણીને•દુખ•અને•શંનતાપ•થાઈઓ*હેનો•માંટી•હેને•ચાહાતો•નહી•હતો•અને•રઈઈત•હેનીથી•નારાજી•હતી—તેણિ•ઘણીઈક•શજા•કીધી•તોપણ•પરોટેશટાંનટનો•ધરંમ•વધેઓ•અને•તેણિ•જેકાંઇ•લડાઇ•કીધી

તેહેમાં• તે•કોઈમાં• પ્ તેહે•થાઉ•નહી—એ•શઘલી•ચીજોથી•હેનાં•મનને•તથા•હેનાં•બદનને•દુખ•થઉ•અને•હેને•દમનો•આજાર•થઓ* તેહેનાં•કરૂર•અને•ઘાતકી•શભાવથી• તેહેનો•રોગ•વધતો•ગીઓ•અને•અંતે• તેહેને•તાપ•આવેઓ•તેથી• તેતાલીશ•વરશની•વએમાં•અને•પાંચ•વરશસુધી•ટુકું•રાજ•કીધાપછે•તે•મરંણ પાંમી* એ•રાંણી• ૧૫૫૮ નાં•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમી*

વારતામાં•જેકાંઈ•બીના•લખેલી છે• તે•રાજા•તથા• રાંણીઓનાં કાંમ•વીશે છે• તોપણ• તેથી•આપણને•એહેવી•શીખામંણ• આપેચ•કે• જે•હરેક•વાંધેનાં•લોકોને•કાંમ•આવે—ઈશવર•કરેને• તેથી• આપણું• કલેઆંણ•થાએ*અને• આપરે• જાંણીએચકે• ધરંમ•શાશતરને•નહી•માંનેઆથી•દુખ•અને•શંનતાપ• પેદા• થાએચ•અને• અગરજો•દેલમાં•ખરો ધરંમ•નહી•હોએતો• તે•દેલ•ઘાતકી•રેહેશે•માંટે•કરાઈશટનાં•નીરમલ ધરંમની•શીખાંમણ•આપણને•માંનવી• જોઈએ•તથા•આપણને•ઈશવરની•કુરપા•માંગવીકે• તેથી•કરાઈશટનાં•ધરંમ• મુજબ•આપરે•ચાલીએ•અને•બીજાવોને•પાક•ધરંમ•શાશતર•શીખવવાની• મેહેનત• લેવી•જોઈએ•કાંએજે•એ•ધરંમ•શાશતર•આએ•જગતમાં•શરવ•કોઈને•શાચે મારગે•તથા•ઉદીઓગે• લગાડશે•અને•શુખ• આપશે•તથા•આશમાંની દુનીઆંમાં•હમેશાં•બેહેશત• આપશે* અને•આપરે• જોઈએચકે•કરાઈશટનાં•ઈતબારી• ચેલાવો• ઉપર• ઘણું જ•કઠણ•દુખ•પડેચ• તેવારે• તેવોને•આશરો•મલેચ •તેવારે• તે•જોઈને• આપણનેબી•એ• ધરંમમાં• આલવું•જોઈએ• કે• જે• ધરંમના• લોકોને• દુખની• વખત•હાવી•શબુરી•મલેચ*આપણને• શચાઈનું•ગનેઆંન•મલેઉંચ•તેટલા•શારું•આપંણને•હમેશાં•ઈશવરની• પરારથનાં•કરવી• જોઈએ•અને•ઈશવર•આપણને•ખરે•મારગે•ચલાવે•હેવી•નીત•ઈછા•રાખવી*

હું•છું•તમારો•માઆલુ•બાપ*

શવાલો*

છઠો•એડવરડ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*
તેહેનાં•પછે•કોણે•રાજ•કીધું*
મેરી•રાંણી•છઠા•એડવરડની•શું•શગી•થાએ*

તેહેની•આબરૂ•તથા•તેહેનો•શભાવ•કેહેવો•હતો*

મેરીઈ•પરોટેશટાંનટનાં•ધરંમને•આશરો•આપેઓ•કે•નહી*

પરોટેશટાંનટ•લોકો•ઉપર•જુલંમ•કરવાને•વાશતે•કીઆ•બેઈ•પાદરીઓઈ•રાંણીને•મદત•કીધી*

લોકો•પરોટેશટાંનટનો•ધરંમ•પાલતા•હતા•ઈટલાશારું•મેરીનાં•રાજમાં•શું•ઘણાંઇક•લોકોને•મારીનાંખેઆ*

કીઆ•બેઈ•મોહોટા•પાદરીઓને•પરોટેશટાંનટ•ધરંમને•વાશતે•મારીનાંખેઆ*

રીડલી•તથા•લાટીમરે•કીતાબો•લખીને•તથા•ભાશાણ•કરીને•પરોટેશટાંનટનો•ધરંમ•ઘણો•વધારેઓ•કે•શું*

ઈજી•પરોટેશટાંનટ•ધરંમ•પાલેઆને•વાશતે•બીજા•કીઆ•પાદરીને•મારીનાંખેઓ*

પરોટેશટાંનટનાં•ધરંમને•આશરો•આપવામાં•મુખીઅ•પાદરી•(આરચબીશપ•)કરાંનમરે•કાંઈ•ચુક•કીધી•હતીકે•શું*

શું•તેણે•કોઈ•કાગજ•ઉપર•શહી•કીધી•હતી•જેથી•પોતાનાં•ધરંમને•આશરો•આપવાની•તેહેનાંમાં•હીમત•નહી•હતી•હેવું•દીશેઉં*

ઈ•કાગજ•ઉપર•શહી•કીધા•પછે•તેહેને•કેહેવું•લાગું*

પછે•તેણે•શું•કીધું*

તેણે•પોતાનો•જમણો•હાથ•શું•કરવા•આતશમાં•મેલેઓ•અને•તે•મેલતી•વખત•શું•બોલેઓ*

મેરી•રાંણીની•શાંમને•તખત•લેવાનો•બીજા•કોઈ•શખશે•દાવો•કીધો•હતોકે•શું*

તે•કોણ•શખશ*

જેનગારેનું•શું•થઈઉં*

તેહેનો•માંટી•કોણ•હતો•અને•તે•માંટીનું•શું•થઈઉં*

શું•મેરી•રાંણી•પરણી•હતી*

કોણ•તેહેનો•માંટી•થઈઓ*

મેરીનાં•રાજમાં•રાજધાંનીનો•કારભાર•શારી•પખે•ચાલેઓકેનહી*

હેનાં•રાજમાં•શ્રી•ફરાંશનું•કીઉ•શેહેર•(ઈંગલીશ•લોકો•પાશેથી)•જતું•રહું*

૬• શેહેર•જાણું•રહું•તે•રાંણીને•કેમ•ગમેઉં•અને•રાંણીઇ•શું•કહું*
રાંણીનાં•ભરથારનો•શભાવ•કેહેવો•હતો*
તે•માંટીનો•ધરંમ•કીઓ•હતો*
તે•રાંણી•શંગાથે•શીતરેહે•ચાલેઓ*
શું•રાંણી•શુખી•હતી*
તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમી*
તેણે•કેટલા•વરશ•શુધી•રાજ•કીધું*

LETTER XXIII.

MY DEAR BOY,

After the death of queen Mary, her sister Elizabeth became queen. The people had suffered so much under the cruel Mary, that they received Elizabeth with real delight. Elizabeth was a very thoughtful and considerate person, and she saw plainly, that her sister Mary's notions about religion had been entirely wrong; and she, therefore, determined to encourage the Protestant religion, which she well understood, and which she knew to be right. Through her means, therefore, the Roman Catholic religion was laid aside, and the Protestant religion established in its place, nearly in the same manner as we have it at present.

Queen Elizabeth soon experienced, that the highest station in this life is not without its troubles. There were many persons in England who still favoured the Roman Catholic religion, and these were desirous of getting rid of Elizabeth, and of putting Mary, queen of Scots, upon the English throne. This Mary was a near relation of Elizabeth, and was in truth the rightful heiress * to the throne, in case Elizabeth should not marry, and have children. Mary was a Catholic, and she listened to the proposals of those who were plotting against Elizabeth, and she became engaged in their conspiracies- A battle was fought, which went wholly against Mary. She surrendered herself up to Elizabeth, who ordered her to be secured, that she might be prevented from engaging in any more schemes to disturb the kingdom. It appears, however, that, even during her confinement, she secretly encouraged those who were conspiring against the queen. She was brought to her trial, and was condemned. We are told that Elizabeth was very unwilling to sign the death-warrant, and that the persons around her took great pains to persuade her to do it, knowing that they should find no favour if Mary should ever become queen. They are said to have alarmed the queen with rumours of plots and conspiracies, so that she one day signed the warrant, and sent it to the chancellor to have the seal put upon it, intending to keep it by her, and not to have it executed unless Mary should attempt to escape from Fotheringay castle *, where she was then confined. Her secretary is said to have gone to the chancellor and to have got the warrant sealed, and, instead of bringing it back to the queen, to have laid it before the council, who resolved that it should be immediately put in execution. It was accordingly directed to four noblemen, who immediately set out for Fotheringay castle, accompanied by two executioners. There is much reason, however, to doubt the truth of Elizabeth's unwillingness to get rid of Mary, as well as the whole story about Davison the secretary, and the death-warrat.

---

*Margaret, sister of Henry VIII. married James IV. of Scotland; their son, James V. was the father of Mary.

As soon as they arrived, they ordered Mary to prepare for death, by eight o'clock the next morning. She was ready at the appointed time, dressed in a rich habit of silk and velvet, with a long veil on her head, and a crucifix * in her hand. The scaffold was covered with black. The two executioners kneeled down, and asked her to forgive them. She said she forgave them, and all who were concerned in her death. She declared that she was innocent; she then repeated a psalm, and

---

* In Northamptonshire.

* A little image of our Saviour on the Cross, much used by Roman Catholics.

some pious expressions ; and her head was then severed from her body by two strokes of the executioner. Whatever were the faults of Mary, we cannot help grieving for her tragical end, especially when we think that it was ordered by a near relation, a female, and a queen.

Soon after this, Elizabeth was exposed to further troubles. Philip, king of Spain, was a bigoted Chatholic, and he could not bear to see the Protestant religion flourishing in Fngland. Accordingly, he fitted out a vast fleet of ships, and so large an army, that he thought nothing could withstand him. English people, however, are, you know, not fond of being invaded ; and, therefore, instead of being frightened at the king of Spain's preparations, they prepared to oppose him, with all the power they could collect. The queen herself went down to Tilbury Fort, and, mounted on horseback, rode amongst her soldiers and sailors, and encouraged them to oppose the invaders manfully, declaring, that though she was a woman, she would fight, like a man, for her country, before an inch of it should fall into the hands of the king of Spain. The Spaniards had such confidence in their immense fleet, that they called it the *Invincible Armada.* However, the English soon showed them that their fleet was not *invincible,* for, as it came up the English channel, with its ships, in size and number sufficient to alarm any body but British sailors, our little fleet came out of Plymouth harbour, and harassed them and drove them in all directions, so that very few of them ever returned home again to tell the tale.

If we had been then conquered by the Spaniards, the Roman Catholic riligion would probably have been again restored, in England. But a good Providence protected us, and seemed to fight for us; for the Spanish fleet was dreadfully harassed by the winds and storms as well as by the attacks of the English fleet. Queen Elizabeth was so thankful for this providential deliverance, that she went in state to St. Paul's Church, to return thanks to the Almighty for the great blessing conferred upon the nation. You have perhaps seen some old pictures of this great fight. In the House of Lords, the defeat of the Spanish Armada is worked in old tapestry on the walls; and there you see all the noble admirals and captains of the English fleet, who had so boldly fought in defence of their country.

Queen Elizabeth showed her great wisdom by always choosing upright and good ministers; and, by their advice, and her own good sense besides, the affairs of the nation were managed properly. But there were some things in which this queen seemed to show a weakness which was in contradiction to the rest of her character; she had always some persons about her who seemed to be chosen for nothing but their handsome appearance, and their taste for gaudy show and splendour. Lord Leicester was one of these; and he seemed to have nothing to recommend him but his fine person, and his splendid houses, and his rich furniture. The queen was fond of going about the country, and paying visits to the houses of different noblemen and rich gentlemen. We read that lord Leicester entertained her majesty for many days at his princely mansion at Kenilworth, in Warwickshire; which is now nothing but a fine old ruin, just enough to show what it has been. During this visit, all sorts of fine sights were exhibited, and games, and masquerades, and every kind of show that the people of that age delighted in. There were all sorts of strange wild figures dressed up; and men and women were made to imitate the strange appearances of heathen gods; and there was sham fighting, and tilting, and all sorts of sports; and the queen seemed to take as much delight in those things as any of the people that surrounded her. These sort of entertainments brought my lord Leicester into great favour; but sometimes the queen's mind would be all changed, and the favourite would be in disgrace: and this kind of humour she often showed to her courtiers, according to the changes of her temper and fancy: thus she sometimes showed herself to be as littleminded as other people; though, generally speaking, we have reason to look upon Elizabeth as a great and wise queen.

There was the earl of Essex, too, who was, some time afterwards, in great favour with the queen. But he was too proud and haughty to bear with all the changes in her temper; and, when she refused him any of his requests, he would put himself into a violent rage; and once he even raised an army in rebellion against her. He was, however, overpowered, and seized, and sent to the Tower, and tried for his life. He was found guilty, and was condemned to be beheaded:—but he all along thought he should escape, never believing that the queen would sign the warrant for his execution. The story told is, that he had a ring which the queen had once given him when he was high in her favour: and she had told him, that, whenever he was in trouble, if he would but send her that ring, he should be delivered. Accordingly, when he was condemned to be beheaded, he gave the ring to the countess of Nottingham, beseeching her to deliver it safely into the queen's hands. Essex every moment expected to receive an answer that his life was to be spared. But the deceitful countess never gave the ring to the queen. Her husband was an enemy to Essex; and, to please him, she agreed to this piece of cruel wickedness. The queen wondered, all the time, why Essex did not send the ring; and she was angry to think that he should be too proud and haughty to ask her forgiveness. It is said that Elizabeth was all the while dreadfully disturbed and distressed in her mind, and that it was very long before she could bring herself to sign the warrant for the execution of the earl. At length, however, she did sign it,—and she was never seen to enjoy a happy day afterwards. It is said, that, vhen the countess of Nottingham was on her death-bed, her conscience stung her for her wicked conduct towards the earl of Essex; she begged that the queen would come to her, and she then told her the whole truth about the ring: and they say that the queen was so angry that she even shook the countess on her very death bed. The queen, soon after, this sunk into a gloomy and melancholy state; and she died, in the seventieth year of her age, and the forty-fifth of her reign.

If we cannot very much admire the personal character of

Elizabeth, yet her public conduct as a queen was dictated by a strong desire to do good to the nation. Manufactures and commerce greatly increased during her reign: and every encouragement was given to good and learned men : so that knowledge increased greatly throughout the kingdom, during this reign; and it seems a most happy and providential thing, that, when there was a desire to study the Scriptures and to gain religious instruction, there should be so many great and enlightened scholars who were able to explain all these things and to lay them, in our own language, before the people.

But I shall say no more at present, excepting to remind you that whilst you are reading history you must be careful to remember the *dates*. Queen Elizabeth died in the year 1603.

I am your affectionate father, &c.

QUESTIONS.

In what year did queen Mary, of England, die ?
Who became queen after her ?
What relation was queen Elizabeth to queen Mary ?
What religion was established in England by Elizabeth ?
What person laid claim to be considered heiress to the throne of England ?
Did Mary, queen of Scots, enter into any conspiracies against Elizabeth ?
What religion did Mary, the queen of Scotland, profess ?
Was any battle fought between Elizabeth's forces and Mary 's ?
Which succeeded ?
Did Mary surrender herself to the queen of Fngland ?
Was she kept in confinement ?
Where ?
What became of the queen of Scotland ?
From what quarter was an invasion planned against England ?
What religion did the Spaniards profess ?
What did the Spaniards call their great fleet which was fitted out to invade England ?
What became of the Spanish armada ?
How did queen Elizabeth show her gratitude to Providence for the dispersion of the Spanish fleet ?
What sort of persons did queen Elizabeth choose for her ministers ?
What sort of people did she like to have about her court ?
Who was lord Leicester ?

Is there any account of a great entertainment which Leicester gave to the queen ?
Where was this ?
Who was the earl of Essex ?
What was the end of Essex ?
Do you remember the story of the countess of Nottingham and the ring ?
Did lady Nottingham ever confess the truth about the ring ?
How did the queen receive this confession ?
What was the general character of queen Elizabeth ?
Had the Reformation the effect of improving the state of the country ?
In what year did queen Elizabeth die ?

પતર • ૨૩

માહારા • પેઆરા • છોકરા •

મેરી • રાંણી • મરીગઆપછે • તેહેની • બેહેન • ઈલીજેબેથ • રાંણી તખત • ઉપર • બેઠી * ઘાતકી • રાંણી • મેરીનાં • રાજમાં • લોકોએ • ઘણું • દુખ ભોગાવેઉં • હતું • માંટે • ઈલીજેબેથનાં • તખત • ઉપર • બેઠાથી • તેવો • ઘણાંજ • ખુશીથઆં * ઈલીજેબેથ • ઘણીજ • વીચારવાલી • અને • હોશીઆર • હતી • અને • તેહેને • શાફ • દીશેઉં કે • પોતાની • બેહેન • મેરીનો • ધરંમ • ખોટો • હતો • એટલા • શારૂ • એણે • પરોટેશટાંનટનાં • ધરંમને • આશરો • આપવાનું • ઠેડવેઉં • કાંએજે • એ • ધરંમને • તે • શારીપખે • શમજતી • હતી • અને • ખરો • કરી • જાંણતી • હતી * એ • રાંણીને • લીધે • રોમનકેથોલીકનો • ધરંમ • (શરવ • લોકોએ •) પરતો • મેલેઆ • અને • તેહેને • બદલે • પરોટેશટાંનટનો • ધરંમ • મુકરર થાઆ • તે • જેહેવો • કે • હવડાં • આપણો • ધરંમ છે • તેહેવો • થાઆ *

ઈલીજેબેથ • રાંણીએ • તરતજ • જાંણેઉં કે • આએ • જગતમાં • શરવેથી • ઉનચો • દરજો • મલે • તેહેની • શંગાથે • મેહેનતોબી • હોએ * શ્રી • ઈંગલંડમાં • ઘણાંએક • લોકો • હતાં • જેવો • હજુરશૂધી • રોમનકેથોલીકનાં • ધરંમને • પશંદ • કરતા • હતા • અને • તેવો • હેવું • ચાહાતા • હતા • જે ઈલીજેબેથને • તખત • ઉપરથી • ઉઠારી • મેલીને • ઈશકાટ • લોકોની • રાંણી મેરીને • શ્રી • ઈંગલંડનાં • તખત • ઉપર • બેશાડીએ * એ • મેરી • ઈલીજેબેથની • નજદીકની • શગી • થાએ • અને • અગર • જો • ઈલીજેબેથ • પરણે • નહી

અને•તેહેને•પેટે•છોકરાં•થાઈ•નહીતો•ઈ•મેરીને•તખત• † મલે*મેરીનો•કેથોલીક•ધરમ•હતો•માટે•જે•લોકો•ઇલીજેબેથને•કાહાડી•મેલવાનો•દંગો•કરતા•હતા•તેવોની•વાત•મેરીઈ•શાંભલી•અને•તેવોનાં•દંગામાં•પોતે•શાંમેલ•થાઇ*ઈક•લડાઇ•થાઇ•તેહમાં•મેરી બીલકુલ•હારી*મેરી•પોતાની•મેરે•ઇલીજેબેથનાં•હાથમાં•ગઇ•તેવારે•ઇલીજેબેથે•તેહને•કેદ•કરાવી•કે•રાજમાં•ફીશાદ•કરવાનાં•કાંઇ•બીજા•મનશૂબા•ફરીથી•કરે•નહી*પણ•હેવું•જાણીઈ•કે•મેરીઈ•કેદમાંબી•છુપી•રીતે•રાંણીનાં•ઉપર•દંગો•કરનારાવોને•આશરો•આપેઓ*તેહેનો•ઇનશાફ•થાઓ•ને•તેહને•મારી•નાંખવાની•શજાઆપી*આપરે•શાંભલેઉંચકે•મેરીને•મારી•નાંખવાનાં•હોકંમ•ઉપર શહી•કરવાશારુ•ઇલીજેબેથ•રાજી•નહી•હતી•પંણ•જે•લોકો•હેનો આશપાશ•હતા•તેવો•હેવું•જાંણતા•હતા•કે•અગરજો•મેરી•તખત•ઉપર•બેશે તો•તેવો•ઉપર•તે•કાંઇ•કીરપા•કરનારનથી•માંટે•તેવોઈ•ઘણીજ•મેહેનત•લેઇ•ઇલીજેબેથને•શમજાવીને•તે•હુકંમ•ઉપર•શહી•કરાવી*હેવુ•કેહે છે•કે•તેવોઈ•ફીશાદ•તથા•બંડ•થાશે•હેવી•ગપ•ઉરાડીને•રાંણીને•ઘબરાવી•માંટે•ઈકદીવશે•રાંણીઈ•તે હુકંમ•ઉપર•શહી•કીધી•અને•તે•ઉપર•મોહોર•કરાવા•શારૂ•વડાનેઆઈ•અધીકારીની•પાશે•તે•હુકંમ•મોકલાવેઓ•અને•તે•હુકંમ•પોતાની•પાશે•રાખી•મુકવાનું•ધારેઉં•અને•શ્રી•ફાથરીંગે † નાંકીલામાં•મેરીને•કેદ•કીધી•હતી•તાંહાંથી•તે•નાહાશવા•માંગે•તાંહાંશુધી તે•હુકંમ•બજાલાવશે•નહી(ઈટલે જે•મેરીને•ગારદન•મરાવવી•નહી*) હેવું•કેહે છેજે•ઇલીજેબેથનો•શકરીટારી•(ઈટલે જે•કારભારી•)વડા•અધીકારી•પાશે•ગીઓ•અને•તે•હુકંમ•ઉપર•મોહોર•કરાવી•અને•રાંણીની•પાશે•પાછો•લાવેઓ•નહી•તેહેને•બદલે•તે•હુકંમ•શભાની આગલ•મુકેઓ•તેવારે•તેશભાઈ•તે•હુકંમ•તરતજ•બજાલાવવાનુ •ખચી

---

† આઠમાં•હેનરીની•બેહેન•મારગારેટ•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડનાં•પાદશાહ•ચોથા•જેમશ•શંગાથે•પરણી•તેવોનો•છોકરો•પાંચમો•જેમશ•જે•હતો•તે•મેરીનો•બાપ•થાઈ*

† (ઈ•કીલો•)શ્રી•નારથાંમપટંન•શાઈરનાં•પરાંનતમાંછે*

ત•ઠેડવેઉં*તે•હુકંમ•ચાર•અમીરો•ઉપર•મોકલેઓ• તેવો•જલદીથી•શ્રી•ફોથરીંગેનાં•કીલા•આગલ•બે•જલાદોને•શાથે•લેઇને•ગઆ*મેરીને•ઇલીજેબેથ• મરાવી•નાંખવા•ચાહાતી•ન હી • હતી•અને•ડેવીશન•નાંમનાં•કારભારી•તથા•મારી •નાંખવાનાં•હુકંમ•વીશેની•શઘલી•વાત•ખરી•નહી•હોઈ•હેવો•શખ• લાવવાનાં•ઘણાંઈક•કારણો છે *

જેવારે•તેવો•આવી• પોંહોચેઆ• તેવારે•તેવોઈ• હોકંમ•કીધો•જે•આવતી•શવારે•આઠ•વાગાતે•મરવા•શારૂં•મેરીને•તઇઆર•થવું *ઠેરવેલે•વખતે•મેરી•તઇઆર•થઇ• તેણિ• રેશમી•તથા•મખમલનો• ઉંચો પોશાક•પેહેરેલો•હતો•અને•માંથાંઉપર•લાંમબો•પરદો• નાંખેઓ•હતો•અને•હાથમાં•ઈક•કરૂશ• † હતો*હેને•ગારદનં મારવાની•જગો•ઉપર•કાલું •કપડું •બીછાવેલું•હતું*તેબંધે•જલાદોઈ•ગુઠણ•ઉપર•ઉભા•રહીને• મેરી•પાશે•માંગેઉં • જે•હમુને•માફ•કર*મેરી• બોલી• કે• તમે•તથા•બીજા• લોકો• જેવો•માહારા•મરંણમાં•શાંમેલછે•તેવોને•શરવેને• મેં •માંફ•કીધા*તે•બોલી• કે•માહારો•કશો•વાંક•નથી•અને•પછે•ઈક• ધરંમ•વીશેનું •ગીત•ગાઉં •અને•કાંઇ• ધરમી•શખુનો•કહા•પછે•જલાદે•બેઈ•ઝટકા•મારી• તેહેનું •ડોકું •કાપીનાંખેઉં *મેરીની•ગમે•તેહેવી•તકશીર• હોઈ•તોપંણ• તે•હેવી•રીતે•મરંણ• પાંમી• તેથી•આપંણને• દુખ•થઆ•વીનાં• રેહેતું •નથી•શાથી•જે•આપ રે•ધારીઈકે મેરીની•નજદીકની•શગી•ઇઆને•ઇલીજેબેથ•રાંણીઈ• તેહેને•મરાવીનાંખી*

ઈ•પછે•વેહેલીજ•ઇલીજેબેથને•બીજીબી• મેહેનતો•પડી*શ્રી•ઇશપેનનો•રાજા•ફીલીપ•કેથોલીકનાં•ધરંમ•ઉપર•ખુશ•હતો• અને શ્રી•ઇંગાલંડમાં•પરોટેશટાંનટનો•ધરમ•વધતો•ચાલતો•હતો•તે•તેહેનાંથી•દેખાઇ•શકાઉ•નહી*ઈટલા•શારું• તેણિ•લડાઇનાં•વાંહાંણોનો ઈક• બેશૂમાર•જથો•અને•ઈક• હેવીતો• મોહોટી•ફોજ•ઈકઠી•કીધી•કે• કોઇબી•તેહેની•શાંમણે•થાઇ•શકશે•નહી• હેવું •તેણિ•ધારેઉં•હતું*તમે•જાંણિય• કે•ઇંગલીશ•લોકો•ઉપર•હુલો• થાઈ•તે• તેમને•ગા

---

† આપણાં•ઇશૂ•ખરીશટની•કરૂશ•ઉપર•પાડેલી•નાંધેલી•મુરતી•જે•રોમંનકેથોલીક•લોકો•ઘણી•ખરી•રાખેચ*

મતો•નથી•એટલા•શારું•તેવો•શ્રી•ઇશપેનનાં•રાજાની•તઇઆરીથી•કાંઇ•બીધા•નહીં•પણ•તેહેને•બદલે•તેવોથી•જેટલી•ફોજ•એકઠી•થાઇ•શકી•તે•વતે•તે•રાજાની•શાંમે•થાવાને•તઇઆર•થયા*રાંણી•પોતે•શ્રી•ટીલબરીનાં•કીલા•આગલ•ગેઇ•અને•ઘોડા•ઉપર•બેશીને•પોતાનાં•લડનારા•શીપાઈઓ•તથા•ખલાશીઓમાં•ફરી•અને•હલો•કરનારાઓની•શાંમે•થાવા•શારું•તેવોને•હીમત•આપી•અને•કહુકે•હું•અશતરી•છેઉં•તોબી•પોતાનાં•દેશને•વાશતે•મરદની•માફક•લડશ•પણ•માહારા•મુલકની•એક•તસૂ•જગો•શ્રી•ઇશપેનનાં•રાજાનાં•હાથમાં•જવા•દેનાર•નહી*શ્રી•ઇશપેનનાં•લોકો•પોતાની•બેશુમાર•વાહાંણોની•ફોજ•ઉપર•એટલો•બધો•ભરોશો•રાખતા•હતા•જે•તેહેને•કોઇથી•કદી•જીતી•લેવાએ•નહી•હેવી•દરીઆઇ•ફોજ•કરી•કેહેતા•હતા*પણ•ઇગલીશ•લોકોએ•તેવોને•જલદીથી•બતલાવેઉ•કે•તેમની•ફોજ•નહી•જીતાએ•હેવી•નથી—જેવારે•તે•ફોજ•ઇંગલંડની•ખાડીમાં•આવી•તેવારે•તેહેમાંનાં•વાહાંણો•હેવાં•તો•મોહોટાં•અને•એટલાંબધાં•હતાં•કે•તેથી•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનાં•શીવાએ•બીજા•દરીઆનાં•ફરનારા•લોકો•તેથી•બીહે•પણ•આપણું•નાંધકું•દરીઆઇ•લશકર•શ્રી•પલીમથનાં•બંદરમાં•હેથી•બાહાર•પડેઉં•અને•લડીને•તેવોને•હેરાંન•કીધા•અને•શલગી•તરફ•હાંકી•મેલેઆ•તેથી•થોડાજ•લોકો•એ•કાંહાંણીની•વાત•કેહેવા•પાછા•દેશ•જઇ•પોહોતા*

અગારજો•તે•વખત•ઇશપેનીઆરડ•લોકો•આપણને•જીતી•લેતે•તો•કદાચ•રોમંનકેથોલીકનો•ધરંમ•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમાં•પાછો•થાતે*પણ•ભલા•ઇશવરે•આપણને•બંચાવેઆ•અને•તે•ઇશવર•આપણી•તરફથી•લડેઓ•હોએ•હેવું•દેખાઉં•કાંએજે•શ્રી•ઇશપેની•દરીઆઇ•ફોજને•ભારે•પવન•અને•તોફાન•લાગું•તેથી•તથા•ઇંગલીશ•લોકોની•ફોજે•હુમલો•કીધો•તેથી•તેહેની•ભારે•નુકશાન•થાએ*ઇશવરે•તેવોને•છોડોવેઆ•એટલા•શારું•ઇલીજેબેથ•રાંણી•પોતે•મોહોટા•દબદબાથી•શેનટપાલનાં•દેવલમાં•ગેઇ•કે•એ•કોંમના•લોકો•ઉપર•ખોદાએતાલાએ•ભારે•મેહેરબાંની•કીધી•તેહેનાં•શુકરાંનાં•કરેએ•મોહોટી•લડાઇની•કાંઇ•જુની•તશવીરો•કદાચ•તમે•જોઇ•હશે*હાઉશઓફલારડ•

(એટલે•જે•મોહોટા•અમીરોની•શભા)નાં•ઘરમાંની•દીવાલ•ઉપરનાં•કપડાં•ઉપર•કે•શ્રીઇશપેનની•દરીઆઇફોજે•શેકશત•ખાધી•તેહેની•તશવીર•પાડેલીછે•તેહેમાં•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડની•દરીઆઈ•ફોજનાં•મોહોટા•મોહોટા•શરદારો•તથા•અમલદારો•જેવો•પોતાનાં•દેશને•બનચાવાને•વાશતે•બાહાદુરીથી•લડેઆ•તેવોની•શબી•તમને•દેખાશે*

ઇલીજેબેથે•હંમેશાં•શારા•અને•ખરા•પરધાંનોને•પશંદ•કીધાં•તેથી•તેણી•પોતાંની•મોહોટી•હોશીઆરી•બતલાવી•અને•તેવોની•શલાહથી•તથા•પોતાંની•શારી•અકલથી•રઇઅતનો•કારભાર•શારી•પખે•ચલાવેઓ*પણ•કેટલીએક•વાતોમાં•એ•રાણીએ•ખચીતપણુ•બતલાવેઉ•નહી•તે•એ•રાણીનાં•બાકીનાં•શવભાવથી•ઉલટુ•હતુ•—રાણી•પોતાંની•આશપાશ•કેટલાએક•શખશોને•હંમેશાં•રાખતી•હતી•જેવો•ખુબશૂરતચેહરાનાં•હતા•અને•માતબર•દેખાવ•તથા•શારાં•કપડાંને•શારુ•તેવોને•પશંદ•કીધા•હશે•હેવુ•દીશેચ*તેહેમાંનો•એક•લારડ•લેશટર•નાંમનો•શખશ•હતો•અને•હેનો•ખુબશૂરત•ચેહેરો•તથા•હેનાં•મોટાં•હેરો•તથા•હેનો•ઉચો•શાંમાંન•શીવાએ•હેનાંમાં•બીજુ•કાંઇ•હતુ•નહી*રાણી•મુલકમો•આશપાશ•ફરવા•તથા•ઘણાએક•અમીરો•અને•તાલેવાંન•શખશોનાં•ઘરમાં•ભેટ•લેવાને•ઘણી•ખુશી•હતી*આપરે•વાંચીએચ•કે•લારડ•લેશટરનો•શ્રી•વારીકશાએઅરનાં•પરાંતમાં•શ્રી•કેનીલવરથમાં•એક•મોટી•ઇમારત•હતી•તેમાં•લેશટરે•રાણીને•મેજબાંની•આપી•હતી•તે•ઇમારત•જુની•થાઇને•હવડાં•ભાગીગેઇચ•પણ•તે•કેહેવી•ઉમદા•હતી•તે•હેજુર•દેખાએછે*એ•ભેટની•વખત•શઘલી•તરેહના•શારા•તમાશા•દેખાડેઆગો•આવેઆ•તેમાં•રમતો•તથા•રૂપ•બદલેલાં•માંણશોનો•નાચ•તથા•એવિગારે•તે•વખતનાં•લોકોને•જેજે•તમાંશા•પશંદ•હતા•તે•શઘલા•દેખાડેઆ*તેમાં•શઘલી•તરેહેની•અચરત•શરખી•તથા•જંગાલી•શૂરતો•કપડાં•પેહેરીને•હતી•અને•આદમીઓએ•તથા•અશતરીઓએ•મુરતી•પુજનારાઓનાં•દેવોનુ•અજબ•જેહેવુ•રૂપ•લીધુ•તથા•લોકો•મોહોડે•મોહોડે•મશકેરીમાં•લડતા•હતા•તથા•ઘોડા•ઉપર•બેશીને•એક•અશવાર•બીજા•શગાથે•નેજાથી•લડતા•હતા•તથા•શઘલી•તરેહેની•રમતો•થાઇ•અને•રાણીની•આશપાશનાં•લોકો•તે•જોઇને•જેટલા•ખુશી•થાતા•હતા•તે

ટલી•રાંણીખી•ખુશી•થાતી•હતી*હેવી•મેજબાંનીઓથી•લારડ•લેશટર•ઉપર•(રાંણીએ)ઘણીજ•મેહેરબાંનગી•રાખી•પણ•કોઈ•વખત•રાંણીનુ•મન•બીલકુલ•બદલાએ• તેવારે•તેહેનાં•માંનીતાઓને••તે•બે•આબરૂ•કરે•અને•હેવો•શવભાવ•રાંણીએ•પોતાંની•દરબારનાં લોકોને•ઘણી•વખત•દેખાડેઓ•જેમ•પોતાંનો•શવભાવ•તથા•મરજી•બદલાઇ•તેમ•—કોઇ•વખત•બીજા•લોકોની•પેઠે•તેણે•ઓછું•મન•દેખાડેઉ•તોપણ•શાધારણ•બોલીએતો•ઇલીજેબેથ•મોટા•દીલની•અને•શારી•રાંણી•હતી•એમ•જાંણવાનાં•શારાં•કારણો•છે*

શ્રી•એશેકશનો•અરલબી•એક•અમીર•હતો•તેહેનાં•ઉપર•રાંણીએ•પછવાડેથી•ઘણીજ•કીરપા•રાખી*પણ•એ•શખશ•ઘણોજ•મગરૂબ•અને•ગારવવાંન•હતો•એટલા•શારૂ•રાંણીનો•શવભાવ•ઘડી•ઘડી•બદલાતો•હતો•તે•હેનાંથી•ખમાઇ•શખાએઉ•નહી•અને•જેવારે•એ•શખશ•રાંણી•પાશે•કાંઇ•અરજ•કરે•ને•રાંણી•તે•નાકબુલ•કરે•તેવારે•તે•ઘણોજ•ગોશે•થાએ•અને•એક•વેલાએ•તેણે•રાંણીની•શાંમ્હે•થાઇને•લડવાને•વાશતે•એક•ફોજ•એકઠી•કીધી*પણ•તે•હારેઓ•અને•પકરાએઓ•અને•તેહેને•કેદકીધો•તથા•તેહેનો•ઇનશાફ•થાએઓ*તેહેને•તકશીરવાર• ઠેરવેઓ•અને•ગરદન•મારવાની•શજા•આપી•પણ•તે•હેનું•ધારતો•હતો•જે•હું•બચશ•અને•હેવું•માંનતો•નહી•હતોજે•તેહેને•ગરદન•મારવાનાં•હોકમ•ઉપર•રાંણી•શહી•કરશે*હેવી•વાત•કેહે છે•જેવારે•હેનાં•ઉપર•રાંણીની•કીરપા•હતી•તેવારે•રાંણીએ•હેને•એક•વીટી•આપી•હતી•અને•કહેઉ•હતુ•કે•જેવારે•તુને•કાંઇ•શંકટ•આવી•પડે•અને•એ•વીટી•મગાવજો•તુ•મહને•મોકલશે•તો•તુ•તે•શંકટમાંથી•છુટશે*માટે•જેવારે•તેહેને•ગરદન•મારવાની•શજા•ઠેરવી•તેવારે•તેણે•નાંટીંગહેમની•કાંઉનટેશ• (એટલેજે•અમીર•જાદી•)ને• તે•વીટી•આપી•અને•અરજ•કીધી•કે•રાંણીનાં•હાથમાં•તે•વીટીને•થાવી•પોહોચાડે*એશેકશ•હરવડી•વાટ•જોતો•હતો•જે•માહરો•જીવ•બંચાવાનો• મહને•જવાબ•મલશે*પણ•પેલી•દગાબાજ•અમીરજાદીએ•તે•વીટી•રાંણીને•આપી•નહી*તેહેનો•માંટી•એશેકશનો•શતરૂ•હતો•માંટે•પોતાંનાં• ધણીને•ખુશી•કરવા•શારુ•તેણે•હેવું•ઘાતકી•અને•દુશટ•કરમ•કીધુ*—રાંણી•અજબરહી•કે

ઈશેકશે•મરતે• પેલી•વીંટી•હજુર•શુધી• મોકલાવી• નહી•અને•તે•ગોશે•થાઈકે•ઈશેકશ•કેવો•મગરૂર•અને•મીજાજી•છે•કે•માફી•પાશે•માફ•માંગતો•નથી* કેવું•કેહછેજે•ઈ•શાધશા•વખત•શુધી•ઇલીજેબેથ• પોતાંનાં• દેલમાં•ઘણીજ• દુખી•અને•રંજીદા•થાઈ•અને•ઈશેકશને•ગરદન•મારવાનાં•હોકમ•ઉપર•શહી•કરતાં•ઘણીજ વાર•લગાડી *તોપણ•અંતે•તેણે•તે•ઉપર•શહી•કરી•અને•પછે•રાંણીઈ•ફિખી•દંવસ•શુખમાં• ભોગવેઆ•નહી* કેવું•કેહછેકે•જેવાર•નાટીંગાહેમનં•અમીરજાદી•મરવા•પડી•તેવારે• તેણે•ઈશેકશનાં•મરણને•માફું•કીધું•હતું• તેથી•તેહેનાં•મનમાં•પશતાવો•થાઈઓ• – તે•અમીરજાદી•અરજકીધી•કે•રાંણીં•મારીપાશે•આવે•અને•પછે•રાંણીને•તે•વીંટી•વીશેની•શઘલી•શાચીવાત•કહી•અને•ઈમ•કેહેચકે•રાંણી•(તે શાંભલીને) કેવાંતો•ગોશે•થાઈકે•તે• અમીરજાદીને• તેહેનાં•બીછાંણાં•ઉપર•મરતી•વખતે•પણ• હીલવી* ઈ•પછે• તરતજ•રાંણીંની•વણીજ•ખરાબ•અને•દુખી•અવશતા•થાઈ•ગઈ•અને•શતેર•વરશની•વઈમાં•તથા•પીશતાલીશ•વરશ•શુધી•રાજ•કીધાપછે•મરણ•પાંમી*

અગરજો•ઇલીજેબેથનાં•પોતાનાં•શવભાવને• અપર•ઘણે•પશંદ•કરીઈ•નહી• તોબી•રાંણી•થાઈને•તેણે•પરજાનું•ભલું•કરવાની•ઘણીજ•ઈછા•હતી* હેનાં•રાજમાં•કારખાંનાં• તથા•વેપાર•વણોજ•વધેઆ•અને•શારા•તથા•શીખેલા• આદમીઓને•આશરો•આપેઓ• તેથી•તેહેનાં•વખતમાં•વીદેઆ•ઘણીજ•વધી•અને•બીજી•ઈરાવરની•આ•પેલી•શુખ•ભરેલી•ઈ•ચીજ•હતી•કે• જે•વખતે•ધરમશાશતર•શીખવાની•શરવેલોકને•છુટ•થાઈ• તે•વખતે•ઈટલાબધા•મોહોટા•અને•હોશીઆર•પંડીતો•હોઈકે•જેવો•લોકોને•ઈ•શરવે•ચીજો••આપણી• પોતાંની•બોલીમાં•શમજાવવાને•શખતીવાન•હતા*

પણ•હવડાં• હું•તમને•કાંઈ•વધારે•કહીશ• નહી•માતરે•ઈટલુજ•તમને•ઈઆદ•દેવ છુ•કે•જેવારે•તમે•વારતા• વાંચો•તેવારે•તમને•મેહેનત• લેઈને•શતેઈ•આદ•રાખવો•જોઈઈ*

ઇલીજેબેથ•રાંણી• ૧૬૦૩ નાં•વરશમાં•મરણ•પાંમી*

હું•છુ•તમારો•માઆલુ•બાપ•તથા• તેવીનાંઈ*

શવાલો*

શ્રી•ઇંગલંડની•રાંણી•કીઆ•વરશમેં•મરણ•પાંમી*
તેહેનાં•પછે•કોંણ•બીજી•રાંણી•થાઇ*
મેરી•રાંણીની•ઇલીજેબેથ•શું•શગી•થાઇ*
ઇલાજેબથે•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમાં•કોંઆ•ધરમ•મુકરર•કીધો*
શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનાં•તખત•ઉપર•વારશનાં•હકથી•કીઆ•શખશે•દાવો•કીધો*
શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડની•મેરીરાંણીએ•ઇલીજાબેથઉપર•કાંઇ•દંગો•કીધો•શું*
શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડની•રાંણી•મેરીનો•કોંઆ•ધરમ•હતો*
મેરીની•તથા•ઇલીજેબેથની•ફોજ•વચે•કાંઇ•લડાઇ•થાઇ•હતી•કેશું•
કોંણ•જીતઉ*
મેરી•તો•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડની•રાંણીને•હશતેકમાં•થાઇ•ગઇશું*
શું•તેહેને•કેદમાં•રાખી•હતી*
કાંહાં*
શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડની•રાંણીનું•શું•થાઇઉં*
શ્રી•ઇંગલંડ•ઉપર•હોમલો•કરવાનો•કેઇ•તરફથી•તજવીજ•થાઇ*
શ્રી•ઇશપેનનાં•લોકોનો•શું•ધરમ•હતો*
ઇશપેન•આરડ•લોકોએ•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડ•ઉપર•હોમલો•કરવાશારું•દરીઆઇ•વાંહાંણની•ફોજ•તઇઆર•કીધી• તેહેને•તેઓએ•શું•નામ•આપેઉં•હતું*
શ્રી•ઇશપેનની•ફોજનું•શું•થએઉં*
શ્રી•ઇશપેનની•દરીઆઇ•ફોજ•બરફાતફરી•થાઇ•તેટલા•શારુ•ઇલીજેબેથ•રાંણીએ•ઇશવરનો•આભાર••શીરીતે•માંનેઓ*
રાંણીએ•કેહેવા•લોકોને•પોતાંનાં•પરધાંન•બનાવેઆ*
રાંણી•પોતાંની•કચેરીમાં•કેહેવા•લોકો•રાખતી•હતી*
લારડ•લેશટર•કેહેવો•શખશ•હતો*
લેશટરે•રાંણીને•મોહોટી•મેજબાંની•આપી•તેહેની•શું•બીનાં•છે*
ફો•(મેજબાંની•)કાંહાં•આપી•હતી*
શ્રી•એશેક્શનો•અરલ•તે•કોંણ•હતો*
એશેક્શ•શાથી•મરણ•પાંમીઓ*
નાટીંગાહેમની•અમીરજાદીની•તથા•વીટી•વીશેની•વાત•તમને•ઇઆદ•છે•કેશું*

નાંટીગાહેમની•અમીરજાદીએ•વીટી•વીશેની•શાચી•વાત•કદી•કબુલ•કીધી•કે•નહી*

એ•વાત•કબુલ•કીધી•તેથી•રાંણીને•કેહેવું•લાગુ*

ઇલીજેબેથ•રાંણીની•આબરુ•કેહેવી•હતી*

ઘૂધરાઈ•થઈ•તેથી•દેશની•હાલતની•શારી•થઈ•કેઘૂ*

ઇલીજેબેથ•રાંણી ૭૦•આ•વરશનો•મરણ•પાંમી*

LETTER XXIV.

MY DEAR BOY,

As we have seen that queen Elizabeth was never married, and consequently left no heirs, you will perhaps wonder who is to be the next king. We must, therefore, look back a little into our history to find the right heir to the throne. We must go back as far as Elizabeth's grandfather, Henry the VIIth. This king's daughter Margaret married the king of Scotland, James the IVth; and their direct descendant, James the VIth of Scotland, was consequently the right heir to the crown of England too. Accordingly he was crowned under the title of James the First of England; and thus the crowns of England and Scotland became united under the same king. Though James was undoubtedly the rightful king of England, it was not long before a number of persons entered into a conspiracy to dethrone him. This was set on foot by lord Grey, lord Cobham, and sir Walter Raleigh, who were all condemned to die. Lords Cobham and Grey were, however, pardoned: but, that they might feel some punishment for their crime, they were made to suffer all the terrors of death, for their pardon did not come till they had actually laid their heads on the block, expecting that, in a moment's time, they would be cut off. Sir Walter Raleigh was reprieved, but was still confined in prison, where he remained many years. He was, at length, as we shall see by and by, cruelly and unfairly executed.

As James the First was the son of Mary, queen of Scots, many of the Papists expected that he would encourage popery; and they were, therefore, grievously disappointed when they found, that though he was too wise to oppress and persecute them, them, yet he still was a true and faithful friend to the Protestant cause. On this account, they contrived a plot to destroy him and his family, and both houses of Parliament together. This is the horrid "Gunpowder plot," that you have so often heard of. The conspirators hired a house adjoining to that where Parliament met, from which they could get into the cellar, under the Parliament-house. Into this cellar they conveyed thirty-six gallons of gunpowder, and these they covered with coals and fagots, so that whoever saw the cellar could perceive nothing particular in the appearance of it, as it had been generally used to keep coals in. At the opening of the Parliament, the king, queen, and prince Henry, their eldest son, were expected to be present, and the conspirators seemed to think that nothing was likely to happen to check their wicked design.

However, Providence mercifully prevented this dreadful destruction. One of those concerned in the plot was sir Henry Percy; and he was very desirous of saving the life of lord Monteagle, who was his intimate friend. About ten days before the meeting of Parliament, this nobleman received a letter without any name to it, which was brought by a person who made his escape the moment he had delivered it. The following strange words were in the letter. "My lord, stay away from this Parliament, for God and man have concurred to punish the wickedness of the times. And think not slightly of this advertisement, but retire yourself into your country, where you may expect the event in safety. For, though there be no appearance of any stir, yet I say they will receive a terrible blow this Parliament, and yet they shall not see who hurts them. This counsel is not to be condemned, because it may do you good, and can do you no harm. For the danger is past as soon as you have burned this letter."

This mysterious letter greatly puzzled lord Monteagle, and he at first thought that it was meant only to frighten him, and laugh at him. He, however, judged it safest to carry the letter to lord Salisbury, who was then secretary of state. Lord Salisbury, too, was inclined to think the letter not much worth attending to: yet he considered it the safest course to lay it before the king in council. None of the council knew what to make of it; and it is said that the king was the first person who found out the meaning of this strange letter. He thought he saw in it something of a plot to produce a great destruction by means of gunpowder; and, upon this, they set about examining the cellars and vaults below both houses of Parliament. Here they found large heaps of fagots under the house of Lords, and they found a strange-looking man, dressed in a cloak and boots, and with a dark lantern in his hand. This was Guy Fawkes, who was laying the train, and getting every thing ready for the dreadful explosion, which was planned for the next day. This wretched man did not seem to be in the least sorry for what he was doing; but he told the officers who took him that he should have been glad to have blown them all up, and himself too. His spirit, however, was a little humbled, when he was threatened to be tortured to make him confess all he knew of the plot; and he then made a full discovery of all his accomplices. When the dreadful plot was thus discovered, the principal conspirators prepared for resisting the authority that was to seize and punish them. They accordingly shut themselves up in a house in Warwickshire, determined to defend it to the last. But a dreadful accident happened to them, and just such a one as they had themselves contrived for others. A spark of fire fell amongst some gunpowder which was laid to dry; it blew up, and made terrible destruction among the conspirators. Some of them endeavoured to rush out of the gate, but were soon cut to pieces by the soldiers who surrounded the house. Some few escaped the slaughter, but were afterwards executed; and some experienced the king's mercy.

I have told you that sir Walter Raleigh was kept in prison, having been condemned for a supposed conspiracy against the king. There he remained for many years. He, at length, got leave to go on an expedition to America, having said that he had discovered a rich gold-mine there. They found no gold, however, but Raleigh attacked the Spaniards who were settled there, and this gave offence to the king of Spain; and king James declared that Raleigh had his orders to avoid all disputes with the Spaniards: and then, to please the king of Spain, he signed the warrant for his execution, not for his present offence, but for his former conspiracy. This seems very hard upon Raleigh; he, however, suffered with the greatest calmness and resignation: he took hold of the axe, and he felt the edge of it, saying, that "it was a sharp, but a sure remedy for all sufferings in this world;" he then made a calm address to the people, and laid his head on the block, without the least appearance of terror.

There were several circumstances, too long for me to mention, which prevented king James from having an easy or a happy reign. He was very fond too of trying how far he might carry his own authority, without consulting the Lords or the Commons; and this made him many enemies. He had besides many expensive friends and favourites about him, and he was constantly applying for money to supply their extravagant wants. In short, the people were full of dissatisfaction; and their discontents gave the king great trouble; they broke out still more violently, as we shall see, in the reign of his son, Charles the First.

The discontents of the people, and the bad success of the king, in his war against the emperor of Germany, might perhaps have had some effects on his constitution; but, however this might be, he was seized with a tertain ague. His courtiers, thinking to please him, told him of a foolish saying, that "an ague was health for a king;" but the king knew better, and said that the proverb was meant for a *young* king. After some fits, he became extremely weak, and he expired in the year 1625, after a reign, over England, of twenty-two years. He was about sixty years of age.

I am, &c.

◆

QUESTIONS.

In what year did queen Elizabeth die?

Was she ever married?

As, therefore, she could leave no direct heirs behind her, who was the proper person to succeed to the throne?

Can you tell me how it was that James the Sixth of Scotland was heir* to the crown of England?

Was any conspiracy formed for the purpose of setting aside king James?

Who was at the head of this conspiracy?

What became of lord Grey, lord Cobham, and sir Walter Raleigh?

Was James the First a Papist, or a Protestant?

What is the stroy of the gunpowder plot?

How was this plot discovered?

How did lord Monteagle act when he received a private letter from one of the conspirators?

Who was the first person to discover that destruction by gunpowder was meditated.

What steps were taken on the king's suggesting his suspicions?

What discovery was made when the cellars were searched?

How did Guy Faux act when he was seized?

What became of the rest of the conspirators?

What became of sir Walter Raleigh?

Had king James a happy reign?

What was his character?

Of what disease did he die?

How did his flatterers try to persuade him that his illness was not dangerous?

What reply did he make to them?

In what year did he die?

How old was he?

How long had he reigned over England?

---

* James the Sixth of Scotland was son to Mary, queen of Scots, who was daughter to James the fifth, who was son to Margaret, (the wife of James the Fourth,) which Margaret was daughter to Henry the Seventh of England.

પતર• ૨૪

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

આપરે•જાણીએકે•ઈલીજેબેથ•રાંણીએ•કદી•કોઈ•શંગાથે•લગન•કીધાંનહી•હતાં•માટે•તે પોતાનો•કોઈ•વારશ•મેલીગોઈ•નહી•માંટે•કદાચ•તમે•અચરત•થશો•કે• હેનાંપછે•બીજું•કોણ•તખત•ઉપર બેશે* માટે•આપરી•વારતામાં•થોડુંએક•આગામચ•આપણને•જોઈએ•શોધી•કાહાડવું•જોઈએ•કે•તખતનો•હકદાર•વારશ•કોણ•છે* આપરે•ઈલીજેબેથનાં•બપાવા•શાતમાં•હેનરીનાં•રાજમાં•જોવુંજોઈએ* એ•હેનરી•પાહાદશાની•છોકરી•મારગારેટ•શ્રી•ઈંશકાટલેંડનાં•રાજા•ચોથા•જેમશ•શંગાથે•પરણી•હતી•અને• તેવોની•ઓલાદનો•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલેંડનોરાજા•છઠો•જેમશ•હતો•તે•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડનાં•તખતનો•વારેશહતો* માંટે• તેહેને• પેહેલા•જેમશનો• ખેતાબ•આપીને• તેહેને•શ્રી•ઈગલેંડનું•પાહાદશાઈ•તાજ•આપેઉં• —અને•એથી•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડ•તથા•ઈશકાટલેંડનાં•રાજો•એક•પાહાદશાનાં•હાત•હેઠલ•એકઠાં•રહ્યાં* જેમશ•શ્રી ઈંગલેંડનો•હકદાર•પાહાદશા•હતો• હેમાં•કાંઈ•શંદેહ•નહી• તોપણ થોડાએક•દીવશમાં•કેટલાએક•શખશોએ•તેહેને•તખત•ઉપરથી•ઉઠાડી•મેલવાનો•મનશૂબો•કીધો* લારડ•ગરે•તથા•લારડ•કોબહાંમ•તથા•શર•વાલટર•રાલીએ•એ•મનશુબામાં•શાંમેલહતા•માટે•તેવોને•શઘલાવોને•મારીનાખવાની•શજા•મલી* લારડ•કોબહાંમ•તથા•ગરેને•માફ•કીધા•પણ• તેવોએ•ગુનાહ•કીધો•તેહેની•કાંઈબી•શજા• તેવોને•મલે•એટલાશારું•તેવોએ•પોતાનાં•માથાં•છૂરી•ઉપર•મેલેઆંહતાં•અને•તરત કાપીનાખશે• હેવી•વાટ•જોતા•હતા• તેટલામાં• તેવોની•માફનો•જવાબ•આવી• પોહોંચેઓ* શર•વાલટર• રાલીએનેબી• માફકીધો•પણ•તેહેને•કેદમાં•રાખી•મુકેઓ•અને• તે•ઘણાં•વરશ•છૂધી•બંદીખાંનામાંજ•રહે* હવેપછે.આપણા•જોવામા•આવશેકે• તેહેને•અંતે•ઘાતકી•પણાંથી•તથા•ગેરવાજબીથી•ગરદન•મારેઓ *

પેહેલો•જેમશ•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલેંડની•રાંણી• મેરીનો• છોકરો• હતો•એટલા•શારું•ઘણાંએક•પેપીશટ• લોકો•હેવી•વાટ• જોતાહતાજે•એધણી•પોપનાં•ધરમને•આશરો•આપશે•પણ• તેવોની•આશા•નશટ•

થાઉ•તેથી• તેવો•દુખીથાઆ•કાંઈજે•તેવોને• હેવું•આલંમ•પડેઉશે•ઈપાહાદશા• પેપીશટ•લોકોને•દુખ•દેવા•તથા•હેરાંન•કરવાને•ચાહાતો•નહીહતો•તોબી•પરોટેશટાંનટનાં•દુરંમ•વાલાઓનો•ઈ•ખરો•તથા•વીશવાશી•મીતર•હતો* ઈટલા•શારું• હેનો•તથા• હેનાં•કુટંબનો•તથા•પારલેમેંનટનાં•બંપ્રે•ઘેરાનો•શરવેનો•શાથે•નાશ•કરવાનો•ઈક•મનશૂબોકીદો* હેને•દારૂગોળાનો•ભઈ•ભરેલો•બંડ•કરી•કેહેછે•જેવીએ તમે ઘણી•વેલા•શાંભલેઉંચ* ઈ•બંડ•(ઉઆગે•મનશૂબો•)કરનારાઓઈ•પારલેમેનટનાં•ઘરની•પાશેનું•ઈક•ઘેર•ભાડે•લીધું•તે•ઘરમાંથી•પારલેમેંટની•હેઠેનાં•ભોઈરાંમાં•જઉ•શકે* તેવો•છતરીશ•પીપ•ભરીને•દારૂ•ઈ•ભોઈરાંમાં•લઈગીઆ•અને•મુકેઆ•અને•પછે•તે•દારૂ•ઉપર•કોઈલા•તથા•બાલવાનાં•લાકડાં•ઢાંકેઆં•માંટે•જેકોઉ•તે•ભોઈરાંને•જોઈતેહેને•કાંઉ•દેખાઈ•નહી•શાથાંજે•તેજગો•હમેશાં•કોઈલા•મેલવાને•શારું•કાંમ•આવતી•હતી* પારલેમેંનટ•બેઠી• તેવખત•પાહાદશા•તથા•રાંણી•તથા• તેમનો•વડો•છોકરો•હેનરી•શાહાજાદો•ઈવો•તેશભામાં•આવી•હાજરથાશે• હેવી•વાટ•જોતા•હતા•અને•બંડ•કરનારાઓ• હેવું•ધારતા•હતાજે• હેવું•કાંઈ•બનનાર•નહી•કે• જેથી•તેવોનાં•પાપી•મનશૂબાને•અડચન•પડે*

પરમેશવરે•દઆ•કીધી•અને•ઈ•ખરાબી•બંનચાવી* ઈ•મનશૂબામાં•શર•હેનરી•પરશી•શાંમેલ•હતો•તે•ધણી•પોતાનાં•અતલગા•દોશ•લારડ•માંનટીગાલનો•જીવ•બનચાવાને•ઘણોજ•ચાહાતોહતો* પારલેમેંટની•શભા•બેઠી• તે હેની•આશરે•દશ•દાહાડા•આગામચ•ઈ•અમીર•(માંનટીગાલ)ને•કે•રાખએ•ઈક•પતર•લખી•આપેઉં•અને•આપેઆ•પછે•તરતજ•નાહાશીગીઆ* તે•પતરમાં•હેઠલ•કહેલી•અચરત•શરખી•બીના•લખેલી•હતી*“માહારા•શાહેબ•ઈપારલેમેંટથી•તમે•દુરરેહેજો•શા•વાશતે જે•ઈપાપી•જમાંનાંને•ઈશવરે•તથા•મનુશે•શજા•આપવાનું•ઠેડવેઉચ* ઈ•ખબર•જે હેવી• તે હેવી•જાંણતાનાં•પણ•તમે•પોતાની•વાડીમાં•જાઉ•બેશજો•અને•તાંહાં•વગર•બીહીકથી•શૂ•બનેચ•તે•જોજો* કાંઉ•તોપાંનજે હેવું•જણાશે•નહી• તોબી•હું•કેહુંચકે આઈ•પારલેમેનટને•ઈક•ભારે•ધકો•લાગશે•અને• તેવોને•કોણ•દુખ

હોય•તે•કોઈ•જોઈશખશે•નહી* એ•શહેલાને•ધીકારવી•જોઈએ•નહી શાથીજે•એથી•તમને•શારું•થાશે•અને•તમને•કાંઈ•નુકશાંન•પોહોંચનાર•નથી* જેવારે•તમે•આ•પતરને•બારીનાખશો•તેવારે•ભએ•મીટી જશે*”

એ•ભએ•ભરેલાં•પતરથી•લારડ•માંનટીગલ•ઘણોજ•ઘબરાઓ• અને•પોહોલાં•તો•તેણે•વીચારેઉ•જે•મને•બીહીવડાવવાને•શારું•તથા• મહારી•મશકેરી•કરવાને•વાશતે•હેવું•કોઈએ•લખું•છે* તોએપણ•તેવખતના•રાજના•કારભારી•લારડ•શાલીશબરી•પાશે•તે•પતર •લઈગીઓ*લારડ•શાલીશબરીએબી•ધારેઉ•કે•એ•પતર•ઘણું•માંનવાજોગ•નથી તોપણ•પાદશાહનાં•પરધાંનોની•આગલ•મુકવું•ઠીક•જાંણેઉ*પરધાંનોબી• તે•પતરને•કાંઈ•શમજેઆ•નહી•અને•એમ•કેહેચકે•એ•આચરતશરખાં•પતરનો•અરથ•શરવ•કરતાંને•પોહોલાં•પાદશાહ•શમજેઓ*પાદશાએ•વીચારેઉં•જે•દારૂથી•કાંઈ•મોહોટી•ખરાબી•કરવાના•મનશુબા•જેહેવું•હેમાં•કાંઈ•દીશેચ•માંટે•પારલેમેટનાં•ખંડોના•ઘેરોની•હેઠનાં ભોએરાં•તપાશવા•લાગા* અમીરોની•શભાનાં •ઘર•હેઠલ•લાકરાંનાં•મોહોટા•ઢગલા•મલેઆ•તથા•એક•આજબ•જેહેવો•શખશ•મલેઓ•તેણે•ડગલો•તથા•પગામાં•ચાંમરાંનાં•મોજાં•પેહેરેલાં•હતાં•અને•તેહેનાં•હાતમાં•એક•શંધારું•ફાંનશ•હતું*એશખશનું•નાંમ•ગાઈફોકશ•હતું અને•એ•ઘણી•દારૂ•શલગાવવાને•વાશતે•શરંગો•મેલતો•હતો•અને•તે બીજે•દીને•વર•ઉરાડી•નાંખવાને•શારું•શઘલી•ચીજો•તઈઆર•કરી• મેલતો•હતો*એ•શખશ•જે•કાંમ•કરતો•હતો• તેમાંટે•કશીરીતે•દલગીર•દેખાઈઓ•નહી•પણ•અમલદારોએ•તેહેને•પકડેઓ•તેવોને•એણે•કહુંકે•તમને•શરવેને•તથા•હું•પોતે•પોતાંનેબી•દારૂ•શલગાવીને•ઉરાડી નાંખતે•તો•હું•ખુશી•થતે*હેનોગુશો•ઠંડો•પડેઓ•જેવારે•હેને•દુખ પોહોંચાડવાની•ધમકી•દેખાડી•કે•એ•ખંડ•વીશે•એ• જેકાંઈ• જાંણતો•હોએ•તે•કબુલથાએ•તેવારે•એણે•પોતાનાં•શઘલા•શોબતીઓનાં•નાંમ•ઉઘાડાં•કહ્યાં* જેવારે•એ•ભએ •ભરેલો•ખંડ•એરીતે•માલમ•પડેઓ• તેવારે•એ•ખંડ•કરનારાવોને•પકડીને•જે•શતા•વાલાઓ•શજા•આપવા• આવેઆ•તેવોની•શાંમને•ખંડ•કરનારાઓ•લડવા•તઈઆર•થાઆ* શ્રી•વારીક•શારિમાં•એક•ઘર•છે•તેહેમાં•તેઓ•ભરાઆ•અને•જાંહાંલગ

ન•તેવોથી•પોતાનો•બંચાવ•થાઇ• તાંહાં•શુધી•કરે• હેવું• મુકરર•કીધું* પણ•ઇક• નઇલરેલો• બનાવ• તેવો•ઉપર• બનેઓ• જે• તેવોઇ•બીજાવોને•શારૂ•કરી•રાખેઉ•હતું•તે•તેવોને•પોતાનેજ•નરેઉં* કાંઇ•દારૂ•શુકાવા• મેલેઓ•હતો• તેહેમાં•અતશની•ચનગારી•ઇકાઇક•પડી•તેથી•તે•દારૂ•શલગી•ઉઠેઓ•અને•બંડ•કરનારાઓને•ઘણાજ•ઘાઇલ•કીધા* કેટલાઇક• લોકોઇ•દરવાજાની•બાહાર•નીકલવા•માંગેઉં•પંણ•જે•શીપાઇઓઇ•ઇ•ઘેરને•ચોતરફથી•ઘેરી•લીધું•હતું•તેવોઇ•તેહેનાંવોને•કાપી•નાંખેઆ* કેટલાઇક•લોકો•ઇ•કતલથી•બનચેઆ• પણ•તેવોને• પછે•તુરત•મારી•નાંખેઆ•અને•કેટલાઇક•લોકોને•પાહાદશાઇ•માફ•કીધા*

મેં•તમને•કહુંચ•કે•શર• વાલટર•રાલીઇને•કેદરાખેઓ• હતો ઇટલા•વાશતેજે•તેણે•પાહાદશા•ઉપર•દંગો•કીધો*તે• ઘણાઇક•વરશ•શુધી•કેદમાં•રહેા*અંતે• તેહેને•શ્રી•ઇમેરીકા• જવાની•રજા•મલી કાંઇજે• તેણે•કહુ•કે•મેં •તે•દેશમાં•ઇક•કીમતી•શુનાંની• ખાંણ•શોધી•કાહાડીચ*તેવોને•શુંનું તો•મલેઉં •નહી•પંણ•જે• ઇશપેનનાં• લોકો•તાંહાં•જઇ•,વશેઆહતા• તેવો•ઉપર•રાલીઇઇ• હેમલો•કીધો• અને•તેથી•શ્રી•ઇશપેનનાં•રાજાને• માઠું•લાગું •અને• જેમશ• પાહાદશાઇ કહુ• જે•રાલીઇને• હેવો•હુકમ•આપેઓચ•કે•શ્રી• ઇશપેનનાં• લોકો• શંગાથે•કશી•તરેહેનો•કજીઓ•કરવો•નહી• અને•પછે•શ્રી•ઇશપેનનાં રાજાને•ખુશી•કરવા•શારૂ •રાલીઇને•મારીનાંખવાનાં•હુકમ•ઉપર•જેમશે•શહી•કીધી• તે•હવડાંનાં•ગુનાહને•વાશતે•નહી•પંણ•તેણે•અગાઉ•ફીશાદ•કીધો•હતો• તેટલા•શારૂં *•રાલીઇને•વાશતે•ઇ•ઘણુંજ બુરૂં થઉં • તોપણ તે•ઘણીજ•નચીનતાઇથી•તથા• ખુશીથી•મુવો — તેણે ગારદન•મારવાની•કુહાડી•પકડી•અને•તેહેની•ધાર• તપાશી•જોઇ•અને•કહુકે•“ઇ•તેજ•ધારનું•હથીઆર છે• તેથી•આઇ• દુનીઆંમાં•શઘલાં દુખોનો•ઉપાઇ•થાઇછે”પછે•તેણે•નીરાંતથી•લોકોને•કહી• શંભલાવેઉ• અને•પછે• પોતાનું•માંથું•કશી• તરેહેનો• બીહીક•વીનાં•કાપી•નાંખવા આપેઉં*

બીજી•કેટલીઇક•બીનાં•બની• તે•ઘણીજ•લાંમબીછે•માંટે•માહા

રેથી•કેહેવાઈ•નહી•તેથી•જેમશ•પાહાદશાઈ• રાજ•અમનમાં•તથા•શૂખમાં•ભોગવેઉ•નહી*અમીરો•તથા•લોકોની•શલાહની•શલા•પુછેઆ•વીનાં•તેહેનાંથી•પોતાનો•અખતીઆર•જેટલો•વધી•શકેઓ•તેટલો•વધારેઓ.અને•તેહેને•લીધે•ઘણાંઈક•શખશો•હેનાં•દુશમનો•થઆ*તે•શીવાઈ•હેને•ઘણો•ખરચ•થાઈ•હેવા•હેનાં•ઘણાંઈક•મીતરો•તથા•માંનીતા•શખશો•હતા•તેવોને•બેહદ•પઈશા•જોઈઈ•તે•આપવા•શારૂં•ઘડી•ઘડી•પઈશા•માંગતો•હતો*ઈ•શરવનો•શાર•ઈફ્રે•શાઘલી•પરજા•હેનાં•ઉપર•નારાજી•થઈ•અને•તેથી•પાહાદશાને•ઘણીજ•મેહેનત•પડી•અને•હેનાં•છોકરા•પેહેલા•ચારલશનાં•રાજમાં•તેવોઈ•ઘણોજ•ફીશાદ•કીદો*

રઈઈતની•નારાજીથી•તથા•જેમશ•પાહાદશાઈ•શ્રી•જરમનીનાં•પાહાદશા•શંગાથે•લડાઈ•કીધી•તેહેમાં•હારેઓ•તેથી•કદાચ•હેનાં•શારીરને•કાંઈ•હાંણી•પોહોચી•હશે•પણ•ગમે•તે•હોઈ•તોપણ•તેહેને•તાહાડીઓ•તાપ•આવેઓ*હેની•કચેરીનાં•લોકોઈ•હેને•ખુશી•કરવા•શારૂં•ઈક•કેહેવત•કહી•શંભલાવી•કે"તાહાડીઓ•તાપ•પાહાદશાની•તંનદરોશતી•(ની•નીશાંન)છે"પણ•પાહાદશા•વધારે•શારૂં•શમજતો•હતો•અને•કેહેવા•લાગોજે•ઈ•કેહેવત•જવાંન•પાહાદશાને•વાશતે છે*કેટલીઈક•વખત•બેશુદ•થઆ•પછે•પાહાદશા•ઘણોજ•નાકુવત•થઈ•ગઓ•અને•બાવીશ•વરશ•શૂધી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાં•રાજ•કીધા•પછે•૧૬૨૫નાં•વરશમાંમરણ•પાંમેઓ*તે•આશરે•શાઠ•વરશની•ઉમરનો•હતો*

હું•છું•તમારો•અને•તે•વનાંઈ*

શવાલો*

ઈલીજેબેથ•રાંણી•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમી*

તે•કદી•પરણીતી•કે•નહી*

માંટે•તેહેનાં•પછે•તેહેનો•પોતાનો•કોઈ•વારશ•રહ્યો•નહી•તેવારે•કોઆ•શખશને•હકથી•તખત•મલેઉં•જોઈઈ*

તએ•મહને•કેહેવોકે•શીતરેહેથી•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડનો•રાજા•છઠો•જેમશ શ્રી•ઈંગલડનાં•તખતનો•ધણી†થાઓ*

જેમશ•પાહદશાને•તખત•ઉપરથી• ઉઠારી•મેલવાને•શારૂં•કોઈએ•મનશૂબો•કીધો•હતોકે•શૂં*

એ•મનશૂબામાં•વરો•કોણ•હતો*

લારડ•ગારે•તથા•લારડ•કોબહાંમ•તથા• શર•વાલટર• રાલીએનું•શૂં થાએઉં*

પેહેલો•જેમશ•રોમનકેથોલીક•ઇઆ•પરોટેશટેનટ•હતો*

દારુનાં•ફીશાદ•બાબેની•શૂં•વાતછે*

એ•દંગો•શીરીતે•માલંમ•પડેઓ*

એ•મનશૂબો•કરનાર•માંથી•એક•શખશે•એક•પરબાડું•પતર•લારડ•મોનટીગલને• મોકલેઉ•તે•પોંહોતાથી•એ•લારડે•શૂં•કીધું*

પેહેલ•વેહેલાં•હેવું• કોણને•જણાઉં•કે•દારૂથી•નાશ•કરવાનો•મનશુબો•કીધોય*

પાહદશાનાં•મનમાં•હેવો•શક•આવેઓ• તેવારે•શૂં•તજવીજ•થાઈ*

ભોએરું•ફુડેઉં• તેવારે•તેહમાંથી•શૂં•મલેઉં*

જેવારે•ગાઈફાકશ•પકરાએઓ• તેવારે• તેણે•શૂં•કહું*

બીજા•બંડ•કરનારાઓનું•શૂં•થાએઉં*

શર•વાલટર•રાલીએનું•શૂં•થાએઉં*

જેમશ•પાદશાહે•શૂખ•ચેનમાં•રાજ•કીધું•કે•શૂં*

એ•પાહદશાનો•શબાવ•તથા•આબરુ•કેહવી•હતી*

હેને•શૂં•આજાર•થાએઓ•જે•તેથી•એ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

હેને• ફોશલાવનારાઓએ•હેને•શીતરેહેથી•શમજાવેઓજે• હેનો•આજાર•કાંઇ•ખરાબ•નથી*

એણે• તેવોને•શું•જવાબ•દીધો*

---

†શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડનો•રાજા•છઠો•જેમશ•ઈશકાટ•લોકોની•રાંણી મેરીનો•છોકરો•થાએ•જે• મેરી•પાંચમાં• જેમશની• છોકરી•થાએ•અને•એ જેમશ•મારગારેટનો• છોકરો•થાએ• તે•મારગારેટ•(ચોથા•જેમશની•બઇરે•)શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•શાતમાં•હેનરીની• છોકરી•થાએ*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરણ•પાંમેઆ*
તેની•કેટલી•ઉમર•હતી*
તેણે•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમાં•કેટલા•વરશ•શુધી•રાજ•કીધું*

LETTER XXV.

MY DEAR BOY,

I TOLD you in my last letter, that, during the reign of James the First, there was great dissatisfaction and discontent among the people. The king had given great offence by carrying his prerogative too far, and by thus neglecting to consider the wishes of the people, and to give them their constitutional privileges. This was a very great disadvantage to his son, Charles the First, when he came to the throne. This king was of a mild and gentle disposition, and would have been glad to have been at peace with all men: but yet, such were the times in which he lived, that he was in constant trouble and distress. When his father died, the nation was engaged in a war with the emperor of Germany; and the expence of this war obliged king Charles to apply to the parliament for money. They would not grant him so much as he required, and he was obliged to try other methods, and to endeavour to raise supplies *without* the aid of parliament; and this caused great murmurings throughout the nation. War was made against the French too; but this was unsuccessful, and increased the general discontent. There was soon an open quarrel between the king and the parliament. Several members of the House of Commons were accused of sedition, and committed to prison; and many were, besides being imprisoned, made to pay large fines. This increased the opposition to the king, and excited great compassion for the sufferers.

Another circumstance, at this time, gave great distress to the king. There was a duke of Buckingham, who was a great favourite of the king; and his regard for this nobleman brought him many enemies among the people. This duke of Buckingham was at Portsmouth for the purpose of hurrying on an expedition against France. Whilst he was in a room surrounded by his officers, and was talking to one of them, a man, named Felton, struck him in the breast with a knife. The duke had only time to say, "the villain has killed me," and he then instantly fell down dead. No one saw the person who gave the blow, but a hat was soon picked up, which it was immediately supposed belonged to the murderer. Whilst they were considering whose hat this could be, a man without a hat was seen very quietly walking before the door, and was heard to say, "I am he!" He seemed to glory in his crime, and, to the last moment, he never would confess that he had done any thing wrong in committing this murder.

I cannot attempt to describe to you all the troubles of this reign; the history of this rebellion takes up whole volumes. The parliament took up arms against the king, and there were many battles between the king's army and their's. It is dreadful to think of the miseries and slaughter which filled the kingdom; and to reflect, that these were all among fellow-countrymen, who ought to live like friends and brothers, instead of quarrelling and killing one another.

During these wars, Oliver Cromwell came forward as an officer in the parliamentary army, and he beat the king's army at the battle of Marstonmoor.* But it was at the battle of Naseby, in Northamptonshire, that the king suffered such a loss as he was never able to recover. He was in this battle in person, but was obliged to retreat; and Cromwell and his friends gained a complete victory. King Charles fled to Oxford, where he had always found steady and loyal supporters, but the place was not strong enough to protect him, and he would soon have fallen into the hands of the parliamentary forces, commanded by Fairfax, had he not resolved to put himself under the protection of the Scotch army, where he was in hopes that he should find friends. He was, however, decei-

* Near York.

ved. The parliament offered a large sum of money to the Scots, and they gave up their king. The Scotch army returned home loaded with the riches which they had earned by this treacherous and disgraceful action.

Oliver Cromwell may now be considered as the chief man in this great rebellion. He was the son of a gentleman in Huntingdonshire; his fortune was but small, and there seemed nothing in his character which could give any reason to expect that he should ever become so important a man. He was rough in his person, very slovenly in his dress, and had a stammering and awkward manner of expressing himself. By perseverance, however, he got to be the leader in this rebellion, and to carry everything his own way. The king, after being harassed and imprisoned, and moved from one place to another, was now a prisoner in Hampton-court. After this, he was confined in Carisbrook-castle, in the Isle of Wight; then he was conveyed to Hurst-castle, in Hampshire: he was afterwards brought to Windsor, and then to London. Many of his subjects who saw him could not help grieving to perceive his altered appearance: he looked pale and sickly; his hair had become grey with sorrow, he had suffered his beard to grow, and his apparel shewed all the marks of poverty and distress. Nobody could see him without feeling for his sufferings.

He was soon brought to trial: and, when he was produced before his judges, he sat down with all the dignity of a king, without moving his hat, or shewing, by any such sign, that he acknowledged their power to try him. The charge against him was then read, and he was accused of being the cause of all the bloodshed since the beginning of the rebellion. At this the king could not help shewing by his looks how false and unjust he considered this accusation. He was four times brought before this assembly of the commons, but never would allow that it was a fair court of justice, or that it had any right to try him. They were, however, determined to bring him to execution; and on the fourth day they accordingly pronounced sentence against him. When he returned to Whitehall, he begged to be allowed to see his children, and to have the bishop of London (Dr. Juxon), to assist him in his prayers. He was allowed three days to prepare for execution. All of his family then in England were the princess Elizabeth, and the duke of Gloucester, a child of about three years of age. He gave the princess some pious and good advice; and then he took his little son in his arms, and said, "My child, they will cut off thy father's head, and will, perhaps, make thee a king; but remember, thou must not be a king as long as thy brothers Charles and James are alive. They will cut off their heads when they can take them: and they will cut off thy head at last, and, therefore, I charge thee do not be made a king by them." The child, bursting into tears, replied, "I will be torn in pieces first."

It is said, that the king's mind was so firm, that he slept as well as usual every night between the sentence and the execution, though the noise of the workmen, who were raising the scaffold, was continually within reach of his ears.

It was on the 30th of January that the bloody sentence was put in execution. The scaffold was so contrived that it was on a level with one of the windows at Whitehall: it was covered with black, and upon it were the block and the axe, and two executioners in masks. The king then came forth, attended by his faithful friend and servant bishop Juxon.

Whilst he was preparing himself for the block, the good bishop said to him, "There is, sir, but one stage more, which, though turbulent and troublesome, is yet a very short one. It will carry you a great way. It will carry you from earth to heaven; and there you shall find, to your great joy, the prize to which you hasten,—a crown of glory." "I go," replied the king, "from a corruptible to an incorruptible crown, where no disturbance can have place." "You exchange," replied the bishop, "a temporal for an eternal crown; a good exchange!" Then the king laid his neck on the block, and one of the executioners severed his head from his body at one blow; and the one, holding it up, exclaimed, "This is the head of a traitor." The people who saw this sad sight, shewed the most mournful sings of grief and sorrow, and seemed to blame themselves for being patient spectators of so horrible a deed.

Charles was executed in the year 1649, in the 49th year of his age, and the 24th of his reign. "He was of a middling stature, robust, and well proportioned. His countenance was pleasing, but melancholy, and this mournful cast was probably brought on by the troubles and afflictions which he had so long endured."

Believe me your affectionate father.

QUESTIONS.

In what year did king James the First of England die?
Who Came after him?
What was the disposition of Charles the First?
Was the nation at war, or at peace, when James the First died?
Did the parliament readily grant the king supplies for carrying on the war?
Did the king and the parliament quarrel?
What nobleman was, at that time, in great favour with the king?
What became of the duke of Buckingham?
Were there dreadful civil wars soon after that time?
In what battle do we first hear of Oliver Cromwell?
In what battle was the king's army dreadfully beaten?
To what place did the king go after the battle of Naseby?
In whom did the king hope to find protection?
How did the Scotch army treat him?
Who was Oliver Cromwell?
What was his appearance?
What became of the king?
Was the king brought to trial?
Did the king's children visit him in prison?
Which of them?
What did he say to his son the duke of Gloucester?
Was the king put to death?
What bishop attended him?
Where was he executed?
How did he behave?
What did bishop Juxon say to him?
How old was king Charles when he was beheaded.

How many years had he reigned?
In what year was this?
In what month?
On what day of the month?

પતર• ૨૫

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

મેં•તહ્મને•માહારા•ગઆ• પતરમાં•કહું•હતુંજે• પેહેલા•જેમશજાં• વખતમાં• લોકો• ઘણાંજ•નારાજી•અને• નાખુશી•હતાં* કાંઈજે• તે•પાહાદશાઈ• પોતાંજો•હક•ઘણોજ• બજાવેઆ• અને• લોકોનાં•મરજી•શંભાળી•નહી•તથા• તેવોને•ધારાનો•આધારો•આપવો•ઘટતો•હતો• તે•આપેઓ•નહી• તેથી•તેવોને•ઘણોજ•ગુશો•લાગો* ઈ•પાહાદશાનો• છોકરો• પેહેલો•ચારલશ• જેવારે•તખત•ઉપર• બેઠો• તેવારે•ઈયાં• હેને•ઘણું•નુકશાન• પોહોંચેઉ* ઈ• ચારલશ•પાહાદશા•નરમ•અને• •ધીરા•શભાવનો• હતો•માંટે•શઘલા• લોકો•શંગાથે•શહેલા•શપતથી• રેહેવાને•ખુશી•હતો•પણ•તે•વખત•હેવો•હતોજે• હેને•હર•ઘડી•મેહેનત•પડી•અને• દુખ•થઉં* જેવારે•હેનો•બાપ•મરણ•પાંમેઓ•હતો• તેવારે•(ઇંગલીશ•)લોકો•શ્રી•જરમનીના•પાહાદશા•શંગાથે•લડાઈ•કરવામાં•ગુંતેલા•હતા•અને•ઈ•લડાઈના•ખરચથી•ચારલશ•પાહાદશાને•પારલેમેંનટ•પાશે•પઈશા•માંગવા•જરૂર•પડેઆ*ઈ•ણે•જેટલા•પઈશા•માંગેઆ• તેટલા•શઘલા•પારલેમેંનટ• હેને• આપવાને•રાજી•નહી• હતી•માંટે•ઈણે•બીજી•રીતે•તજવીજ•કીધી•અને•પારલેમેંનટનાં•મદત•વીના•પઈશા•ઈકઠા•કરવા•માંગેઆ•તેથી•શઘલી• પરજા•ઘણીજ•ગુરવા•લાગી* ફરંચ•લોકો•શંગાથેબી•લડાઈ• કીધી•પણ• તેહેમાં• ફતેહ• થાઈ•નહી•તેથી•શરવે• લોકો•વધારે• નારાજી•થાઆ* તરતજ• પાહાદશા•તથા•પારલેમેંનટની•વચે• જાહેર• લડાઈ•થાઈ*હાઉશ•આફ•કાંમનશ•(ઈટલેજે• લોકોની•શભા)માં•બેશનારા• કેટલાઈક•શખશો• ઉપર•ફીશાદનું•બાંહાનું•મેલીને• તેવોને• કેદ•કરાવેઆ•અને•કેટલાઈકને•કેદકીધા•શેવાઈ•મોહોટા•દંડ•લીધા* તેહેને•લીધે•ઘણાઈક•લોકો• પાહાદશાની•શાંમને• થાઆ•અને•ઈ•બીચારા• દુખ•ભોગવનારાઓની• દઆ•ખાવા•લાગા*

ઈ•વખતે•ઈક•બીના•બની• તેથી•પાદશાહને• ઘણુંજ• દુખ•ઉપજીઉં• શ્રી•બકીંગાહાંમનો•ઈક•ડીઉક•હતો•તે•પાદશાહનો•ઘણોજ•માંનીતો•હતો•અને•પાદશાહ•ઈ•અમીરને•ચાહાતો•હતો•તેથી•ઘણાં•ઈક•લોકો•ઈ•ડીઉકનાં•દુશમન•થઆ* ઈ•શ્રી•બકીંગાહાંમનો•ડીઉક•શ્રી• પોરટશ•માઉથમાં•હતો•અને•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•શંગાથે• લડાઈ•કરવા•શારું•ઉતાવલ•કરતો•હતો* તે•ઈક• ઓરડામાં• પોતાંના•અમલદારોની•શાથે•હતો•અને• તેવોમાંનાં•ઈકની•શંગાથે•વાત•કરતો•હતો•ઈટલામાં• ફેલટંન•નાંમના•ઈક•શખશે•આવીને• તેહેની•છાતીમાં•ઈક•છરી•મારી* તેવારે•તે•ડીઉકને•ઈટલુંજ•બોલવાનો•વખત•મલેઓ•કે• "ઈ•ચંડાલે•મહને•મારી•નાંખેઓ•" અને•પછે•તરતજ• હેઠલ•પડીને•મરણ•પાંમેઓ*ઈ•જખમ•કોણે•કીધો• તે•કોઈ• જોઉં•નહી• પણ•જગ્યાથી•ઈક• ટોપી•મલી•તે• પેલા•ખુંનીની• હશે• કેહું•ધારતા•હતા* તેવો•શરવે•વીચાર•કરતા•હતા•જે•ઈ•ટોપી•કોણની•હશે•ઈટલામાં•ઈક•શખશ•ઉઘાડે•માંહે•ચુપકીદે•બારણાં•આગલ•ફરતો•હતો• તે•તેવોને•નજર•પડેઓ•અને•તે•બોલેઓ•જે•"હું•તે•(ખુંની•)છેઉં•" તે•તેવોઈ•શાંભલેઉં* ઈ•શખશે•ખુંન•કીધું•તેથી• ઈ•ઘણોજ•ખુશી•દેખાઓ•અને•તે•મરણ•પાંમેઓ•તાંહાં•શુધી•ઈણે•કદી•કબુલ•કીધું•નહીંજે•મેં•ઈ•ખુન•નાહેક•અને•ગેરવાજબી•કીધું*

ઈ•પાદશાહના•રાજમાં•જેજે•ફીશાદ•થાઓ• તેશરવેનું•માહારેથી•બઆંન•થાઈ•શકતું•નથી•કાંઈજે•એ•ફીશાદની•વારતાથી•આપાં•પુસ્તકો•ભરાએલાંછે*પારલેમેંનટ•પાદશાહની•શાંગને•લડાઈ•કરવા•ઉઠી•ઉભીથાઈ•અને•તેવોની•તથા•પાદશાહની•ફોજ•વચે•લડાઈ•થાઈ* ઈ•વખત•ઈ•મુલકમાં•જેદુખો•તથા•ખુનાં•મરકી•ચાલી•તે•ભારે•ભઆંકાર•જેહેવુંછે•અને•ઈ•લડાઈઓ•ઈક•વતંનનાં•લોકો•વચે•પોત•પોતામાં•થાઈ• — ઈ• લોકોને•ઈક•બીજા•શંગાથે•લડાઈ•તથા• ખુન•કીધાને•દેકાંણે•મીતરો•તથા•ભાઈઓની• પેઠે•રેહેવું•જોઈતુંતું*

ઈ•લડાઈમાં•પારલેમેંનટની•ફોજનો• ઓલીવર•કરાંમવેલ•નાંમનો•ઈક•શરદાર•હતો •તેણે•મારશટન• મુર• † નાંમની• જગા•આ

---

† શ્રી•ઈઆરક'નાંમનાં•શેહેરની•પાશે*

ગલ•લડાઈ•કીધી•તાંહાં•પાદશાની•ફોજને•મારી•હટારી*પણ•શ્રી•નારથાંમપટનશાઈરનાં•પરાંતમાં•શ્રી•નેશબીમાં •લડાઈ•થાઈ•તેહેમાં•પાહાદશાને•હેવું•તો•નુકશાંન•પોહોંચેઉંજે•ફરીથી•પાછી•ફોજ•મેલવી શકાઈ•નહી* ઈ•લડાઈમા•પાહાદશા•પોતે•હતો•પણ•હેને•પાછું•હટવું•પડેઉં•અને•કરાંમવેલ•તથા•તેહેના•દોશતો•ફતેહ•પાંમેઆ* ચારલશ•પાહાદશા•શ્રી•આકશફરડમાં•નાહાશી•ગીઆ•તાંહાં•હેને•મદત કરનારા•ઈતબારી•લોકો•હતા•પણ•તે•જગો•હેવી•મજબુત•હતી•નહી•જે•પાહાદશાનો•તેહેમાં•બંચાવ•થાઈ•અને•પાહાદશાને•હેવી•આશા•હતીજે•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલેંડની•ફોજમાં•જઈને•તેવોનો•આશરો•માંગશતો•તેવો•માહારા•દોશત•થાશે•માંટે•અગરજો•પાહાદશા•હેવું•નહી•કરતે•તો•પાહાદશા•પારલેમેનટની•ફોજ•જેહેનો•શરદાર•ફેરફાકશ•હતો•તેહેના•હાથમાં•જતે* પણ•પાહાદશા•ઠગાઆ* કાંઈજે•પારલેમેનટે•ઈશકાટ•લોકોને•ઘણાંઈક•પઈશા•આપેઆ•તેથી•તેવોઈ•પાહાદશાને•આપી•દીધો* શ્રી•ઈશકાટલેંડની• ફોજ•હેવું•દગાબાજીનું•લજેઆ•ભરેલું•કાંમ•કીધાથી•જે• પઈશા•કમાઈ•તે•લઈને•પાછી•પોતાને•વતન•ગઈ*

ઈ•દંગામાં•ઓલીવરકરાંમવેલ•ગુખીઅ•હતો•હેવુ•જાંનવુંજોઈઈ*ઈ•ધણી•શ્રી•હનટીંગડનશાઈરનાં•ઈક•ભલા•માંણશનો•છોકરો•હતો —હેનીપાશે•થોડીજ•પુંજી•હતી•અને•હેનાંશાભાવમાં•હેવુંકાંઈ•હતુ નહી•કે•જેથી•હેવી•આશારખાઈજે•ઈ•શખશ•હેવો•મોહોટો•થશે*હેનો•ચેહેરો•શારો•નહી•હતો•તથા•પોશાક•બી•ખરાબ•હતો•અને•ઈ•અચકાતો•તથા•ખરાબ•રીતે•બોલતો•હતો* મેહેનત•કીધાથી•ઈ•દંગામાં•પોતે•શરદાર•થાઈપડેઓ•અને•હરેક•ચીજ•પોતાની•મરજી•માફક•કીધી*પાહાદશાને•દુખદીધું•તથા•કેદ•કીધો•તથા•ઈક•ઠેકાંણેથી•બીજે•ઠેકાંણે•લઈગઈઆ•પછે•તેહેને•હાંમપટન•કોરટમાં•કેદ•રાખેઓ* તે•પછે•હેને•શ્રી•વાઈટનાં•ટાપુમાં•કેરીશબરૂકનાં•કીલામાં•લઈગઈઆ•અને•પછે•તેહેને•શ્રી•હામપશાઈરમાં•હરશટનાં•કીલામાં•લાવેઆ•અને•પછી•શ્રી•વીંડશોર•લાવેઆ• ને•તાંહાંથી•શ્રી•લંડન•લાઈઆ*હેની•ધણીખરી•રઈઅત•હેનો•બદલાઈલો•ચેહેરો•જોઈને•દુખી•થાવ

લાગી• —પાદશાહ•દુબલો•અને•આજારી• દેખાએઆ•અને•દુખને•લીધે•હેના•બાલ•શફેદ•થાઇ•ગીઆ•હતા•એણે•પોતાની•દાહારી•વધવા•દીધી•હતી•અને•હેનો•પોશાક•હેવો•હતો•જે•તેથી•હેનું•દરીદરપાણ•તથા•દુખ•નજર•આવે* હેને•જોઇને•શરવકોઈને•હેનુ•દુખ•લાગે*

હેની•વેહેલાંજ•છાંડાણં•થાઇ•અને•જેવારે•હેને•ઇનશાફ•કરનારાઓની•શાંમને•લઇઆવેઆ•તેવારે•પાહાદશા•પોતાનાંદરજા•પરમાંણિઆવીને•બેઠો•અને•પોતાની•ટોપી•કાહડી•નહી•કે•તેથી•હેવું•માલમ•પડે•જે•પાહાદશા•તેવોની•ઈનશાફ•કરવાની•શતા•કબુલ•રાખે* હેની•શાંમને•ફરીઆદી•કીધી•હતી•તે•વાંચી•અને•કહું•જે•એ•દંગો•શરૂ•થાઓ•તે•દીવશથી•શઘલાં•ખુન•થાઆં•તે•તાહારે•લીધે•થાઆં*તેવારે•પાહાદશાએ•પોતાનાં•ચેહેરાથીજ•હેવું•દેખાડેઉં•જે•એ•માહારી•નજરમાં•ફરીઆદ•જુઠી•અને•અંણઘટતી છે*ચાર•વખત• હેને•કાંમનશની•શભા•આગલ•લાવેઆ•પંણ•એણે•કદી•કબુલ•કીધું•નહી•જે•એ શભા•ઇનશાફ•કરવાને•લાએક•છે•અથવા•માહારો•ઇનશાફ•કરવાનો•એ•શભાનો•કશો•હક•છે*પંણ•તેવોએ•હેને•મારી•નાંખવાનું•મુકરર•કીધું•હતું•અને•ચોથે•દીવશે•તેવોએ•હેને•શજા•કરવાનો•હોકમ•આપેઓ*જેવારે•પાહાદશા•પાછો•વાઇટ•હાલમાં•ગીઓ•તેવારે•એણે અરજ•કીધીજે•મહને•માહારાં•છોકરાંવોને•મલવા•દીએ•અને•શ્રી•લંડનનાં•બીશપ•ડાકટર•જકશનને•આપે•જે•તે•ધણી•બંદગી•કરતી•વખત•પાહાદશાને•મદત•કરે*હેનાં•આખા•કુટંબમાં•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમાં•ઇલીજબેથ•શાહાજાદી•તથા•શ્રી•ગલાશટરનો•ડીઉક•આશરે•તરંણ•વરશની•વએનું•બચું•એવો•હતાં*તેણે•પોતાની•શાહાજાદીને•કાંઇ•ધરમી•અને•શારી•શહલા•આપી•અને•પછે•પોતાનાં•નાંધલા•છોકરાને હાથમાં•લેઇને•બોલેઓ “ માહારા•બેટા•તેવો•તાહારા•બાપનું•ડોકું•કાપી•નાંખશે•અને•કદાચ•તુંને•પાહાદશા•કરશે•પંણ•ઇઆદ•રાખજે•કે•જાંહાંશુધી•તાહારા•ભાઇ•ચારલશ•તથા•જેમશ• જીવતા છે તાંહાંશુધી•તું•પાહાદશા•થાતોનાં*;તેવો•તાહારા•ભાઇઓને•પકડશે•તેવારે•તેહેનાંવોનાંબી•ડોકાં•કાપી•નાંખશે•અને•અંતે•તેવો•તા

હારૂં બી•ડોકું•કાપી•નાંખશે•માટે•હું•તુંને•કહુંચ•કે•તું• તેવોનાં•કહાથી•પાહદશા•થતોનાં*" છોકરો•રડી•પરેઓ•અને•જવાબ•દીધોજે• " પેહેલાં•હું•પોતે•કકડે•કકડા•થાઈ•જશ*"

ઈમ•કેહેછે•જે•પાહદશાનું•દેલ•હેવું•શખત•હતુંજે•પાહદશાને•મારી•નાંખવાનો•હોકમ•થાઓ• તે•દીનથી•તે•તેહેને•મારી•નાંખેઓ•તાંહાંશુધી•તેણે•હમેશાંની•માફક•ઉંઘલીધી• તોજોકે•શુરીનાં લાકડાં•કારીગારો•ઉભાં•કરતા•હતા• તેહેનો•આવાજ•હરઘડી•હેને•કાંને•પડતો•હતો*

તારીખ• ૩૦ મી•જાંનેવારીઈ•પાહદશાનું•ખુંન• લેવાનો•હોકંમ•બજા•લાવેઆ*શુરીનો•માંડવો•હેવી•રીતે•ઉભો•કીધો•હતો•જે વાઈટ•હાલની•ઈક•બારીની•બરોબર•ઉનચો• થાઈ— તેહેનાં•ઉપર•કાલુ•કપડું•ઢાંકેઉં•હતું•અને•તે•ઉપર•ઢીમલુ•તથા•કુહાડી• તથા•મોહો•ઢાંકેલા•બેઈ•જલાદો•હતા*પછે•પાહદશા•પોતાનાં•ઈતબારી દોશત•અને•શેવક•પાદરી•જકશનની•શગાથે•તાંહાં•આવેઓ*

પાહદશા•ડોકું•આપવાને•તઈઆર•થાતો•હતો• તેહેવામાં•ઈશારા•પાદરીઈ•પાહદશાને•કહું• " શાહેબ•ઈકજ•શબૂર બાકી•રહીચ•અને•તે•કશટી•ભરેલી•અને•કઠણ છે• તોબી• તે• (શબૂર•)ઘણીજ ટુંકીછે* ઈ•(શબૂર•)તમને•ઘણીજ•દુર•લઈ•જશે* તે•તમને•પરથવી•ઉપરથી•શવરગામાં•લઈ•જશે•અને•તાંહાં•તમે•ચાહોછો•તે•ઈનામ કીરતીનો•મુગટ•તમને•મલશે•તેથી•તમે• ઘણાંજ•ખુશી•થશો *"પાહદશાઈ•ઉતર•આપેઓજે• " હું• બીગાડેલાં•રાજમાંથી•નહી•બીગાડે• હેવાં•રાજમાં•જાંઉંચ•કે•તાંહા•કશૂં•તોફાંન• થાઈ•નહી *"પાદરી• બોલેઓ•મુલકનું•તાજ•આપીને•તમે•હમેશાંનું•તાજ•બદલી•લેવોચ•ઈ•ઘણીજ•શારી•બદલીછે*" પછે•પાહદશાઈ•પોતાની• ગરદન ઢીમલાં•ઉપર•મેલી•અને•જલાદે•ઈક•ઝટકો•મારીને•તેહેનું•માથું•કાપી•નાંખેઉ•અને•બીજો•જલાદ•તે•માથું• ઉચકીને•બોલેઓ• " આઈ•ચંડાલનું•માથું છે *" લોકો•ઈ•ભુડી•દરશટી• જોઈને•ભારે•શોકથી•શંતાપ•તથા•દુખ•કરવા•લાગાં•અને• તેવો• ચુપકીદા•રહીને• હેવાં ભુંડા•કરંમને• જોઆ•કીધું•તેથી•તેવો•પોતાને•ઠપકો•આપવાલાગા*

૧૬૪૯ નાં•વરશમાં• ૪૯ વરશની•વઈમાં•અને• ૨૪ વરશ•શુ

ધી•રાજ•કીધા•પછે•ચારલશ•પાહાદશાને•શૂરીએ•ચરાવીઓ* " તે•વચલા•કદનો•તથા•જોરાવર•અને•શારાં•અંગનો•હતો* હેનો•ચેહેરો•શારો•ગમતો•હતો•પંણ•ઉદાશ•જેહેવો•હતો•અને•એંણે•ઘણી•મુદતશૂધી•કશટી•તથા•દુખ•ભોગવેઉ•તેથી•એ•દલગીરી•ઉપજી•હશે* "

હું•છું•તમારો•માયાલુ•બાપ*

શવાલો*

શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનો•પાહાદશા•પેહેલો•જેમશ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

તેહેનાં•પછે•કોંણ•પાહાદશા•થઓ*

પેહેલા•ચારલશનો•શભાવ•કેહેવો•હતો*

જેવારે•પેહેલો•જેમશ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•તેવારે•(ઈંગલીશ•) લોકો•શલાહામાં•હતા•અથવા•કોઈ•શંગાથે•લડાઈ•કરતા•હતા*

એ•લડાઈ•ચલાવવા•શારું•પારલેમેનટે•પાહાદશાને•તુરત•પઈશા•આપેઆ•કે•શું*

પાહાદશા•તથા•પારલેમેનટ•વચે•કજીઓ•થઓ•કે•શૂં*

તે•વખત•કીઆ•અમીર•ઉપર•પાહાદશાની•ઘણી•મેહેરબાંનગી•હતી*

શ્રી•બકીંગાહાંમનાં•ડીઉકનું•શૂં•થાએઉં*

તે•વખત•પછે•એ•દેશનાં•લોકોમાં•તુરત•લડાઈઓ•થાઈ•કે•શૂં*

પેહેલ•વેહેલાં•કેઈ•લડાઈમાં•ઓલીવરકરાંમવેલનું•નાંમ•આપરે•શાંભલેઉં*

કેઈ•લડાઈમાં•પાહાદશાની•ફોજ•ઘણી•હારી•ગઈ*

શ્રી•નેશબીની•લડાઈ•થાએઆ•પછે•પાહાદશા•કાંહાં•ગીઓ*

પાહાદશાને•કોંણનાં•આશરાની•આશા•હતી*

શ્રી•ઈશકાટલડની•ફોજે•પાહાદશાને•શૂં•કીધુ*

ઓલીવર•કરાંમવેલ•કોંણ•હતો*

તેહેની•શૂરત•કેહેવી•હતી*

પાહાદશાનું•શૂં•થઉં*

પાહાદશાનો•ઈનશાફ•થઓ•કે•શૂં*

પાહાદશાનાં•છોકરાંવો•હેને•બદીખાંનાંમાં•મલવા•ગઆં•હતાં•કે•શૂ*

કોણ•કોણ•ગીઉં•હતું*

પાહાદશાઈ•પોતાનાં•છોકરા•શ્રી•ગલાશટરનાં•ડીઉકને•શું•કહ્યું*

શું•પાહાદશાને•મારી•નાંખેઆ*

પાહાદશાની•શંગાથે•કીઆ•પાદરી•હાજર•હતા*

પાહાદશાને•કેઈ•જગાઈ•ગારદન•મારેઆ*

તે•શીતરેહે•ચાલેઆ*

પાદરી•જકશાને•તેહેને•શું•કહ્યું*

ચારલશ•પાહાદશાને•મારી•નાંખેઆ•તેવારે•તેહેની•કેટલા•વરશની•
ઉમર•હતી*

તેણે કેટલાં•વરશ•શુધી•રાજ•કીધું*

તેહેને•કીઆં•વરશમાં•ગારદન•મારેઆ*

કીઆ•મહીનાંમાં*

કેઈ•તારીખે*

LETTER XXVI.

MY DEAR BOY,

My last letter ended with the melancholy account of the death of Charles the First. Oliver Cromwell, as we have seen, had a principal hand in that bloody deed, pretending to have a great desire to give liberty to the country, and to deliver it from the power of kings. He soon, however, shewed how little he cared for the liberty of the people; for he soon took upon himself a greater degree of power than any English kings had ever exercised,—though he was cunning enough to avoid the *name* of a king. He was, therefore, called *Protector*. He was, however, a bold and daring fellow, and had great success in his wars. He had a brave admiral, called Blake; and with his help he beat both the Dutch and the Spaniards at sea. It was in Cromwell's time, too, that Admirals Pen and Venables took the island of Jamica in the West Indies, which still belongs to the English, and is considered a place of great importance to us, though the commanders who took it, instead of being thanked for their conquest, were sent prisoners to the Tower, because they did not do all that was expected of them. Cromwell likewise boldly attacked all those who opposed his government, in Ireland, in Scotland, and at home.

But you perhaps wish to know what became of the eldest son of Charles the First all this time, who was, in truth, the real king of England. You may be sure that there were many people who would have been glad to have seen their true king on the throne, instead of submitting to the power of one who had no right whatever to the kingly power, and who had taken it only by main force and violence. Yes, there were many loyal subjects; but these were so terrified at the power of Cromwell and the great army which he commanded, that none of them dared come forward in support of their young king. The Scotch, indeed, made an attempt, and they sent for him from Holland, where he was living for the sake of security. They were but badly prepared, however, to resist the forces of Cromwell ; a battle was fought, and the Scotch army was soon beaten, and many of them killed, whilst very few men were lost in the army of Cromwell.

Young Charles then formed the bold resolution of marching directly into England, with such of the Scottish army as remained, hoping that he should find many friends to join him in England. In this, however, he was disappointed, for every body seemed struck with terror at the power and the success of Cromwell. Charles, however, got as far as Worcester ; but Cromwell had made haste to follow him, with an army of forty thousand men. Here was a terrible battle, and the king's little army was soon completely beaten, and the king himself, though he fought boldly, was at last obliged to escape for his life.

Cromwell tried every means he could think of to get the king into his power;—and it is quite wonderful to think how Charles escaped, when he was pursued in all directions, and spies set to watch him, and great rewards offered to any one who should take him. The young prince, however, found friends, who were firm and true to him, and who contrived to keep him out of the hands of his enemies, sometimes by hiding him, and sometimes by dressing him in shabby clothes, that he might not be known.

On one occasion, he mounted an oak tree, and actually saw the soldiers, who were searching for him, pass under the very tree where he was concealed. At another time, he was concealed in the house of an honest and loyal cottager. Often he slept in a hay-loft. Many times he was in great distress for want of food and sufficient clothing. He performed a long journey on horseback in the dress of a servant, carrying behind him, for the sake of concealment, a lady, Mrs. Lane, the wife of a warm and loyal friend, who himself also kept within sight, that he might assist the king in case of necessity. Thus, after many narrow escapes, they brought the king to the sea-side, near Brighton, where a boat was provided for him;—and, in this way, he got fairly out of the kingdom, and was landed safely in France.

Cromwell, we may be sure, acquired great applause amongst his friends for his boldness and success in battle; he returned from the battle of Worcester, in great triumph, to London, and he and the Parliament now possessed the whole power of the nation. Cromwell was, however, too ambitious to allow the Parliament to have its share of power; and, on the other hand, the Parliament was jealous of him and the army. But the protector soon shewed the Parliament what was his way of settling such affairs. He actually went to the Parliament House himself, taking with him three hundred soldiers, who were to remain on the outside till he stamped with his foot. There he listened awhile to the debate; but he soon told them that he did not like their way of proceeding, and that they need sit no longer. Then he stamped with his foot, and the armed soldiers appeared. Then he used every sort of abusive language to the members of Parliament. "Get you gone," said he, "give place to honester men. You are no longer a Parliament; I tell you, you are no longer a Parliament." He called one of them a "drunkard," another a "glutton," and all the frightful names that he could think of. He pointed to the mace which lay on the table, and said, "Take away that bauble." Then he turned out all the members, and locked the door, and put the key in his pocket, and returned home to Whitehall.

After this new way of dissolving a Parliament, it was necessary that another should be appointed. But Cromwell was resolved to keep the power in his own hands; and, for this purpose, he got together a Parliament of such poor miserable creatures, as could do nothing towards managing the affairs of the State, so that Cromwell, in fact, did every thing according to his own will and pleasure. One of these fine members of Parliament was called Barebone, a foolish leather-seller; and this strange assembly was called, after him, the Barebone's Parliament. We may be sure that nothing could be done by such a set of people as these; so that there was soon an end of this Parliament; and thus, according to his intention, Cromwell had every thing his own way. In his wars, as I have already told you, he had great success: but, when he proved himself to be such a tyrant, and was for carrying every measure according to his own will, and was content with nothing but absolute power, many of his old friends forsook him, and there were many plots and conspiracies set on foot to take away his life. He was tormented in his mind too, with the constant fear of being murdered. He wore steel armour under his clothes, and kept pistols in his pockets, and had a miserably gloomy and suspicious countenance. He always travelled in a great hurry, and never without a number of men to guard him. He seldom came back from any place by the same way that he went, and he was constantly changing his bed-chamber, that nobody might know where he slept; he was miserable when he was in company, for he thought every man was his enemy; and he was so full of fears too, that he hardly knew how to be alone.

His end, however, was approaching. He was seized with a tertian ague, which soon carried him off; and he died in the year 1658, in the 59th year of his age. He had been in possession of the government about ten years. He had appointed his son Richard Cromwell to cucceed him; and Richard was accordingly proclaimed protector. He was not, however, in the least, fitted for such a station, and was soon willing to give it up. The people then began to wish for their rightful king; and, accordingly, Charles was sent for, from Holland, where he was then living, and he entered London on the 29th of May, which was his birth-day. This was in the year 1660. This is called the *Restoration*, and was principally brought about by general Monk, a brave soldier, who had long possessed great power in the army, and who now turned it to a good purpose, by employing it in support of his rightful sovereign. You know that, on the 29th of May, we still celebrate the Restoration, and carry about oak branches, in remembrance of the king's escape in the oak tree. But I must tell you more about king Charles the Second in my next letter.

Ever yours.

QUESTIONS.

After king Charles the First was beheaded, who exercised the kingly power in England?
Was Oliver Cromwell called king?
What was he called?
What sort of man was he?
Was he successful in his wars?
What great admirals were there in Cromwell's time?
What success had admiral Blake at sea?
Who took the island of Jamaica?
Where is Jamaica?
Who was properly the king of England at that time?
Were any attempts made to put the young king in possession of his throne?
How did the Scotch succeed in this attempt?
What great battle was fought in England between the young king and Cromwell?
What became of the young king, Charles the Second, after the battle of Worcester?
Can you relate any of the particulars of his escape to France?
How did Cromwell treat the parliament?

After Cromwell had dissolved the parliament, what sort of a new one did he make?
Had Cromwell then all the power in his own hands ?
Was he then happy ?
How did he show his fears ? and how did he endeavour to guard his person from attack ?
Of what disease did he die ?
In what year ?
Who had the power after him ?
What sort of person was his son, Richard Cromwell ?
Did he keep the government long in his possession ?
Were any steps taken to bring the king over from Holland ?
Who was principally concerned in bringing back the king ?
In what year did Charles the Second return ?
On what day of the month?
In what way do we now call to mind the restoration of Charles the Second on the 29th of May?

પતર· ૨૬

માહારા· પેઆરા· છોકરા·

પેહેલા·ચારલશનાં·મરણની·શંતાપ·ભરેલી·બીના·લખીને·મે માહારૂં·ગઈઉ·પતર·પુરૂં·કીધું·હતું*આપણે·જોઉંતું·કે·ઈ·ખુંન કીધામાં·ઓલીવરકરાંમવેલ·મુખીઅ·હતો·અને·તેણે·ઈ·દેશની·રઈ ઈતને·આપ·અખતીઆરી·કરવા·તથા·તેવોને·પાહાદશાનાં·બલથી·છોડવાનું·બાહાનું·લીધું*પણ·તરતજ·તેણે·હેવું·દેખાડી·દીધું·જે તેહેને·લોકોનાં·છુટા·પણાંનં··કશી·ચીનતા·નહી·હતી· કાંઈજે·શ્રી· ઈંગલંડનાં·પાહાદશાહોઈ·બલ·ચલાઉ·તે·કરતાં· ઈણે·વધારે·અખતીઆર·લીધો·પણ·ઈ·ધણી·હેવો·તો·પકો·હતો·જે·તેણે·પોતે પાહાદશાનો·ખેતાબ·લીધો·નહી*માંટે·તેહેને·પરોટેકટર·(ઈટલેજે· રાજનો·રખેવાલ·)હેવો·ખેતાબ·આપેઓ·હતો*ઈ·ધણી·ઘણોજ· હીમત·વાલો·તથા·બાહાદુર·હતો·અને·લડાઈમાં·ભારે·પુતેહે·પાંમતો·હતો*તેહેની·દરીઆઈ·રાજનો·બલેક·નાંમનો·ઈક· બાહાદુર·શરદાર·હતો· તેહેની·મદદથી·તેણે·ડચ·(ઈટલેજે·શ્રી·હાલંડનાં·રેહેનારા·વીલંનદા·લોકો)તથાશ્રી·ઈશપેનનાં·લોકોને·દરીઆમાં·મારી·હટાડે આ*ઈ·કરાંમવેલનાજ·વખતમાં·પેંન·તથા·વેનેબલશ·નાંમનાં·દરીઆ

ઈ•અમલદારોઈ•પશચમનાં•ઈનડીઆ•નાંમનાં•મુલકમાં•શ્રી•જેમેકાનો•ટાપુછે•તે•લીધો•તે•હજુર•શુધી•ઈંગલીશ•લોકોનાં•હાતમાંછે•અને•હેને•આપરે•ઘણી•અગતની•જગો•કરી•જાંણીઈય•તોપંણ•જે•અમલદારોઈ•તે•ટાપુ•લીધા•તાવોઈ•ફતેહે•કીદી•ઈટલા•શારું•તેવોને•શાબાશી•તથા•માંન•આપેઆને•બદલે•તેવોને•બંદીખાંનાંમાં•કેદ•કીધા•કાંઈજે•તેવોને•જેકાંઈ•કરવા•કહું•હતું•તે•શઘલું•કીધું•નહી*શ્રી•આઈરલંડ•તથા•ઈશકાટલંડ•તથા•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાં•કરાંમવેલની•હુકુમતની•શાંમણે•થાઆ•તેવો•શરવે•શંગાથે•કરાંમવેલ•બાહાદુરીથી•લડેઆ*

પંણ•કદાચ•તમે•જાંણવા•માંગતા•હશો•કે•પેહેલા•ચારલશનો•વડો•છોકરો•કે•જે•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનો•ખરેખરો•પાહાદશા•હતો•તેહેનું•શું•થાઈઉં*તમે•ખચીત•કરી•જાંણજો•કે•હેવા•ઘણાંઈક•લોકો•હતા•કે•જે•પોતાનાં•હકદાર•પાહાદશા•તખત•ઉપર•બેશે•તો•ઘણાં•ખુશી•થાઈ•અને•જે•ધણીનો•પાહાદશાઈ•લેવાનો•હકો•હક•હતો•નહી•પંણ•તે•જોરથી•તથા•જબરદશતીથી•લીધી•હતી•તે•ધણીને•તાબે•રેહે•નહી*હા•હેવી•પાહાદશાને•ચાહાનારી•ઘણીબી•રઈત•હતી•પંણ•તેવો•કરાંમવેલનાં•બલથી•તથા•તેહેની•મોહોટી•ફૌજથી•હેવા•તો•બીહીધા•જે•કોઈબી•પોતાનાં•જવાંન•પાહાદશાને•મદત•કરવા•બાહેર•પડેઉં•નહી*શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડનાં•લોકોઈ•હેવો•તજવીજ•કીધી•ખરી—આને•ઈ•શ્રી•હાલંડમાં•પોતાનાં•બંચવાને•વાશતે•રેહેતો•હતો•તાંહાંથી•તેવોઈ•હેને•બોલાવી•મંગાવેઆ*પંણ•કરાંમવેલની•ફોજ•શંગાથે•લડાઈ•કરવાને•તેવોઈ•કાંઈ•શારી•તઈઆરી•કીધી•નહી•હતી—કિ•લડાઈ•થાઈ•તેહેમાં•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડની•ફૌજ•જલદીથી•હારી•અને•ઘણાંઈક•લોકો•મારેઆ•ગીઆ•પંણ•કરાંમવેલની•ફોજનાં•થોડાઈક•લોકોનું•નુંકશાંન•થઉં*

તેવારે•બાકી•રહેલી•ઈશકાચ•લોકોની•ફોજ•લેઈને•જવાંન•ચારલશે•પાધરો•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડ•જવાનો•વીચાર•કીધો•અને•હેવી•આશા•રાખીજે•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાં•હેનાં•ઘણાંઈક•દોશતો•હેને•આવી•મલશે*પંણ•ઈ•ઉમેદ•બર•આવી•નહી•કાંઈજે•શઘલા•લોકો•'કરાંમવેલ

નાં•બલ•તથાં•તેહેની•ફતેહેથી•બીહીતા•હતા*તોબી•ચારલસ•શ્રી•વુરશટર•સુધી•જઇ•પોંહોચેઓ•પંણ•કરાંમવેલે•ચાલીશ•હજાર•આદમીની•ફોજ•લઇને•તેહેની•પછવાડે•જવા•તાકીદ•કીધી•હતી*હીઆં(એટલેજે•એ•વુરશટરનાં•સેહેર•આગલ)એક•ભએ•ભરેલી•લડાઇ•થાઇ•અને•તુરતજ•પાહાદશાની•નાંઠેલી•ફોજ•બીલકુલ•હારી•અને•પાહાદશા•પોતે•બાહાદુરીથી•લડેઓ•તોપંણ•અંતે•તેહેને•પોતાનો•જાંન•બંચાવીને•નાહાસવું•પડેઉં*

કરાંમવેલનાં•મંનમાં•જેકાંઇ•ધારણાં•આવી•તેથી•પાહાદશાને•પોતાનાં•હાતમાં•લાવવાની•મેહેનત•કીધી—અને•એ•વાત•ઘણીજ•અચરત•શરીખી•છે•કે•શઘલી•તરફથી•લોકો•ચારલશાની•પછવાડે•(હેને•પકડવા•)ગીઆ•અને•હેને•સોધી•કાહાડવા•શારૂં•ભેદુઓ•મોકલેઆ•અને•જે•કોઇ•પાહાદશાને•પકડી•લાવે•તેહેને•મોટું•ઇનાંમ•આપવા•કહું•તોબી•પાહાદશા•નાહાશીગીઓ*તોપંણ•એ•જવાંન•પાહાદશાને•મીતરો•મલેઆ•તેવો•મકમ•તથા•હેનાં•ઇતબારી•હતા•અને•તેવોએ•પાહાદશાને•હેનાં•દુશમનોથી•વેગલો•રાખવાની•વેતરંણ•કીધી—તેવોએ•કોઇ•વેલા•પાહાદશાને•શંનતારેઓ•અને•કોઇ•વખત•તેહેને•હલકો•પોશાક•પેહેરાવેઓ•જે•પાહાદશા•ઓરખાએ•નહી*

એક•વેલાએ•એ•(પાહાદશા•)શાગનાં•ઝાડ•ઉપર•ચહડી•ગીઓ•અને•પોતે•જાંહાં•શંતાઓ•હતો•તેજ•ઝાડની•હેઠલથઇને•તેહેને•સોધનારા•શીપાઇઓ•જતા•હતા•તે•એણે•પોતે•નજરે•જોએઆ*બીજી•વખતે•એ•(પાહાદશા•)એક•ભલા•અને•ઇતબારી•ગાંમરીઆની•ઝુપડીમાં•શનતાઓ*ઘણી•વેલા•ઘાશનાં•બીછાંણાં•ઉપર•(પાહાદશા•)સુતો*ઘણી•વખત•હેને•ખોરાક•અને•પેહેરવાનાં•પુરાં•કપડાં•મલી•નહી•આવેઆં•તેથી•હેને•ઘણું•જ•દુખ•થઉં*એણે•એક•ચાકરનો•વેશ•લઇ•અને•કોઇ•ઓલખે•નહી•એટલા•શારૂં•ઘોડા•ઉપર•મીશતર•લેન•કેજે•પાહાદશાનો•અતલગ•દોશત•હતો•અને•તેહેની•નજર•આગલ•રેહેતો•હતો•એટલા•વાશતે•જે•કાંઇ•અગાત•પડે•તેવારે•મદત•કરે•તે•ધણીની•બાએડીને•પોતાની•પછવાડે•બેશારીને•પાહાદશાએ•એક•લાંમબો•શફર•કીધી*એ•પરમાંણે•ઘણી•વાર•બનચેઆ•પછે•તે

વો•પાહાદશાને•દરીઆને•કીનારે• શ્રી•બરાઈટન•આગલ• લેઈ•આવેઆં•અને•તાંહાં•તેને•વાશતે•એક• હોડી•લાવી•આપી•અને•એપરમાંણે પાહાદશા•(શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•)રાજમાંથી•નીકલી•ગીઆ•અને•શ્રી•ફરાંશમાં•શલાંમતીથી•આવી•ઊતરેઆ*

આપંણને•ખચીત•કરી•જાંણવું•જોઈએ•જે• કરાંમવેલે•લડાઈમાં•બાહાદુરી•બતલાવી•અને•ફતેહ•પાંમેઆ•એટલા• શારૂ•તેનાં•મીતરોએ•તેને•ઘણીજ•શાબાશી•આપી—શ્રી•વુરશટરની•લડાઈ•કીધા•પછે•કરાંમવેલ•જારે•ધુમધાંમથી•શ્રી•લંડનમાં•પાછો•આવેઓ•અને•શઘલી•પરજાની•હુકુમત•એ•ધણીનાં•તથા•પારલેમેનટનાં•હાથમાં•આવી*પંણ•કરાંમવેલ•ઘણોજ•લોભી•હતો•માંટે•પારલેમેનટનાં•હાથમાં•હુકુમત•રેહે•તેવું•ચાહાતો•નહી•હતો•અને•એણીગામ પારલેમેનટ•તેની•તથા•તેની•ફોજની•અદેખાઈ•કરવા•લાગી* પંણ તેવી•બાબતો•ડેડવવાની•શું•રીત•હતી•તે•એ•રપેવાલે•તરતજ•દેખાડી*એ•ધણી•પોતે•તરંણસો•શીપાહી•લઈને•પારલેમેનટનાં•બેશવાનાં•ઘરમાં•ગીઆ•અને•જાંહાં•શુધી•એણે•પોતાનાં•પગ•નહી•આપાડેઆ•તાંહાં•શુધી•તે•શીપાહીઓ•બાહાર•રહા* પારલેમેનટમાં•એણે•થોડુંએક•શુધી•રીગાઓક•શાંભલી•પંણ•તેણે• તુરત•પારલેમેનટને•કહું•જે• તેવોનો•કારભાર•મહને•પશંદ•નથી•માંટે• તમને•હવે•વધારે•વાર•શુધી•હીઆં• બેશવાની•અગત•નથી*પછે•એણે•પોતાનો•પગ•અપાડેઓ•તેવારે•હથીઆરબંદ•શીપાઈઓ• આવેઆ*તેવારે•એણે•પારલેમેનટમાં•બેશનારાઓને•હરેક•તરેહની•ગાલો•દીધી* અને• તેણે• કહું•કે•"તમે•નીકલો•જે•બીજા•શારા• લોકો• તમારે•ઠેકાંણે•આવે*તમે•પારલેમેનટ•વાલાઓ•નહી•હું•કહુંછકે•હવે•તમે પારલેમેનટમાં•બેશોનાં *" તેણે•એકને• "છાટકો• " અને•બીજાને• "ખુસીઓ•" તથા •બીજાં•[illegible]•અંકાર•નાંમો•જે•તેનાં•મનમાં•આવેઆં• તે•કહાં*પાહાદશાઈ•ગોટો•જે•મેજ•ઉપર•પડેલો•હતો•તેહેની•તરફ•આંગલી•ચીંધી•અને•કહું•જે•"એ• રમકડું•લઈજા"*પછે•એણે•શઘલા•અધીકારીઓને•કાહાડી•મેલેઆ•અને• દરવાજાઓને કલ•દીધી•તથા• પોતાનાં•ગજવામાં•કુંચી•મેલીને•વાઈટહાલ•નાંમનાં

પોતાનાં•રેહેવાનાં•ઘરમાં•પાછો•આવેઓ*

હેવી•નવી•રીતે•પારલેમેનટને•રજા•આપી• તેવારે•બીજી•પારલેમેનટ•ઠેડવવી•જરુર•હતી*પણ•કરાંમવેલે• પોતાનાં• હાતમાંજ•હુકુમત•રાખવા•માંગી•અને•એટલા•શારૂં • તેણે•હેવા•ગરીબ•બીચારા•લોકોની•પારલેમેનટ•કીદી•જે•તેવોથી•રાજનાં•કશા•કારભાર•ચલાવવા•શારૂં•કાંઈ•બની•શકે•નહી•માંટે•ખરેખર•જોશો•તો•કરાંમવેલે•પોતાની•ખુશી•તથા•મરજી•માપૂક•હરેક•ચીજ•કીદી*એ•પારલેમેનટનાં•શારા•હદીકારીઓમાં•એક•ધણી•બેરબોન•નાંમનો• મુરખ•જેહેવો•ચમાર•હતો• તેહેનું•નાંમ•એ•શભાને•આપેઉ•ને•હેને•બેરબોનની• પારલેમેનટ•કરી•કેહેતા•હતા*આપણને•ખચીત•કરી•જાંણવું•જોઈએ•જે•હેવા•હેવા•લોકોથી•કાંઈ•થાએ•નહી•માંટે•એ•પારલેમેનટનું•તરતજ•શેવટ•આવેઉં•અને•તેથી•કરાંમવેલની•મતલબ•મુજબ•હેની•પોતાની•મરજી•પરમાંણે•શઘલું•થઉં* મેં•તમને•કહુંચ•કે• લડાઈમાં•એ•ધણી•ફતેહે•પાંમેઓ•પણ•જેવારે•એ•હેવો•જુલંમગાર•નીકલેઓ•અને•હરેક•કાંમ• પોતાની•મરજી•પરમાંણે•કરાવે•અને• બીલકુલ•શઘલી•હુકુમત•ચલાવેઆ•વનાં•રાજી•રહે•નહી• તેવારે• હેનાં•ઘણાંએક•જુનાં•મીતરોએ• હેને• છોડી•દીધો•અને•હેને•મારી•નાંખવાને•વાશતે•ઘણાંએક•મનશુબા•તથા•દંગા•થઆ*હેનાં•મનમાં• હર•ઘડી•હેવી•દેહેશત•હતી•જે•મહને•મારી•નાંખશે*પોતાનાં• કપડાંની•હેઠલ•એ•ધણી•લોહેડાંનું•બખતર•પેહેરતો•હતો તથા•પોતાનાં• ગજવાંમાં•પીશટોલો•રાખતો•હતો•અને•હેનો•ઘણોજ•દલીદરી• તથા•દુખી•ચેહેરો•થાએઓ*તે•હમેશાં•ઘણીજ•ઉતાવલે•મુશાફરી• કરતો•હતો•અને• પોતાની• ચોકી• કરવા• શારું• શીપાઈઓ• લીધા• વીનાં•કદી•બાહાર•નીકલતો•નહી•હતો*તે•જે•રશતે•જતો•હતો• તે•રશતે•થઈને•કદી•પાછો•આવતો•નહી•હતો•અને• તે•પોતાની•સૂવાની•કોઠરી•દર•ઘડી•બદલતો•હતો•જે•કોઈ•જાંણે•નહી•કે•તે•કાંહાં•સૂવેચ — જેવારે•કોઈની•શોબતમાં•હોએ• તેવારે• તે•દુખી•દેખાતો•હતો•શાથીજે• તે•શરવ•કોઈનો• પોતાનો•દુશમન•કરી•જાંણતો• હતો•અને• તે•ઘણોજ•બીહીતો•હતો•અને•એખલો• રેહવાને•ચાહાતો•હતો*

પણ• હેનું• મોહોત• પાશે•આવેઉં• હતું* તે હેને• તાહાડીઓ• ખુજરીનો•તાપ આવેઓ• તેથી• તે•ગુજરેઓ•અને•તે ૧૬૫૮ નાં•વરશમાં•તથા• ૫૯ વરશની•ઉમરમાં•મરણ•પાંમેઓ* ફણિ• આશરે•દશ•વરશ•સુધી•હાકમી•ચલાવી* ફિણે•રીચરડ•ક્રાંમવેલ•નાંમનાં•પોતાનાં• છોકરાને• પોતાની•જગા•આપે•હેનું• ઠેડવેઉં•હતું•માંટે•રીચરડ•રખેવાલ•થાઓ* પણ• તે•ધણી•ફિ• હોદાને• કશી•રીતે•લાઈક• હતો•નહી• અને• પોતાનો• હોદો•જલદીથી•છોડી• દેવા•રાજી•હતો* તેવારે• લોકો• પોતાનાં•હકદાર•પાહાદશાને•માંગવા• લાગા• —માંટે ચારલસ• જે•શ્રી•હાલેંડમાં•રેહેતો•હતો• તે હેને• તાંહાંથી• બોલાવી• મંગાવેઓ•અને•તે•તારીખ• ૨૯ મી• મેઈ•જે• દાહાડે•તે હેની•વરશગાંઠ•હતી• તે•દીવશે•એ•લંનડનમાં• આવેઓ*ઈ• ૧૬૬૦ નાં•વરશમાં• આવેઓ* હેને•પાહાદશાનું•પાદુ•તખત•ઉપર•બેશતું•ઈમ•કેહેછે•અને•મોનક•નાંમનો•ઈક•બાહાદુર•શરદાર•હતો• કે•જેહનો• ઘણું ઈક•[illegible]• ફોજમાં• ભારે•કાબુ•હતો• તે•કાબુથી•ફિણ• પોતાનાં• હકદાર•પાહાદશાને• આશરો•આપેઓ• ને• શારું•કરંમ• કીધું* તમે• જાંણોચકે•તારીખ• ૨૯ મી•મેઈને•દીને•આપરે• પાદશાહનાં•તખત• ઉપર•બેઠાથી•હજુરસુધી•મુબારકબાદી• આપીઈચ•અને•પાદશાહ•શાગાનાં•ઝાડમાં•જઈ• ભરાઈઓ• તે હેની• ઇઆદને•વાશતે•આપરે•શાગનાં•ઝાડની•ડાંખરીઓ• લઈને•ફરીઈચ*પણ•બીજા•ચારલશ•પાદશાહ વીશે•માહરાં•આવતાં•પતરમાં•માહારે•તમને•વધારે•કેહેવું•જોઈશે*

કુદું•તમારો•હમેશાંનો*

શવાલો*

પેહેલા•ચારલશ•પાદશાહને•ગરદન•મારેઓ• તેવારપછે•શ્રી•ઈંગલડમાં•પાદશાહી•હકુમત•કોંણે•ચલાવી*

શું• ઓલીવર•ક્રાંમવેલ•પાદશાહ•કરી•કેહેવાતો•હતો*

તે હેને• શું•કરી• કેહેતા•હતા*

તે• કેહેવો•માંણશ•હતો*

તે•લડાઈમાં•ફતેહ•પાંમતો•હતો•કે• શું

કરાંમવેલનાં•વખતમાં•કીઆ•કીઆ•મોહોટા•દરીઆઈ•અમલદારો•હતા*

બલેક•નાંમનાં•દરીઆઈ•અમલદારે•શમુદરમાં•શૂં•ફતેહ•કીધી*

શ્રી•જેમેકાનો•ટાપુ•કોંણે•લીધો*

તે•જેમેકા•કાંહાં•છે*

તે•વખત•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનો•હકદાર•પાદશાહ•કોંણ•હતો*

જવાંન•પાદશાહને•તેહેનાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેશાડવાને•વાશતે•મંકે•મેહેનત•કીધી•કે•શૂં*

ઈ•કાંમમાં•ઇશકાચ•લોકો•ફતેહ•પાંમેઆ•કે•નહી*

જવાંન•પાદશાહ•તથા•કરાંમવેલ•વચ્ચે•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમો•કેહેવી•મોહોટી•લડાઈ•થઈ*

શ્રી•વુરશટરની•લડાઈ•થાઈઆ•પછે•જવાંન•પાદશાહનું•શૂં•થાઇઉ*

પાદશા•શ્રી•ફરાંશમા•નાહાશી•ગીઆ•તેહેની•કાંઈ•બીનાં•તમે•કહી•શકોય*

કરાંમવેલે•પારલેમેનટને•શૂં•કીધું*

કરાંમવેલે•પારલેમેનટને•છોડા•મુકી•તેવારપછે•તેણે•બીજી•શીતરે હેની•નવી•પારલેમેનટ•ઉભી•કીધી*

શઘલી•હુકુમત•કરાંમવેલનાં•હાથમાં•હતી•કે•શૂં*

તેવારે•તે•શૂખીયાઈઆ•કે•શૂં*

શીતરેહેથી•માલંમ•પડેઉ•જે•કરાંમવેલ•બીહીતો•હતો•અને•તેહેનાં પોતાનાં•આંગ•ઉપર•કોઈ•હોમલો•કરેનહી•એટલાશારૂ•તેણે•શૂં•ચોકશાઈ•રાખવા•માંડી*

તે•કીહા•આજારથી•મરણ•પાંમેઆ*

તે•કીહા•વરશમો•ગુજરેઆ*

તેહેનાં•પછે•હુકુમત•કોંણને•મલી*

તેહેનો•છોકરો•રીચરડ•કરાંમવેલ•કેહેવો•હતો*

તેણે•ઘણાં•દાહાડા•શૂધી•પોતાંનાં•હાથમાં•હુકુમત•રાખી•કેશૂ*

પાદશાહને•શ્રી•હાલંનડથી•બોલાવી•મંગાવાની•કોઈએ•કાંઈ•મેહેનત•કીધી•કે•શૂં*

પાદશાહને•પાછો•બોલાવામો•મુખીઅ•કોણ•હતું*

બીજો·ચારલસ·કીઆ·વરશમાં·પાછો·(શ્રી·ઇંગલંડમાં·)આવેઓ*
કેઇ·તારીખે*
તારીખ· ૨૯ મી·મેઇને·દીને·બીજો· ચારલશ· પાછો·આવેઓ·અને·
તખત·ઉપર·બેઠો·તેહેની·શી·રીતે·આપણે·ઇઆદ·કરીએ*

LETTER XXVII.

MY DEAR BOY,

By the good management of general Monk, Charles the Second was brought back to England, to take possession of the throne. The people had tried a new sort of government, but they found, by experience, that the best thing they could do was to go back to their old constitution again, and to give the crown to the rightful heir, the son of the king who had been so cruelly murdered. The young king accordingly landed at Dover, and he entered London on the 29th of May. This, as I have said, is called the *Restoration.* People of all ranks were pleased to have the kingly government restored again; and the second Charles was received with the greatest joy and delight. After all the troubles that this young prince had undergone, one might have supposed that he would have learned wisdom; but it was quite the contrary: he seemed to think of little else besides indulging his pleasures; and he encouraged all such sorts of people as were of loose and profligate characters like himself. In the time of Cromwell there was a great profession of religion in the country, and you will perhaps think that this was the best thing that they *could* profess. And so it was; but profession, you know, is not practice. I do not mean to say that all the professors of religion, at that day, were hypocrites; for I believe that many of them were indeed sincere men, and true Christians: but many of them had the language of religion in their mouths, whilst their conduct shews us that they had not the right principles of it in their hearts. The good Christians were earnest in their desire to give up those sinful pleasures and vanities which are such hindrances to true religion; and there were many others who were willing to join in this strictness of outward behaviour, who yet shewed no signs at all of the temper and spirit of real Christians. Now the way to cure wrong religion, is to introduce right religion: to be as earnest in the cause of truth, as others are in the cause of error; and to show which *is* the true religion by the effect which it produces in regulating our hearts, in teaching us kindness and gentleness of temper, and in rendering our conduct upright, and pure, and good. But Charles the Second had no notion of this way of proceeding. He seemed to think that the best way was to encourage every kind of gaiety and profligacy, and to let the people be as careless and thoughtless about religion as they pleased. This is a sort of doctrine that people are always willing enough to listen to; and this kind of teaching is sure to get abundance of followers. There is no grace wanted for this kind of work; nature itself is quite sufficient. Accordingly, all the loose and profligate people were delighted with their wew king. Charles, moreover, not only encouraged those who had no appearance of religion, but he harassed and persecuted those who had; and this, of course, made those who were sincere still more persevering; though it forced, indeed, to the king's party, a few who were not worth having. You are not, however, to suppose that the king gave up all forms and all appearance of religion. O no. There were preachers about him, and some very good ones, too, who exhorted the people to obedience and to good works; but what can be expected from this, when that religious principle, that Christian faith, which is to be the foundation of all good works, is ridiculed and despised? And so, notwithstanding the exertions of many good and learned men, I believe there was no time when there was more vice and profligacy in this country, than in the "merry days" of Charles the Second.

But we must go on with our history. When Charles was restored, he seemed but little anxious to reward his friends, or to punish his former enemies. This arose probably from his easy temper, and love of pleasure, rather than from any other feeling. If he could get money for his pleasures, he cared for little else. He had an excellent minister, lord Clarendon; but this good man was in no great favour with the king, as his wish was to advance the prosperity of the country, instead of seeing it injured by the bad example and extravagance of the king. The king married a princess of Portugal, for the sake of her money, that he might be enabled to go on in his expensive profligacy. After this, he got rid of his adviser, the earl of Clarendon, and took into his confidence a set of men better suited to his purpose. These ministers went by the name of the "Cabal," because, I suppose, they were thought to be caballing together against the people;—and the first letters of their names happened to make this word. They were, sir Thomas Clifford, lord Ashley, the duke of Buckingham, lord Arlington, and the duke of Lauderdale.

The people were, at that time, much dissatisfied; and it is likewise said that the Papists were contriving secret plans for murdering the king and regaining their power: there is a terrible story of a Popish plot, but it is told in so strange a manner, that we scarcely know whether to believe it or not, and it is too long for me to write to you about.

I must not, however, forget to tell you, that in this king's reign there was a terrible plague in London. It broke out in the month of October, in the year 1665, and carried off, it is said, more than seventy thousand of the inhabitants.

The next year, on the third of September, another dreadful calamity happened in London. A fire broke out at a baker's shop, near Londonbridge, which lasted three days and three nights, and reduced a great part of the city of London to ashes: it is said that thirteen thousand dwelling-houses were destroyed, besides eighty-nine churches; and that the ruins covered 436 acres of land. These are dreadful calamities, however indifferent we may feel about them at this distance of time. One benefit, however, did arise out of the fire; the new streets were built much wider than before, and thus the city was rendered much more airy and wholesome, and the danger of the plague was thus greatly lessened. I most sincerely believe that every thing in this world is brought about by the direction of an Almighty providence, and I believe that, however mysterious his dealings may sometimes appear to his people, yet in the end they will be all found to be for their good. At the same time I am not fond of attempting to declare the particular design of Providence in any event that happens; for we cannot form any certain judgment on the subject: but, when we are disposed to indulge in such considerations, we cannot help thinking that by the fire and the pestilence the Almighty punished a profligate nation for its sins; but that, in his mercy, he made this visitation productive of good in the end. Since the time of rebuilding the city, London has been no more visited with the plague.

In the year 1685 the king was seized with a sudden fit of apoplexy; he was bled, and appeared better, but he continued only a few days afterwards. He died in the fifty-ninth year of his age, and the twenty-fifth of his reign, reckoning from the time of his restoration. It is said that he was attached to the Roman Catholic religion; for, when some clergymen of the Church of England came to him during his illness, he paid very little attention to them; but he listened to the Catholic priests, and received the rites of the Church from them. Whatever his religion was, it produced but little effect on his conduct, and it could not, therefore, be any thing like true religion.—But I must conclude.

Believe me, my dear boy,
Your affectionate father,

QUESTIONS.

In what year did you say that Charles the Second was restored to the throne of England?

And what general did you say was the chief instrument in restoring him?

Where did the king land?

What is the return of king Charles called?

Were the people glad to have a kingly government again?

Had the king learned wisdom by his misfortunes ?
Then what sort of character was he ?
Were the profligate people pleased with the king ?
Did he encourage religious people ?
Was the reign of Charles the Second a time of wickedness and profligacy ?
Was the king anxious to reward his friends who had supported him in the time of his misfortunes ?
What excellent minister had the king ?
Was lord Clarendon in great favour with the king ?
Whom did the king marry ?
Why did he marry her ?
Did he get rid of his faithful minister, the earl of Clarendon ?
Whom did he then take into his confidence ?
What were the names of those ministers who were called the " Cabal ?
Was there not a supposed conspiracy against the king, called the " Popish plot ?"
Are the accounts of this clear and satisfactory ?
Do you remember in what year the great plague broke out in London ?
How many persons are supposed to have then died of the plague ?
What happened in the next year?
Where did the fire of London break out?
How long did it last ?
How many dwelling-houses are supposed to have been destroyed by the fire ?
How many churches ?
How many acres of land is it said that the ruins covered ?
Was the the city of London improved after the fire ?
Has London been visited by the plague since the time we are speaking of ?
In what year did the king die ?
Of what disease ?
How old was he ?
What religion is it supposed that king Charles was attached to ?
But do you think that he was really attached to *any* religion ?
Why do you think he was not ?

પતર• ૨૭મું

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

મંક• નાંમનાં• શરદારની• શારી• હીકમતથી• બીજો• ચારલશ• શ્રી ઈંગલંડમાં• પાછો• આવેઓ• ને• તખત• ઉપર• બેઠો* લોકોએ• રાજ• ચલાવાની• કિ• નવી• રીત• અજમાવી• જોઈ• પણ• તેવોજ• વહીવાટથી• આ ખંમ• પડેઉજે• હુકમત• ચલાવાની• જુની• રીત• પરમાંણે• ચાલવુ• કિ•

શરવથી•શારુ•અને• જે•પાદશાહને•હેવી•ઘાતકી• રીતે•મારી•નાંખેઓ•તેહેનો•છોકરો•જે•હકદાર•વારશ•થાઈ•તેહેનેજ•તખત•આપવુ* માંટે•જવાંન•પાદશાહ•આવીને•શ્રી•ડોવરમાં•ઊતરેઓ•અને•પછે•તારીખ• ૨૯ મી•મેઈને•દીને•શ્રી•લડંનમાં•દાખલ•થએઓ* મે •તમને કહેલુછેજે•ઈ•પાદશાહ•તખત•ઊપર•બેઠો•તેહેને• રેશટોરેશન• (ઈટલેજે•પાદશાહી•પાછી•થાઈ) ઈમ•કેહેછે* પાદહું•પાદશાહી•રાજ•થાઈઉ• તેથી•શઘલે•વાંઘેનાં•લોકો•ખુશી•થઆ• અને•બીજા•ચારલસને•જોઈ•શરવકોઈ•ઘણાંજ•ખુશી•અને•મઘંન•શાઆ*ઈ•જવાંન•શાહજાદાઈ•ઈટલુબધુ•દુખ•ભોગાવેઉ• તોપછે•કોઈ•ઈમ•જાંણશેજે•ઈણે•અકલ•શીખી•હશે•પણ•તે•બીલકુલ•ઊલટુહતું•પાદશાહ•મોજ•કરેઆ•શીવાઈ•બીજું•કાંઈ•જાણતો•નહી•હતો•અને• જે• લોકો• પોતાંનાં•જેહવા•દુષ્ટા•જાતનાં•અને•લુચા• હતા• તેહેવા•લોકોને• તેણે•આશરો•આપેઓ*કરામવેલનાં•વખતમાં•ઈ•દેશમાં•(લોકો)ધરમ•ઘણોજ પાલતા•હતા• અને•કદાચ• તમે•હેવુ•ધારશોજે• તેવોને•ઈ•શારો•ચીંજ•કીધી•જોઈઈ*અને•હેવુ•હતુ•પણ•ધરંમ•જાહેર• કીધાથી• તે•ચાલાકી• હેવુ•થાઈ•નહી•તે•તો•તમે•જાણો•છો*હું•હેવુ•કેહેતો•નથી•જે તે•વખતનાં•ધરંમ•ચલાવનારા• લોકો•ઠગારા•હતા•કાંઈજે•હુ• ધારુચકે• તેહેમાંનાં•ઘણાંઈક• લોકો•ઈતેકાદવાલા•આદમીઓ•હતા•અને•ખરા•કરીશટીઆંન• લોકો•હતા•પણ•તેહેમાંનાં•ઘણાંઈક• લોકોનાં• મોહોડાંમા•ધરમના•શબદો•હતા•પણ• તેવોની•ચાલથી•આપણને•માલમ પડેચ•જે• તેવોનાં•મંનમાં•ખરો•ધરમ•હતો•નહી •ભલા• કરીશટીઆંન• લોકો•હેવુ•ચાહતા•હતા•કે•જે•મોજ•અને•દેકટની•લીજતથી•ખરા•ધરમને•અડચણ•થાઈચ• તે•છોડી•દેવી•અને•વલી•બીજા•વણાંઈક•લોકો•હતા•કે• જેવો•બાહારનાં•દેખાવમાં•મજબુત•હતા•તોપણ •ખરા•કરીશટીઆંન•લોકોનાં•જેહવો•શવભાવ•તથા•તેવોની•કોશેશ•દેખાડીનહી*હવે•ખોટા•ધરમને•શારો•કરવાનો•મારગ•ઈછેકે•ખરો•ધરમ•જાહેર•કરવો•અને•બીજાવો•જે•રીતે•ભુલ• કરવાને•ચાહેચ• તેમ•આપરે•ખરાંનેવાશતે•મેહેનત•લેવી•અને•કીઆ•ધરમ•ખરોછે•તે•દેખાડવું•અને• તે•ખરા•ધરમથી•આપણુ• ધેઆંન•બરોબર•રેહેચ•

તથા•આપણે•માઆલ•અને•ધીરો•શલાવ•થાઈ•તથા•આપણી•આલ•રાશત•અને•ચોખી•તથા•શારીથાઈ* પણ•બીજા•ચારલશના•મનમાં•કેવી•રીતે•ચાલવાનો•વીચાર•હતો•નહી* તે•ધણી•કેવું ધારતો•હતો•જે•હરેક•તરેહની•ખુશબખતી•તથા•લુછાઈને•આશરો•આપવો•તથા•લોકોને•ગમે•તેમ•ધરમને•પરતો•મેલવા•તથા•ગાફેલ•થવા•દેવા•ઈ•શરજેથી•શારું*કેવી•શીખાંમણ• લોકો•હમેશાં•ખુશી•થઈને•શાંભલેચ•અને•કેવીરીતે•શીખયેઆથી•ઘણાક•લોકો•ચેલાથાઈ* કેવી•તરેહનાં•કાંમને•વાશતે•કોઈની•મેહેરબાંનગી•જોઈતી•નહી•પોતાની•જાત•બશ•છે* માંટે•પેલા•છુટે•હાથના•તથા•લુછા•લોકો•પોતાનાં•નવા•પાહાદશાથી•ખુશી•થાઆ* જેલોકો•ધરમ•પાલતા•નહી•હતા•તેવોને•પાહાદશાઈ•આશરો•આપેઓ•ઈટલુંજ•નહી•પણ•જે લોકો•ધરમ•રાખતા•હતા•તેવોનાં•ઉપર•તેણે•જુલમ•તથા•વીપત•કીધી•માંટે•તેથી•જે•લોકો•ચુશત•અને•જડા•હતા•તેવો•વધારે કોશેશ•કરવાલાગા•તોઈપણ•થોડાક•નકાંમા•લોકો•પાહાદશાની•તરફ•થાઈગીઆ* પણ•તમને•કેવું•ધારવું•જોઈઈ•નહી•કે• પાહાદશાઈ•ધરમની•શઘલી•કીરીઆ•તથા•દેખાવ•છોડીદીદો* નહી•નહી* કેની પાશે•વાહેજી•કરનારાવો•હતા•તેહેમાં•થોડાક•ઘણાંજ•શારા•શખશો•હતા•તેવો•લોકોને•શીખાંમણ•દેતા•હતા•જે•તેવોને•તાબેદારરેહેવું•તથા•શારાં•કાંમ•કરવાં•પણ•ઈથી•શ્રૂ•થાઈ•જેવારે•ધરમનું•મુલ જે•ક્રીશટીઆંન-ધરમછે•કે•જે•શઘલાં•શુભ•કાંમોનો•પાઓ•છે•તેહેને•લોકો•ધીકારે•તથા•હશી•કરે* અને•ઘણાંઈક•શારાં•તથા•હોશીઆર•માંણશોઈ•મેહેનત•કીધી•તોપણ•હું•ધારુંચકે•આઈ•દેશમાં•બીજા•ચારલશનાં•"ખુશબખતી•ભરેલા•વખત•" માં•જેહેવી•બદી•અને•લુછાઈ•ચાલી•તેહેવી•બીજા•કોઈ•વખતમાં•ચાલી•નહી•હતી*

પણ•આપણને•આપરી•વારતા•ચલાવવી•જોઈઈ* જેવારે•ચારલશ•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો•તેવારે•તેણે• પોતાનાં•દોશતોને•ઈનાંમ•આપવા•અથવા•પોતાનાં•આગલા•દુશમનોને•શજા•આપવાને•કશી•ચીનતા•કીધી•નહી* ઈ•કદાચીત•જેનાં•ધીરા•શલાવથી•તથા•મોજ•વીનાઈ•બીજું•કાંઈ•ચાહાતો•નહી•હતો•તેથી•કેવું•થઉં•હશે* આગર•

જો•પાહાદશાને•મોજ•કરવા•શારું•પઇશા•મલે તો•પછે•તેહેને•બીજા•કશાની•ચીનતા•નહી* પાહાદશાનો•એક•ઘણીજ•શારો•લારડ•કલેરેનડન•નાંમનો•પરધાંન•હતો•પણ•એ•શારાં•માંણશની•ઉપર•પાદશાહની•ઘણીજ•મેહેરબાંનગી•હતી•નહી•શાથીજે•તે•મુલકની•આબાદી•લધારવા•માંગતો•હતો•અને•ચાહાતો•નહી•હતો•જે•ખરાબીથી•તથા•પાહાદશાનાં•બેહદ•ખરચથી•એ•વતન•બીગડી•જાએ* આ•પાહાદશા•શ્રી•પોરદુગાલની•શાહાજાદી•† શંગાથે•પરણેઓ•તે•એટલા•શારૂં જે તેહેનાં•પઇશા•આપે•તેથી•પોતાનો•ઉડાઉ•ખરચ•ચલાવેઓ•જાએ* પછે•તેણે•પોતાંના•મશલતીઆથી•કલેરેનડનનાં•અરલને•છોડી•દીધો•અને •પોતાની•મતલબને•લાએકનાં•આદમીઓનાં•કહા•પરમાંણે•ચાલેઓ* એ•પરધાંનોને•કેબાલનું•નાંમ•આપેલું•હતું•તે•એટલાશારૂં જે•તેવો•એક•શપ•થાઇને•લોકોઉપર•દંગો•ફીશાદ•કરતા•હતા•એમ•માહારા•ધારેઆગો•આવેચ•અને•તેવોનાં•નાંમનાં•પેહેલા•અખેરો•શાથે•જોડેઆથી•એનાંમ•થાએઉ* તેઓનાં•નાંમ•શર•ટાંમશ•કલીફરડ•તથા•લારડ•આશલી•તથા•શ્રી•બકીંગહાંમનો•ડીઉક•તથા•લારડ•આરલીંગટન•તથા•લાડર•ડેલનો•ડીઉક•એ•પરમાંણે•હતાં•

તેવખત•રઇએત•ઘણી•નારાજ•હતી•અને•વલી•એમ•કેહે છેજે•પેપીશટ•લોકો•પાહાદશાને•મારીનાંખીને•પોતાની•હકુમત•પાછી•લેવાનાં•છુપા•મનસૂબા•કરતા•હતા—પોપનાં•મલતીઆએ•એક•મનસૂબો•કીધો•તેવીગેની•એક•બીહીક•લાગે•હેવી•વાત ઉ•પંણ•તે•એક•અચરત•શરખી•રીતે•કેહે છે•માંટે•આપણને•માલંમ•પડતુ•નથી•જે•તે•વાત•આપણને•માંનવી•જોઇએ•અથવા•નહી•અને•વલી•તેધણીજ•લમબાંણ છે•માંટે•માહરેથી•તમને•લખાએ•નહી*

પંણ•માહારે•તમને•કેહેવાનુ•વીશરવું•જોઇએ•નહી•જે•એ•પાદશાનાં•વખતમાં•શ્રી•લડનમાં•એક•ભારે•મોહોટી•મરકી•ચાલી* એ•મર

---

† એ•શાહાજાદીની•રીતમાં•અંપણી•થી•મુમબઇનો•ટાપુ•જે•આગાઉ•પોરદુગીશ•લોકોનો•હતો•તે•ઇંગલીશ•લોકોનાં•અખતીઆરમાં•તેદીનથી•આવેઓ•તે•હજુરસુધી છે* —તરજુમો•કરનાર*

ક્રી• ૧૬૬૫ નાં•વરશમાં•આકટોબર•મહીનાંમાં•શરૂથાઇ•અને•કેહે છેજે• તેથી•શીતેર •હજાર•આદમીઓ•મરણ•પાંમેઆં*

હેને•બીજે•વરસે•તારીખ• ૩ જી•શપટેમબરે•શ્રી•લંડન માં•કિ બીજી•વારે•આફત• આવી•પડી*શ્રી•લંડનનાં• પુલ• આગલ•કિ•રોટલી•બનાવનારાની•દુકાંનમાંથી•કિ•આગ•લાગી•તે• આગ•તરંણ•દહાડા•અને•તરંણ•રાત•શુધી•રહી •અને• તેથી• શ્રી•લંડન•શેહેરનો ઘણોકિ•ભાગ•બલીને•ખાક•થાઇ•ગીઓ•— કેહે છેજે• ૧૩૦૦૦ રેહવાનાં•ઘેર•અને• તે•શીવાઈ• નેવીઆશી•દેવલો•બલી• ગીઆં•અને•ઈથી• ૪૩૬•ઈકર † ભોંઈ•શંધળી•વેરાંન •અને•પાઈમાલ •થાઇ•ગઇ•ઈ •આફત•થાઈઆને•ઘણી•મુદત•થાઇ•માંદે•હવડાં•ઈ•વીશે•આપરે•ગમે• તેવુ•ધારીઈ• તોપણ•ઈ•ભારી• મોહોટી•બલા• હતી* ઈ•આગ•લાગે આથી•કિ•નફો•થાઈઆ•તે•કે•આગાઉનાં•કરતાં•નવા•રશતા•ઘણાં• પોહોરા• બાંધેઆ•તેથી• શેહેર•ઘણુંજ•હવાદાર•અને•શુખાકારી• ભરેલું•થાઈઉં•અને•મરકીની•બીહીક• ઘણીજ• ઓછી•થાઇ* હું•ઈમીન•કરી•જાંણુંચકે•આઈ• દુનીઆંમાં• હરેક•ચીજ•ખોદાઈનાં•હોકમથી થાઈચ અને•હું•હેવું•જાંણુંચકે•ઇશવરનાં•કાંમ•પરજાને• ગમે તે હેવાં• ગુપત•નજર•આવે• તોપણ• તે•શઘલાં• કાંમ• આપરા•કલેઆંણને•વાશતે છે• હેવું• સેવટે•માલમ•પડશે* પણ•હરેક•બનાવ•થાઈચ• તે•કરવાની•ખોદાઈની•શીમકશદ છે• તે•હું•કાંઇ• કહી•શકતો•નથી•કાંઈજે•ઈ• બાબતમા•આપણી•ધારણા• પોહોચી• શકતી•નથી•પણ• જેવારે•આપરે• હેવા•વીચાર•કરીઈચ•તેવારે•આપરે• હેવું• ધારીઈચજે•ખોદાઈ•ભલાઈ•આગ•અને•મરકી• મોકલેઆથી•ઈ•લુચા• લોકોઈ•ગુનાહ•કીધો તેહેની•શજા•આપી•પણ•માઈઆ•ખાઇને•આખર•લોકોનું•ભલું•કીધું* શ્રી• લંડનને• પાછું• ફરીથી• બાંધેઆ•પછે•ઈ•શેહેરમાં•મરકીનો• રોગ• કદી• થાઈઆ•નથી*

૧૬૮૫ નાં•વરશમાં•પાહાદશાને•ઈકાઈક•ફેફરાંનો• આજાર•થાઈઓ• તેવારે•પાહાદશાની•શંઘરા•લીધી•અને• તેથી• તેહેને•ફેર•પડેઓ•

† ઈકર•ઈ• ભોંઈનુ•અંગરેજી•માપ છે• — હેમાં• ૪૮૪૦ ચોરશ ઈઆરડ•(ઈટલેજે•વાર•)હોઈચ*

પણ•પછે•થોડાજ•દીવશ•જીવેઓ* ઈ•પાદશાહ• ઓગણ•શાહા ૪• વરશની•ઉમરમાં•અને•ઈ•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો•તે•દીનથી ગણીઈતો• પચીશ•વરશ• શુધી•રાજ•કીધા•પછે•મરણ• પાંગેઓ* ઈમ•કેહેછે જે•ઈ•પાદશાહને•રોમનકેથોલીકનો•ધરમ•પશંદ•હતો•કાંઈકે•જેવારે• શ્રી•ઇગ્લાંડનાં•દેવલનાં•પ્રેટશ્ટાઈક•પાદરીઓ•પાદશાહ•આજારી•હતો તે•વખત•તેહની•પાશે•આવેઆ• તે•વખત•પાદશાહે• તેવોને•ઘણુંજ• થોડુ•માંન•આપેઉ•અને•કેથોલીકનાં•પાદરીઓઈ•કહેઉં• તે•શાંભલેઉ અને•ધરમની•કીરીઆ•તેવો•પાશે•કરાવી* હવે•પાદશાહનો•ગમે• તેહેવો•ધરમ•હોઈ•પણ•તેથી•હેની•ચાકરને•કરવી•તેહેની•આશર•પોચી•નહી•માંટે•ઈકાંઇ•ખરો•ધરમ•કેહેવાઈ•નહી*પણ•માહરે•(આઈ•પતર) શમપુરણ•કીધુ•જોઇઈ*

હું છુ•માહરા• પેઆરા•છોકરા•
તમારો•માઈઆલુ•બાપ*

શવાલો*

બીજો ચારલશ શ્રી•ઇગ્લંડનાં•તખતઉપર•કીઆ•વરશમાં• પાછોબેઠો*
અને•કીઆ•શરદારે•તેહેને•તખત•ઉપર• બેશાડેઓ*
પાદશા•કાંહાં આવી•ઉતરેઓ*
ચારલશ• પાદશાહ• પાછો•આવેઓ• તેહેને•શું•કેહેવ*
પાદશાહ•હુકમત•પાછી•શાઇ•તેથી•રઇઈત•ખુશી•થાઈકે•શું*
કંમબખતીથી•પાદશાહ•ગુશ્શે•શીખેઓ•કે•નહી*
તેવારે•પાદશાહ•શીરવેશનો•હતો*
લુછા•અને•બેહેમા•લોકોને•પાદશાહ•ગમતો•હતો•કે•શું*
પાદશાહઈ•ધરંમ•પાલનારા•લોકોને•આશરો•આવેઓ•કે•નહી*
શું•બીજા•ચારલશનું•રાજ•પાપી•અને•લુછાઈ•ભરેલો•વખત•હતો*
પાદશાહને•દુખ•અને•વપતની•વખત•જે•દોશદારોઈ•હેને•મદત•કીધી
તેવોને•પાદશાહ•ઇનાંમ•આપવા માંગતો•હતો•કે•નહી*
પાદશાહનો•કીઓ•શારો•પરધાંન•હતો*
લારડ•કલેરેનડનની•ઉપર• પાદશાહની• ઘણી• મેહેરબાંનગી•હતીકે•શું*

પાહાદશા•કોંણની•શાથે•પરણિઆ*

પાહાદશા•શાંનેલાશતે• તેહેની•શાથે•પરણેઆ*

શ્રી•કલેરેનડનનો•અરલ•હેવે•નાંમનો•પાહાદશાનો• ઈતબારી•પરધાંન•હતો•તેહેને•પાદશાહે•છોડી દીધો•કે•શું*

પછે•પાહાદશાઈ•કોંણની•શહા•માંગી*

જે•પરધાંનોને•“કેબાલ”•કરીને•કેહેતા•હતા•તેવોનાંનાંમ•શું•હતાં*

પાહાદશાની•ઉપર•ફિ•દંગો•થાઆતો•કેશું•જેહેને•પોપની•તરફનો ખંડ•કરી•કેહતા•હતા*

એ•વીગેની•બીનાં•ચોકશ•અને•શાફ છેકે•નહી*

તમને•ઇઆદ છે•કે•શ્રી•લંડંનમાં•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મોહોટી•મરકીનો•આજાર•ચાલેઓ*

એ•મરકીનાં•આજારથી•શુમારે•કેટલાં•લોકો•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ*

હેનાં•પછે•બીજે•વરશે•શું•થઉં*

તે•શ્રી•લંડંનની•આગ•કાંહાં•લાગી*

તે•કેટલા•દાહાડા•શુધી•રહી*

તે•આગથી•આશરે•કેટલાં•ઘેર•બળી•ગીઆં*

કેટલાં•દેવળો•બળી•ગીઆં*

આશરે•કેટલીકિ•જગોનો•નાશ•થાઆ*

તે•આગ•લાગેઆ•પછે•શ્રી•લંડંનનું•સેહેર•શુધરેઉં•કે•શું*

આપરે•જે•વખતની•બીનાં•લખીઇ•તે•વખત•પછે•શ્રી•લંડંનમાં•મરકી•ચાલી•કે•નહી*

પાહાદશા•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ*

તેહેને•શું•આજાર•થઆ•હતો•જે•તેથી•ગુજરેઆ*

તેહેની•કેટલા•વરશની•ઉમર•હતી*

જોઈઆ•એલે•ચારલશ•પાહાદશાને•કીઓ•ધરંમ•પશંદ•હતો*

પંણ•તમે•ધારોચ•કે•તે•કોઈ•ધરંમ•ઉપર•ખરેખર•ચુશત•હતો*

તમે•કેમ•જાંણોચ•કે•તે•ધરંમ•ઉપર•ચુશત•હતો•નહી*

LETTER XXVIII.

MY DEAR BOY,

After the death of Charles the Second, his brother, the duke of York, became king. His name was James, and he was the second king of that name. We have already seen what pains the good bishops and other Christian men had taken to get rid of the Roman Catholic religion, and how they had suffered, in this cause, during the reign of queen Mary. Since that time, the Protestant religion was professed and established in this kingdom; but James the Second was not attached to the reformed religion; he was a Papist at heart; and it is moreover said, that he sent over to the Pope of Rome, and begged to put himself and his kingdom under his authority in all matters of religion. This, you may be sure, caused great discontent; and a rebellion broke out, which was headed by a young man called the duke of Monmouth, who pretended to be the lawful son of the late king. People were so dissatisfied with James, that they willingly listened to this youth, and would have been very glad to have had him for their king, especially as he was a very fine, graceful, pleasing young man. He came over from Holland, and landed in Dorsetshire, with a small army, expecting to be joined by numbers of the discontented English. Many, indeed, did join him, but not enough to enable him to overcome the army which the king sent out against him. There was, however, a bloody battle fought at Sedgemore*; and, at one time, the young duke appeared to have a good prospect of success; but, in the end, the king was victorious—the rebels fled: about three hundred of them were killed in battle, and about a thousand in the pursuit, and thus an end was put to this rash expedition. The duke of Monmouth had no right whatever to the throne, and it was, therefore, a wicked act of rebellion in him to attempt to disturb the king or the country: but still his sad fate must excite our compassion. After the battle, he fled for his life. He rode for twenty miles, expecting every moment to be overtaken and seized. At length, his horse, exhausted with fatigue, could go no further. He was obliged then to alight and to proceed on foot; then, to avoid being seized, he exchanged clothes with a shepherd. He was soon completely worn out with hunger and weariness, and was obliged to stop. He lay down in a rough field, and covered himself with fern. The poor shepherd was soon found in the duke's clothes; and this discovery encouraged the pursuers to search more diligently for the duke himself. They pursued him with blood-hounds, and they found him in his dirty clothes, and in a most miserable situation, with raw peas in his pocket, which he had gathered in the fields, having no other food to keep him alive. He was then seized, and carried before the king; he earnestly begged for pardon; but it was denied him—he was tried and condemned, and beheaded. When he was on the scaffold, he begged of the executioner to strike boldly, that he might not have to strike a second blow, as he had done in the case of Lord Russel. But this instead of giving courage to the man, put him into such a trepidation that he could scarcely strike at all. After the first feeble blow, the duke raised his head from the block as if to chide him, then he gently laid it down again: and the executioner struck him several times without any effect, and at length threw down his axe, and gave up the attempt. The sheriff, however, obliged him to perform his office; and then, after two more blows, the head was taken off.

---

* Near Bridgewater, in Somersetshire.

There was another rebellion going on at the same time in Scotland, under the duke of Argyle, which was intended to assist the design of the duke of Monmouth; but this was put down by the king's troops, and the duke himself was wounded and taken prisoner; he was found standing up to his neck in a pond of water. He was carried to Edinburgh*; and, after enduring great sufferings with a brave spirit, he was publicly, executed.

---

* The capital of Scotland.

The commanders of the king's armies treated the prisoners which they took in battle with dreadful severity; and judge Jefferies, a monster of cruelty, shewed every kind of savage barbarity in his treatment of those who were tried by him as rebels.

In religious matters, too, there was as much cause for discontent. The king encouraged Popery; and, if any clergyman attempted to preach against it, he was prevented from preaching at all, or of performing any of the religious duties of his parish.

A measure, apparently the very contrary to this, was next adopted. A declaration of indulgence to every sect and sort of religion was put forth, and liberty of conscience was to be proclaimed to all. This had the appearance of liberality; but the intention of the king is supposed to have been to give an opportunity to the Catholics of again getting into power; and indeed he, at that time, shewed them many very particular acts of favour. By-and-by, it was ordered that this declaration of liberty of conscience should be read in all the churches of the kingdom. The clergy saw that this measure would be dangerous to the Protestant cause, and the greater part of them, therefore, refused to read the declaration. Seven bishops sent an address to the king, saying that they could not read the declaration, without acting quite against their own consciences, and betraying the Protestant religion. The king was violently angry with them, and they were sent to the Tower. This made a great noise at the time, and the seven bishops received the congratulations and applauses of all the good Protestant subjects in the kingdom. They were afterwards tried for sedition at Westminster-hall; but the jury, after sitting up all night, returned into the court, and said, *Not Guilty.* There was a shout of delight through the whole hall, which was caught by the people on the outside, and presently spread through all London. It is said that the king heard it at Hounslow-heath, where he was encamped. When his majesty asked the cause of those rejoicings, he was told that it was "nothing but the soldiers shouting because the bishops were acquitted." "Do you call that nothing?" said the king; "but so much the worse for them."

When every thing seemed to be going on as ill as possible, the people began to think that the only way to preserve the Protestant religion, was to encourage William, prince of Orange, to endeavour to get possession of the kingdom, and thus to prevent all the evils which seemed to threaten it.

This prince had married the king's daughter, and, therefore, the thoughts of the people were naturally directed towards him; but they chiefly wished for him, because he was a Protestant.

He came over from Holland with a large army, and landed in Devonshire, on the 5th of November. He waited many days before he was joined by a sufficient force to give him much confidence in his attempt. At length vast numbers of the leading people of the country joined him, so that he seemed to carry every thing his own way. Poor king James was deserted by almost all his friends; and even his daughter Ann, with her husband the prince of Denmark, went over to the party of William. When the king heard this, he fell into the deepest grief, and said that even "his own children had forsaken him."

He was now advised to leave the kingdom. He sent away the queen and his little son, and they arrived safely in France; but the poor king was seized and brought back a prisoner. Soon after this, however, he contrived to make his escape from Rochester, where he was confined, and he then went to France.

As the king had thus abdicated (or given up) the throne, it was agreed that the prince and princess of Orange should reign in his stead, under the title of king William and queen Mary. This change, which is called the *Revolution*, took place in the year 1688.

QUESTIONS.

In what year did Charles the Second die?

Who became king after him?

What relation was James the Second to Charles the Second?

Was James the Second a favourer of the Protestant religion, or of the Roman Catholic?

Was any rebellion raised against the king?

Who headed this rebellion?

Did the duke of Monmouth raise an army in opposition to the king?

Was any battle fought?

Where?

Which side conquered?

Had the duke of Monmouth any right to the throne?

What became of the duke of Monmouth, after the battle of Sedgemore?

Was the duke executed?

Was any rebellion going on, at the same time, in Scotland?

Who headed that rebellion?

What became of the duke of Argyle?

How were the prisoners, taken at Sedgemore and other places, treated by the commanders of the armies?

What judge tried the rebels, and how did he treat them, and what was his character?

Did the king try to encourage Popery?

How did he treat the clergy who felt it their duty to show what they considered wrong in the Roman Catholic religion?

Did the king, soon after this, put forth a declaration of indulgence to every sect of religion?

Is it not supposed that he did this for the sake of opening a way for bringing back the Roman Catholics into power?

Was this declaration ordered to be read in all the churches of the kingdom?

Did any of the bishops resist this order?

How many?

What became of them?

Were they acquitted, or not?

Did the people rejoice greatly at their acquittal?

Where was the king?—Did he hear the sound of their rejoicing?—And what did he say?

Did the people turn their thoughts to any other person to be king, for the sake of preserving the Protestant religion?

Who was this?

How was William, prince of Orange, connected with the royal family of England?

Did this prince come over to England?
Where did he land?
In what year? and on what day of the month?
Was he joined by the people generally?
How did king James receive the tidings of the landing of the prince of Orange, and the desertion of his own children?
What became of king James?
Was the prince of Orange then chosen king?
Under what title?
What was the name of his queen?
What is this change of affairs generally called?

પતર·૨૮

મ્હારા·પેઆરા·છોકરા·

બીજા·ચારલશનાં·મુવા·પછે· તેહેનો·ભાઈ·શ્રી· ઈઆરકનો·ડીઉક·હતો·તે·પાદ્શાહ·થાઓ* જેહેનું·નાંમ·જેમસ હતું·અને·ઈ·જેમશ·નાંમનો·બીજો·પાદશાહ·હતો* મેરી·રાંણીનાં·વખતમાં·શારા·શારા·પાદરી·લોકો·તથા·બીજા ક્રીશટીઆંન·લોકોએ·રોમંનકેથોલીકનો·ધરંમ·દુર·કરવા·શારૂં·કેટલી·બધી·મેહેનત·લીધી·હતી·અને·તેટલા·શારૂં·તેવો·મારેઆ·ગીઆ·તે·આપરે·જોઈઉં·ચ·તે·વખત·પછે·આ·રાજમાં·પરોટેશટેનટનો·ધરંમ·થઆ· અને·લોકોએ·પાતેઓ·પંણ બીજા·જેમશને·[illegible]·ધરંમ·પશંદ·હતો·નહી·કાંઈજે·તે·પોતાનાં·મંનમાં·પેપીશટ·(ઇઆને·કેથોલીક·)નો·ધરંમ પાલતો·હતો — અને·વલી·કેવું·કેહે છેજે·તેણે·શઃ·રૂમનાં·પોપને·બોલાવી·મંગાવેઓ·અને·ધરંમ·બાબેનાં·શઘલાં·કાંમમાં·પોતે·તથા·પોતાનું રાજ·પોપનાં·તાબામાં·રાખવા·માટેઉં* તેથી·તમે·ખચીત·કરીને·જાંણજો·જે·ઘણાં·લોકો·નારાજ·થાઈઆં·અને·ફિ·દંગો·થઆ· તેહેમાં·શ્રી·માંનમથનો·ડીઉક· કેહેવે·નાંમનો·ઈક·જવાંન·પ્રાંણી·વડો·હતો·તેણે·પોતાને·મરનાર·પાદશાહનો·હકદાર·છોકરો·કરી·કહ્યો* લોકો·જેમશ·પાદશાહથી·કેવા·તો·નારાજી·થાઈલા·હતાજે· તેવોએ· પોતાની·ખુશીથી·ઈ·જવાંન· પ્રાંણીની·વાત· શાંભલી·અને· ઈ·ઘણોજ· શારો·તથા·ખુબસુરત·તથા·હશમુખો·જવાંન·પ્રાંણી·હતો·માંટે·ઈ·તેવો

ને•પાહદશા•થાતે તો•તેવો•ઘણાંજ•ખુશી•થાતે*ઈ•શ્રી•હાલેંડથી•ઈક•નાંધુલી•ફૌજ•લેઈને•આવેઓ•ને•શ્રી• ડારશેટશાઈઅરમાં•ઉતરેઓ•અને•હેવી•આશા•રાખતો•હતો•ઘણાંઈક•નારાજી•થાઈલા•ઈંગલીશ•લોકો•હેને• આવી•મલશે* ઘણાંઈક• લોકો•હેને•આવી•મલેઆ•પંણ• તેવો•ઈટલા•બધા•નહી•હતા• કે•પાહદશાઈ•જે• ફૌજ• હેની•શંગાથે•લડવા•શારૂં•મોકલી•તે હેને•જીહતી•લીઈ*શ્રી•શેડજીમોર• † આગલ•ઈક•લારે•મોહોટી•લડાઈ•થાઈ•અને•ઈક• વખત•ઈ•જવાંન•રાજાને•ફતેહ•પાંમવાની•શારી•આશા•થાઈ• પંણ•છેલે•શરવાલે•પાહદશા•ફતેહ•પાંમેઓ—અને•દંગો•કરનારાઓ•નાહાશી•ગીઆ•અને•આશરે•તરંણશો• આદમી•લડાઈમાં•મારેઆંગીઆં•તથા• તેવોની•પછવાડે•ફૌજ•ગેઈ• તે•વેલા•આશરે•ઈક•હજાર• આદમીઓ•મારેઆં•ગીઆં•અને•ઈ•પરમાંણે•ઈ•બેફુદી•લડાઈનું• શેવટઆવેઉં*ઈ•શ્રી•માંનમથનાંડીઉકનો•તખત• ઉપર• બેશવાનો•કશો•હક•હતો•નહી•માંટે•ઈણે•પાહદશાને•અથવા•મુલકને• દુખ•દીધું• તે• દંગાનું•કાંમ•હતું•પંણ•હેનાં•માઠાં•મરંણને•લીધે•આપણને•હેની•દઆ• ખાવી• જોઈએ*લડાઈ•થાઆ•પછે• તે• પોતાનો•જીવ• લેઈને•નાહાઠો* વીશ•માઈલ•શુધી•ઘોડા•ઉપર•ગીઓ•અને•હરઘડી•હેવી•વાટ•જોતો•હતો•જે•લોકો•આવી• પોંહોચીને•મહને•પકડી•લેશે* અંતે•તેહેનો•ઘોડો•થાકી•ગીઓ•માંટે• તેહેનાંથી•વધારે•આગલ•જવાઈઉ•નહી*તેવારે•તેહેને•ઘોડા•ઉપરથી•ઉતરીને•પગે•ચાલતું•જવું•પડેઉં• અને•કોઈ•પકડી•લીઈ•નહી•ઈટલા•શારૂં• તેણે• પોતાનાં•પકડાં•ઈક•ભરવાડ•શંગાથે•અદલબદલ•કીધાં*તે• વેહેલોજ•ભુખથી•તથા• ચાલેઆથી•થાકી•ગીઓ•અને•તેહેને•અટકવું•પડેઉં*ઈક• ખેતરમાં• પાલો•ઉગેલો•હતો•તાંહાં•તે•શુતો*પેલા•ગરીબ•ભરવાડે•ડીઉકનાં•કપડાં• પેહેરેલાં•હતાં• તે• વેહેલો•પકડાઈઓ•માંટે•શોધ•કાહાડનારાઓને•ઈ•ડીઉકની•શારી•પખે•શોધ•કરવાનો•ઉલટ•થઓ*શેકારી•કુતરાં• લેઈને• શોધનારાઓ• તેહેની•પછવાડે• દોડેઆ•અને•તેવોઈ• હેને• મેલાં•કપડાં•

---

† શ્રી•શાંમરશેટશાઈઅરનાં• પરાંતમાં• બરીજવાટર•નાંમનું•શેહેર છે•તેહેની•પાશે*

પેહેરેલો•શોધી•કાહાડેઓ•તેવારે•હેની•દુખી•અવશતા•થઈગીઈલી•હતી•અને•જીવતો•રેહવા•શારું•બીજો•કાંઈ•ખોરાક•નહી•મલેઓ•માંટે•હેનાં•ગાજવામાં•કાચા•વટાણાં•જે•ઈણે•ખેતરમાં•ચુંટેઆ•હતા•તે•મલેઆ*તેહેને•પકડીને•પાહાદશાની•આગલ•લઈ•ગીઆ•ઈણે•ઘણીજ•મીનત•કરીને•માંફ•માંગી•પંણ•હેને•માફ•કીદો•નહી•ને•હેની•છાંડણ•થાઈ•તથા•હેને•મારી•નાંખવાની•શજા•આપી•અને•પછે•ગારદંન•મારેઓ*જેવારે•તેહેને•શૂરી•ઉપર•ચહડાવેઆ•તેવારે•તેણે•જલાદ•પાશે•માંગી•લીધું•કે•જે•પરમાંણે• લારડ•રશલને•બેઈ•ઝટકા•મારવા•પડેઆ•તેમ•થાઈ•નહી•ઈટલા•શારૂં•મહને•હીમતથી•ઝટકો•મારજે*પણ•હેવું•કહાથી•તે•જલાદને•હીંમત•આવેઆને•બદલે•તેહેને•હેવીતો•ધુજરી•ચહડી•જે•તેહેનાથી•મુતલક મરાઈ•શકાઉં•નહી*જલાદે•પેહેલાં•હલવેથી•ઝટકો•મારેઓ•તે•પછે•ડીઉકે•પોતાનું•માંથું•શૂરી•ઉપરથી•જલાદને•ધમકાવા•શારૂં•ઉંચકેઉં•ને•પછે•હલવેથી•પાદરું•મુકેઉં•અને•જલાદે•કેટલાઈક•ઝટકા•મારેઆ•પંણ•કાંઈ•ડોકું•કપાઉં•નહી• અંતે•તેણે•પોતાની•કુહાડી•નાંખીદીધી•ને•ઈ•કાંમ•છોડી•દીધું*નાજરે•તેહેની•પાશે• જુલંમથી•ડોકું• કપાવેઉં•તેવારે•બેઈ•બીજા•ઝટકા•મારેઆ•તેથી•ડોકું•જુદું•પડેઉ*

ઈ•વખતે•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડમાંબી•ફીશાદ• ચાલતો•હતો•તેહેમાંથી•આરગાઈલનો•ડીઉક•વડો•હતો•તે•ફીશાદ• કરવાની•ઈ•મતલબ•હતી•જે•શ્રી•માંનમથનાં•ડીઉકને•મદત•કરવી•પંણ•પાહાદશાની•ફૌજે•ઈ•ફીશાદ•તોડી•નાંખેઓ• અને•શ્રી•આરગાઈલનો•ડીઉક•પોતે•ઘાહેલ•થાઈઓ•અને•કેદ•પકડાઓ—હેને•શોધી•કાહાડેઓ•તેવારે•ઈ• ધણી•પાંણીનાં•ઈક• તલાવમાં•પોતાનું•ડોકું• બાહાર•કાહાડીને•ઉભો•રહેલો• હતો* હેને•શ્રી•ઈડીનબરો• †લઈગીઆ•અને•ભારે•હીમતથી• ઘણાંજ• દુખ•ખમેઆં•પછે•હેને• શઘલાઓનાં•દેખતાં•ગારદંન•મારેઓ*

પાહાદશાજી• ફૌજનાં•અમલદારોઈ•લડાઈમાં•જેકાંઈ•બંધવા•પકડેઆ• તેઓનાં• ઉપર• ભારે•શખતી•તથા•જુલંમ•કીધો•અને•જેફરી

---

† ઈ•શેહેર•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલંડ•દેશની•ગાદીની•જગાછે*

શ•નાંમનો•એક•જુલંમગાર•દઈત•જે•ઇનશાફનો•કરનાર•હાકેમ•હતો•તેણે•ફીશાદ•કરનારાઓનો•નેઆવ•ત્યારે•ઘાતકી•પણાંથી•તથા•હરેક•તરેહની•શખત•રીતે•કીધો*

ધરંમ•બાબેબી•એજ•પરમાંણે•લોકો•નારાજી•હતા*કાંએજે•પાહાદશા•પોપનાં•ધરમને•આશરો•આપતો•હતો•અને•અગારજો•કોઇ•પાદરી•તે•ધરમની•વીરુધમાં•વાહેજ•કરેતો•તેહેની•વાહેજ•બંધ•કરાવતા•હતા•અને•તેહેનાં•ગાંમની•ધરમની•કીરીઆબી•તેહેની•પાશે•નહી•કરાવતા•હતા*

એથી•ખીલકુલ•ઉલટો•શીરેશતો•બનાવેઓ*હરેક•જાતનાં•તથા•હરેક•તરેહનાં•ધરમને•ચાલવા•દેવાની•છુટ•તથા•લોકોને•ગમે•તેવો•એતેકાદ•રાખે•હેવી•રજા•શરવ•કોઇને•(પાહાદશાએ•)આપી*એ•કાંમ•શખાવત•ભરેલું•નજર•આવેઉં•પણ•હેવું•ધારેઆમાં•આવેચ•કે•હેવું•કરવાથી•પાહાદશાની•મતલબ•એમ•હતી•જે•કેથોલીક•લોકોને•પાછો•કાબુ•મલે•અને•પાહાદશાએ•તે•વખત•કેથોલીક•લોકો•ઉપર•ઘણીજ•મેહેરબાંનગી•દેખાડી*તેવાર•પછે•હેવું•પરમાવેઉજે•આએ•રાજમાં•લોકોની•મરજીમાં•આવે•હેવો•ધરંમ•રાખવા•દેવાની•છુટ•આપેઆનો•એકરાર•શઘલાં•દેવલોમાં•વાંચી•શંભલાવે*પાદરી•લોકોએ•જોઉં•જે•હેવું•કીધાથી•પરોટેશટેનટ•ધરમને•નુકશાંન•પોહોંચશે•માંટે•ઘણાં•ખરા•પાદરીઓએ•એકરાર•વાંચી•શંભલાવા•શારૂ•નાપાડી*શાત•બીશપોએ•પાહાદશાને•એક•અરજી•મોકલી•અને•તેહેમાં•લખું•જે•હમારી•ધારણાંમાં•દરૂશ•આવતું•નથી•જે•હમેએ•એકરાર•વાંચી•શંભલાવીએ•કાંએજે•તેથી•પરોટેશટેનટ•ધરમને•હાંણી•પોહોંચે*પાહાદશા•તેઓ•ઉપર•ઘણોજ•ગુશે•થઓ•અને•તેઓને•બંદીખાનાંમાં•કેદ•કરાવેઆ*તે•વખત•ત્યારે•પોકાર•થઓ•અને•એ•રાજની•પરોટેશટેનટ•ધરમ•પાલનારી•ભલી•રઈએતે•એ•શાતે•પાદરીઓને•શાબાશી•તથા•માંન•આપેઉ*પછે•તે•પાદરીઓનો•વેશટમીનીશટર•નાંમનાં•ઘરમાં•એટલા•દંગા•શારૂં•તેવોનો•નેઆવ•કીધો•પણ•જુરી•આખી•રાત•બેઠા•પછે•અદાલતમાં•પાછી•આવી•અને•કહેઉં•જે•એવો•"તકશીર•વાર•નથી*"આખા•ઓરડા•મધેનાં•શઘલા•લોકો•ખુશી•થાઈને•પોકાર•કરવાં•લાગાં•તે•

બાહારનાં• લોકોઈ•શાંભલેઉં •અને•પછે• તરતજ•ઈ• પોકાર•આખા• શ્રી•લંનડંન• શેહેરમાં•જાહેર• થાઓ* ઈમ• કેહેછે• જે•પાહાદશાઈ• હંનશલોહીથ•નાંમની•જગો•આગલ•છાવણી•કીધી•હતી•તાંહાં•ઈ વાત•શાંભલી* તેવારે•પાહાદશાઈ•ઈ•ખુશાબખતીનું•કારંણ•શ્યૂં છે•તે•પુછેઉં•તેહેને•જવાબ•દીધો જે"કાંઈ•નહી•માતર•પાદરીઓનાં•ઉપર•વાંકઠડેઓ•નહી•ઈટલાશારૂ•શીપાઈ લોકો•ખુશીથાઈચ"પાદશાહ•બોલેઓ શ્યૂં "ઈ•કાંઇજથી•ઈમ•કેહેવાશે•ઈતો•તેવોનાં•હકમાંઉલટુ•બીગાહેઉં *"

હરેક•કાંમ• આડું•ચાલતું• હતું•માટે• લોકો•હેવો• વીચાર•કરવાં•લાગા જે• પરોટેશટેનટનો• ધરમ• બનચાવાનો• ઈખલો•ઈજ•મારગ છે•જે•આપણે• ઓરંજનાં•શેહેજાદા• ઉલીઅંમને•આશરો• આપીઈ જે•ઈ•ધણી•રાજ• લેવાંની•તજવીજ•કરે•અને• તેમ•થઆથી• શઘલી• આફતો•જેહેની•બીહીક•લાગેચ•તે•બનચશે *

ઈ•શાહજાદો• પાદશાહની• છોકરી•શાથે•પરણેલો•હતો•માંટે લોકોઈ•તેહેનેજ•પશંદ•કીધો• અને•તેવો•હેને• ઈટલા•શારું • ઘણો• ચાહાતા•હતા• જે•ઈ•પરોટેશટેનટ•ધરંમ•પાલતો•હતો*

ઈક•મોહોટી• ફૌજ•લેઈને• તે•શ્રી• હાલેંડથી•(ઈંગાલંડમાં•) આવેઓ•અને•તારીખ• ૫ મી•નવેમબરે•શ્રી•ડેવનશાઈરમાં• ઉતરેઓ* તે•ઘણાંદાહડા•શ્યૂધી•હીઆં•ખોટીરહે•ઈટલાવાશતેજે•ઈ•પોતે જોરાવર•થાઈ•હેવી•ફૌજ• હેની•પાશે•ઈકઠી•થાઈતો• પોતાનું •કાંમ•કરવાનો• તેહેને•ભરોશો•આવે*અં તે•ઈ• દેશનાં•મોહોટા•મોહોટા• લોકો• આવી•તેહેની•શંગાથે• શાંમેલ• થાઆ•તેથી• શઘલું •હેની•મરજી• પરમાંણે•થાઉં *બીચારા•જેમશ• પાદશાહને• હેનાં•શઘલા•દોશદારો• તથા•હેની• પોતાની•છોકરી•આંન•તથા•તેહેનો•માંટી•શ્રી•ડેનમારકનો• શાહાજાદોબી• હેને• છોડીને• ઉલીઅંમની•તરફ•જતાં•રહ્યાં* જેવારે• પાહાદશાઈ•ઈ•વાત•શાંભલી•તેવારે•તેહેને•ઘણુંજ• દુખ•લાગું •અને•તે બોલેઓ•જે•"માહારાં• પોતાનાં•છોકરાંવોઈબી•મહને•તજેઓ*"

હવે•ઈ• દેશ•છોડી• દેવાની• હેને•શલાહ• આપી*ઈણે• પોતાની•રાંણીને•તથા•પોતાનાં•નાંધલા• છોકરાને•મોકલી•દીધાં• અને• તેવો•શઉ•શલાંમતીથી•શ્રી•ફરાંશમાં•આવાં• પોંહોચેઆં•પણ• બીચારો

પાદશાહ•પકરાઓ•અને•તેહેને•કેદ•કરીને•પાછો•લેઈ•આવેઆ*એ•પછે•પાહાદશાને•શ્રી•રાચેશટરમાં•કેદ•કીધેલો•હતો•તાંહાંથી•તે•નાહઠો•અને•પછે•શ્રી•ફરાંશમાં•ગીઓ*

પાહાદશાએ•તખત•તજેઉ•(એટલે•જે•છોડી•દીધું•)માંટે•હેવો•ઠરાવ•કીધો•જે•હેની•જગો•ઉપર•એ•શેહેજાદો•તથા•હેની•ઓરંજની•શેહેજાદી•બંધે•રાજ•કરે•અને•તેવોને•પાહાદશા ઉલીઅંમ•તથા•મેરી•રાણી•હેવો•ખેતાબ•આપેઓ*એ•ફેરફાર•જે• ૧૬૮૮ નાં•વરશમેં•થાઉં•તેહેને•"રેવોલીઉશંન•"(એટલે•જે•રાજનું•તથા•પાહાદશાવોનું•ફેરફાર•થાઉ•)કેહેછે*

શવાલો*

બીજો•ચારલશ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

તેહેનાં•પછે•કીઓ•પાહાદશા•થાઓ*

બીજો•જેમશ•બીજા•ચારલશનો•શૂં•શગો•થાએ*

બીજો•જેમશ•પરોટેશટેનટનાં•ધરંમને•ઇઆ•રોમંન•કેથોલીકનાં•ધરમને•મદત•કરતો•હતો*

પાહાદશાનાં•ઉપર•કાંઈ•ફીશાદ•થાઓ•કે•શૂં*

એ•ફીશાદમાં•કોંણ•મુખીઅ•હતો*

પાહાદશાની•ફૌજની•શાંમને•થાવા•શારૂં•શ્રી•માંનમથનાં•ડીઉકે•ફૌજ•એકઠી•કીધી•હતી•કે•શૂં*

એકુ•લડાઈ•થાઈ•કેશૂ*

તે•કાંહાં•થાઈ*

કોંણ•જીતેઉં*

શ્રી•માંનમથનાં•ડીઉકનો•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાનો•હક•હતો•કે•નહી*

શેડજીમોરની•લડાઈ•થાઆ•પછે•શ્રી•માંનમથનાં•ડીઉકનું•શૂં•થાએઉ*

એ•ડીઉકને•ગારદંન•મારેઆ•કે•શૂં*

એજ•વખતે•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલંડમાં•કાંઈ•ફીશાદ•થાઓ•કેશૂં*

એ•ફીશાદમાં•કોંણ•વડો•હતો*

એ•શ્રી•આરગાઈલનાં•ડીઉકનું•શૂં•થાએઉં*

ફૌજનાં•અમલદારોએ•શેડજીમોર•આગલ•તથા•બીજી•જગોએ•બંધવા

ઓ•પકડેઆ•તેવોને•શૂં•કીધુ*

કીઆ•ઇનશાફ•કરનાર•હાકેમે•એ•પીશાદ•કરનારાવોનો•નેઆવ•કીધો•અને•તેવો•શંગાથે•શી•તરેહે•ચાલેઓ• અને• તેહેની• આબરુ•કેહેવી•હતી*

પાહાદશાએ• પોપનાં•ધરંમને•આશરો•આપવા•માંગેઓ•કેશૂ*

જે•પાદરીઓનો•હક•હતો•કે•રોમંન•કેથોલીકનાં•ધરંમમાં•જેકાંઈ• તેવોનાં•ધારાણાં•પરમાણે•ખોટુ•હતું•તે•દેખાડી•આપે•તે•પાદરીઓને•પાહાદશાએ•શુ•કીધુ*

એ•પછે•પાહાદશાએ•તરતજ•હરેક•જાતનો•ધરંમ•ચાલવા•દેવાનો•એકરાર•પરગટ•કીધો•કે•શૂ*

શૂં•હેવું•ધારેઆમાં•આવેચ•કે•રોમન•કેથોલીકનો•ધરમ•પાછો•(શ્રી ઈંગલંડમાં•)કાબુ•પકરે•એટલા•શારૂ•પાહાદશાએ•હેવું•કીધુ•કે•નહી*

ઈંગલડનાં•રાજમાં•શઘલાં•દેવલોમાં•એ•એકરાર•વાંચી•શાભલાવવાનો હોકમ•આપેઓ•કે•શૂં*

કોઈ•પાદરીએ•એ•હોકંમ•નહી•માંનેઓ•કે•શૂ*

કેટલા•પાદરીઓએ•નહી•માંનેઓ*

તેવોનુ•શૂ•થાઉં*

તેવોને•છોડી•મેલેઆ•કે•નહી*

તેવોને•છોડી•મેલેઆ•તેથી•લોકો•ઘણાંજ•ખુશી•થાઆકે•શૂ*

(તે•વખત•)પાહાદશા•કાંહાં•હતો—એ•ખુશબખતીનો•પોકાર• તે[illegible] શાંભલેઓકે•શૂં—અને•તે•શૂ•બોલેઓ*

પરોટેશટેનટ•ધરમ•બનચાવા•શારૂ•લોકોએ•બીજા•કોઈને•પાહાદશા• બનાવવાનો•વીચાર•કીધોકે•શૂ*

તે•કોણ•શખશ*

ઉલીઅંમ•ઓરજનો•શાહાજાદો•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં• પાહાદશાનાં•ખાંનદાંનનો•શૂં•શગો•હતો*

એ•શાહાજાદો•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાં•આવેઓ•કે•શૂં*

તે•આવીને•કાંહાં•ઉતરેઓ*

કીઆ•વરશમાં•અને•કેઈ•તારીખે•તે•આવેઓ*

લોકો•તેહેને•આવી•મલેઆં•કે•નહી*

ઓરંજનો•શાહાજાદો આવેઓ•તેહેની•ખબર•તથા•પાહાદશાનાં•પોતાનાં•છોકરાં•પાહાદશાને•છોડીને•જતાં•રહ્યાં•તે•ખબર•શાંભલેઆથી•પાહાદશાને•કેહેવું•લાગું*

જેમશ•પાહાદશાનું•શૂં•થાઈઉં*

તેવારે•શૂં•ઓરંજનાં•શાહાજાદાને•પાહાદશા•કીધો*

તેહેનો•ખેતાબ•શૂં•હતો*

તેહેની•રાંણીનું•નાંમ•શૂં•હતું*

રાજનો•કારભાર•ફેરફાર•થાઈય•તેહેને•હમેશાં•શૂં•કેહેય*

LETTER XXIX.

MY DEAR BOY,

WE saw, in my last letter, that, when James the Second abdicated the throne, king William and queen Mary were chosen instead of him. The people of England had such a wish to have a true Protestant king, that they rejoiced at getting rid of James, and having William and Mary in his stead. But it was not so in Ireland; there were many Papists there, who still supported king James. He, therefore, went and Joined his friends in Ireland: he found the old army steady in his cause, and he raised a new one in addition to it. This army harassed the protestants, who were friends of William, and caused many of them to fly for protection to Scotland and to England. About ten thousand of them, however, got into the town of Londonderry, in the north of Ireland, and there resolved to make a stand against their enemies. James then attacked the town, and there never was a braver defence than that which was made by the friends of William. The town was weak in its fortifications, but the men were brave and resolute; and they were determined to hold out to the last moment in defence of the town, and of their Protestant king. After defending the town for a long time, they began to be in great distress, and there was a great deal of disease among them for want of food. They supported their lives by eating horses, dogs, and every thing that could possibly be used for the purpose of sustaining life. At length, very happily, a ship with provisions was sent to their relief, and it succeeded in reaching the town, notwithstanding all the difficulties of the attempt, and all the pains which were taken to prevent it. After this, the siege was given up.

Still, however, James and his friends continued to harass the supporters of the Protestant cause; till, at length, William determined to go over to Ireland himself. The two armies met near the river Boyne: they were encamped on opposite sides of this river, and expected soon to come to an engagement. Whilst William was riding along the bank of the river, he was seen by the enemy, and a cannon was fired at him. The shot killed several of his attendants, and wounded the king in the shoulder: and there was a report that he was dead, which caused great grief in his army. But William presently rode through his camp to show himself to his men; at which they were all restored to their good spirits, and ardent desire of victory. The next morning king William determined to try to force a passage over the river; this the enemy resisted, and so the battle began; and it ended in favour of king William and the English. This put an end to the hopes of James. Some of his friends, indeed, continued for a time to support his cause with great bravery. Many battles were fought: the last effort of the Catholics was in the defence of the city of Limerick, which they were at length obliged to surrender, and king William granted them favourable terms.

James was, at this time, in France; for the king of France, Louis the Fourteenth, was his friend, and did all he could to restore him to his power in England. But every attempt failed. James lived a life of religious retirement till the year 1701, when, after a very tedious sickness, he died.

William was a great soldier, and he employed almost the whole of his reign in wars against France. His constitution was not strong, and his constant anxiety and exertions seemed to be wearing him away. He rode much on shorseback for the sake of his health; and, one day, as he was riding from Hampton Court to Kensington, his horse fell under him, and his collar bone was broken. He was then carried back to Hampton Court, where his fracture was attended to. In the evening he proceeded to Kensington in his carriage, the jolting of which separated the bones again. They were afterwards replaced; but the king was in a bad state of health at the time, and every attempt in his favour turned out ill. He died in the fifty-second year of his age, in the fourteenth of his reign. This was in the year 1702.

Queen Mary died in the thirty-third year of her age, of the small-pox. This, as you know, is a very dangerous disease if taken in the natural way. The art of inoculating persons for the small-pox, and thus rendering the disease more mild, was not then known in England. In our time, *vaccination* has been discovered by Dr. Jenner, which produces a disease still milder, scarcely to be called a disease; but which is generally found to prevent the liability to small-pox as effectually as inoculation.

Ever yours, &c.

Character of William the Third.

William the Third was of a middle stature; thin, and of a delicate constitution; subject to an asthma and continual cough from his infancy. He had an aquiline (hooked) nose, sparkling eyes, and a large forehead. He was a great warrior, but not a pleasing companion. He was considered to be religious, temperate, and sincere; but his ambition led him into continual wars.

◆

QUESTIONS.

When king James had abdicated the throne of England, who was chosen in his place?

What relation was the new queen to king James?
What was the religion of king William and of queen Mary?
Did the English rejoice in having William and Mary, instead of James?
Why did they?
Were the French also glad of this change?
Why were they not?
Did king James go to Ireland?
What town was besieged by king James and his Irish supporters?
Can you mention any of the particulars of the siege of Londonderry?
Did James and the Roman Catholics of Ireland continue to oppose the Protestant army of king William?
Where was a great battle fought?
Which side was victorious?
In what city did the Irish Catholics make their last stand, in favour of king James?
Where did James the Second reside during the latter part of his life?
Did the king of France lend him his assistance?
Who was king of France at that time?
Were many attempts made to restore king James to the throne of England?
Did they succeed?
In what manner did James pass the latter years of his life, and where did he die, and in what year?
Was king William a great soldier, and was he, during a great part of his reign, engaged in war?
Against whom chiefly?
What was the cause of his death?
Where did he die?
In what year was this?
What was the cause of queen Mary's death?

પતર• ૨૯

માહરા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

માહારા•ગએઆ•પતરમાં• મે•લખુહતુંજે•બીજા•જેમશ•તખત•છોડી•દીધું•અને•તેહને•બદલે•ઉલીઅંમ• પાદશાહ•તથા• મેરી•રાંણીને•પસંદ•કીધાં*શ્રી•ઇગલેંડનાં• લોકો•ખરા•પરોટેશટેનટ•ધરંમ•વાલા• પાહાદશાને•હેવાં તો•ચાહાતાં•હતાં કે•જેમશ•જતો•રહે•અને• તેહને•બદલે•ઉલીઅમ•તથા• મેરી•આવી• તેથી• તેવો• ખુશી•થાઆ*પણ•આઇરલેંડમાં •હેવું•નહી•હતું•કાંઈ જે• તે•ટાપુમાં•ઘણાંઈક• પેપીશટ•લોકો•હતા• તેવોઈ•જેમશને• આશરો•આપેઓ*માંટે• જેમશ• પોતાનાં•

મીતરોની •પાસે•શ્રી•આએરલેંડમાં•ગીઆ•—જુની•ફોજ•હેની•તરફ થી•લડવાને•તઈઆર•હતી•અને•તેશીવાએ•એણે•એક•નવી•ફોજ•એકઠી•કીધી*જે•પરોટેશટેનટ•લોકો•ઉલીઅંમનાં•મીતરો•હતા•તેવોને•એ•ફોજે•હેરાંન•કીધા•અને•તેહેમાંનાં•ઘણાંએક• લોકોને•પોતાનો•બનચાવ•કરવાને•વાશતે• શ્રી•ઈશકાટલેંડ તથા•શ્રી ઈંગલંડમાં•નાંહાશી•જવું•પડેઉં* તેહેમાં•આશરે•દશ•હજાર•આદમી•આએરલેંડની•ઓતરની•તરફનાં•શ્રી•લંનડંન•ડેરીનાં•શેહેરમાં•ગીઆ•અને•તાંહાં•તેવોએ•પોતાનાં•દુશમનોની•શાંમને•થાવાનો•ઠરાવ•કીધો*જેમણે•તે શેહેર•ઉપર•હુમલો•કીધો•તેવારે•ઉલીઅંમનાં•મીતરોએ•જેહેવો•બાહાદુરી•પણાંથી•પોતાનો•બંચાવ•કીધો•તેહેવો•કદી•કોઈએ•કીધો•નહી•હશે*એ•શેહેરનો•કીલો•તથા•કોટ•નબલો•હતો•પંણ•માંણશો•બાહાદુર•અને•હીમત•વાલાં•હતાં•અને•જીવજાએતાંહાંશુધી•તેવોએ શેહેરનો•તથા•પોતાનાં•પરોટેશટેનટ•પાદશાહનો•બંચાવ •કરવો•એમ ખચીત•ઠેડવેઉ*તેવોએ•ઘણુંએક•શુધી•એ•શેહેરનો•બંચાવ•કીધો•અને•પછે•તેવો•ઘણાંજ•દુખી•થાવા•લાગા•અને•ખોરાકની•તંગીને•લીધે•તેઓમાં•ઘણોજ•રોગ •પેદા•થઓ*તેવોએ•ઘોડા•તથા•કુતરાંનુ•ગોશ•તથા•હરેક•બીજી•ચીજ•કે•જેથી•જાંન•બંચે•તે•ખાઈને•પોતાનુ•ગુજરાંણ•ચલાવેઉં*અંતે•તેવોને•દુખમોથી•છોડવવા•શારૂ•એક વાંહાંણ•ભરીને•ખોરાક•મોકલેઓ•તે•એ•શેહેરમાં•પોહોતો•જોકે•એ•પોહોચવું•ઘણુંજ•મુશકેલ•હતું•અને•તે•ખોરાક•અટકાવવા•શારૂ•ઘણીજ•મેહેનત•લીધી*પછે•ઘેરો•ઘાલેલો•હતો•તે•પાછો•કાહાડી•નાંખેઓ*

તોબી•પરોટેશટેનટ•ધરંમને•મદદ•કરનારાઓને•જેમશ•તથા તેહનાં•દોશદારો•હેરાંન•કરતા•રહેઆ•જાંહાંશુધી•અંતે•ઉલીઅંમે પોતે•શ્રી •આએરલેંડ•જાવાનો•ઠરાવ•કીધો*એવોની•બધે•ફોજ•બોઈન•નદી•આગલ•આંમંણશાંમન•થાઈ•અને•નદીનાં•બંધે•કીનારા•ઉપર•એકેકની•શાંમબે•તેવોએ•છાંવણી•કીધી•અને•જલદીથી•લડાઈ•કરવાની•આશારાખતાહતા*ઉલીઅંમ•નદીનાં•કીનારા•ઉપર•ફરતો હતો એટલાંમાં•દુશમને•તેહને•જોએઓ•અને•તેહની•તરફ•એક•તોપ•મારી*

તે•તોપનાં•ગોલાથી•ઉલીઅંમનાં•કેટલાએક• ચાકરો•મરી•ગીઆ•ને•પાદશાહનાં•ખભાંગે•જખંમ•લાગો•અને•એક•બુમ•ઉડીકે•પાદશાહ•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•તેથી•હેની•ફોજમાં•ભારે•શંતાપ•થાઈઓ*પંણ•ઉલીઅંમ•તરતજ•છાંવણીમે•ફરેઆ•ને•પોતાનાં•આદમીઓને•દેખાવ•દીઓ•તેથી•તેવો•શરવે•પાછાં•ખુશી•થાઈઆં•અને•ફતેહ•પાંમવાની•ઈછા•કરવા•લાગાં*બીજેદીને•શવારનાં•ઉલીઅંમ•પાદશાહે•તે•નદી•ઉતરવાનો•ઠરાવ•કીધો•તેવારે•દુશમંન•શાંમને•થાઈઓ•અને•લડાઈ•શરુથાઈ•તેમાં•ઉલીઅંમ•પાદશાહ•તથા•ઈંગલીશ•લોકો•જીતેઆ*તેથી•જેમશની•આશેઆલશટ•થાઈ*હેનાં•કેટલાએક•દોશદારોએ•ભારે•દલેરીશી•થોડીએક•મુદત•શુધી•હેની•તરફથી•મદદ•કીધી*ઘણીએક•લડાઈઓ•થાઈ—છેલી•વેલા•કેથોલીક•લોકોએ•શ્રી•લીમરીકનુ•શેહેર•ખંચાવા•માંગેઉં•પણ•તે•શેહેરબી•આપી•દેવુ•પડેઉં•અને•ઉલીઅંમ•પાહાદશાએ•તાંહાંનાં•લોકોનાં•હકમાં•શારૂ•કીધું*

એ•વખતે•જેમશ•શ્રી•ફરાંશમાં •હતો•કાંએજે•ચઉદમાં•લુઈશ•નાંમનો•શ્રી•ફરાંશનો•રાજા•હેનો•મીતર•હતો•તેણે•જેમશને•પાછો•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડની•હકુમત•આપવાશારૂ•જેકાંઈ• થાઈ•શકેઉ•તે•કીધું*પંણ•શઘલી•મેહેનત•બરબાદ•ગઈ*જેમશ• ૧૭૦૧ નાં•વરશ•શુધી•એખલો•ધરંમની•બંદગીમા•મશગુલ• રહો•અને•પછે•ઘણાં•દાહડા•શુધી•માંદો•પડીને•મરણ•પાંમેઓ*

ઉલીઅંમ•એક•બાહાદુર•શેપાહ•હતો• માંટે•તેણે•પોતાનાં•આખા •રાજમાં•શ્રી •ફરાંશ•શંગાથે•લડાઈઓ•કરેઆકીધી*હેનું•શરીર•મજબુત•હતુ•નહી•અને•પોતાની•ફીકરથી•તથા•જાશુક•મેહેનત•કીધાથી•એ•થાકી•ગઈઓ*પોતાની•તંદરોશતીને•શારુ•તે ઘણોખરો•ઘોડા•ઉપર•બેશતો•હતો•અને•એક•દીને•પાદશા•ઘોડા•ઉપર•બેશીને•હાંપટન•કોરટથી•શ્રી•કેનશીંગટન•જતો•હતો•તેવારે•તેહનો•ઘોડો•પડી•ગઈઓ•અને•તેથી•હેની•ગરદંન•ભાગીગઈ* પછે•હેને•પાછો•હાંપટન•કોરટમાં•લઈગીઆ•તાંહાં•હેની•ભાગેલી •ગરદંનની•દવાઈ•કીધી•શાંજનાં•પાહાદશા•પોતાની•ગાડીમાં•બેશીને•શ્રી•કેનશીંગટન•ગઈઓ•તે•ગાડીનાં•હીલાથી•હાડકાં•પાછાં• જુદાં•થાઈ•ગીઆં*પ

છે• તે•હાડકાંપ•ણાં•ગોઠવેઆં•પણ•એ•લખત•પાદશાહનાં•આંગાને•કરાર•હતો•નહી•અને•એ•કોઈરી તેબી•શારો•થાએઓ•નહી*એ•પાદશા•બાવન•વરશની•ઉમરમાં•અને•ચઉદ•વરશ•સૂધી•રાજ•કીધાપછે મરણ•પાંમેઆ*એ• ૧૭૦૨ નાં•વરશ ગો•ગુજરેઆ*

મેરી•રાંણીને•શીતલા•આવેઆ•તેથી•તે• તેતરીશ•વરશની•વએમાં•મરણપાંમી*તમો•જાંણોયકે•એ•શીતલાનો•રોગ•અગારજો•વધવાદીજીએ તો•ઘણોજ•ભએંકાર•જેહેવો છે* એ•રોગને•લીધે•આદમીઓનાં•શીતલા•કાહાડેઆથી•તે•આજારને•નબલો•કરવાની•હીકમત•તે•વખતે•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડમાં•કોઈને•માલંમ•હતી•નહી* આપણાં•વખતમાં•દાકતર•જેનીઆરે•શીતલા•કાહાડવાની •હીકમત•શોધી•કાહાડીય•તેથી•એ•રોગ•હેવો તો•નાકુવત•થાએજાએછે•કે• તેથી•રોગ•થાતો•નથી•અને•શીતલા•ફરી•પાછા•આવતા•નથી*

હુંછુ•તમારો•માઆલુ•બાપ*

તરીજા•ઉલીઅંમની•આબરુ*

તરીજો•ઉલીઅંમ•વચલા•કદનો•તથા•પાતળો• અને•નાજુક•આંગનો•હતો•અને•હેને•બચપણથીજ•દંમ•તથા• હમેશાં•ખાંશી•થાતી•હતી•હેનુ•શાંમળુ•નોકદાર•નાંખ•હતું•તથા• તેજ•ભરેલી•આંખ•તથા•ગોહેરાટી•પેશાંની•હતી*એ•મોહોટો•લડનાર• પેહેલવાંન•હતો•પંણ•ગમે•હેતો•શોભતી•હતો•નહી*તેહેને•સુરમી•તથા•નરમ•તથા•ભલો•કરી•ગણતા•હતા•પંણ• હેનાં• લોભને•લીધે• એણે•ઘણી•લડાઈઓ•કરવી•પડી*

શવાલો*

જેવારે•જેમશ•પાહાદશાએ•તખત• છોડીદીધું•તેવારે• તેહેને•બદલે•(પરજાએ•)રાણીને•(પાદશા•)પરશંદ•કીધો*

નવીરાંણી•જેમશ•પાદશાહની•સૂ•શગીથાએ*

ઉલીઅંમ•પાદશાહ•તથા•મેરી•રાંણીનો•ધરંમ•સૂ•હતો*

જેમશને•બદલે•ઉલીઅંમ•તથા•મેરી•થાએઆં•તેથી•ઈંગલીશ•લોકો•ખુશી•થાએઆ•કેસૂ*

શાવાશતે•ખુશી•થાઆ*

ઈ•ફેરફાર•થાઈઆથી•ફરેંચ•લોકોબી•ખુશી•થાઈઆકે•નહી*

શાવાશતે•તેવો•ખુશી•થાઈઆ•નહી*

શુ•જેમશ•પાદશાહ•શ્રી•આઈરલેંડમાં•ગીઆ•તોકે•શુ*

જેમશ•પાહાદશાઈ•તથા•તેહેને•મદદ•કરનારા•આઇરીશ•લોકોઈ•કીઆ•શેહેર•ઉપર•વેરો•ઘાલેઆ*

શ્રી•લંડનડેરીનાં•ઘેરાની•કાંઇ•બીના•તમે•કહી•શકશો*

શુ•જેમશ•તથા•શ્રી•અઈરલંડનાં•રોમન•કેથોલીક•લોકો•અને ઉલીઅંમ•પાહાદશાની•પરોટેશટેનટની•ફોજ•આંમણ•શામણ•થાઈઆ•કીધી•કે•શું*

કોઇ•મોહોટી•લડાઇ•થાઇ•કે•શું*

કોણ•જીહીંતેઉ*

જેમશની•તરફથી•શ્રી•આઈરલેંડનાં•કેથોલીક•લોકો•છેલેશરવારે•કીઆ•શેહેરમાં•ઉભા•રહા*

બીજો•જેમશ•આખરમાં•કાંહાં•જાઈ•રહો*

શ્રી•ફરાંશનાં•પાહાદશાઈ•તેહેને•મદદ•કીધી•કે•શું*

તે•વખત•શ્રી•ફરાંશનો•પાહાદશા•કોણ•હતો*

જેમશને•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•તખત•ઉપર•પાછો•બેશાડવાની•ઘણી મેહેનત•લીધી•કે•શુ*

તેવો•ફતેહ•પાંમેઆ•કે•શુ*

જેમશે•પોતાની•જીંદગાંનીનાં•શેવટનાં•દાહાડા•શીતરેહે•કાહાડેઆ•અને•તે•કાંહાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•અને•કીઆ•વરશમાં•ગુજરેઆ*

શુ•ઉલીઅંમ•પાહાદશા•મોહોટો•શેપાહ•હતો•અને•તેણે•પોતાનાં•રાજમાં•ઘણીખરી•લડાઈઓ•કીધી•કે•શું*

ઘણુંકરીને•કોણની•શંગાથે•(લડાઈ•કીધી*)

તે•શાશબબથી•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ*

તે•કાંહાં•મરણ•પાંમેઆ*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•ગુજરેઆ*

મેરી•રાંણી•શાથી•મરંણ•પાંમી*

LETTER XXX.

MY DEAR BOY,

IN the last letter which I wrote to you, I told you, that, after king James the Second had given up the crown of England, king William was chosen to be king in his stead. I think I told you, also, that queen Mary, William's wife, was the daughter of James the Second. Now there was no objection to having Mary for a queen, for she was not a Papist, like her father; she had embraced the Protestant religion. King James had also another daughter, whose name was Anne; and, as she was a Protestant likewise, she was appointed to be queen, after the death of William; for William died without children. The rest of the family of James were not allowed to reign in England, because they still continued to follow the Popish religion. They made, indeed, several attempts to get possession of the kingdom, but could never succeed: for the people now saw the excellence of the Christian religion, as it is held by Protestants, and, therefore, it was settled, by law, that no Papist should be king of England. The male descendants of king James did, indeed, call themselves kings and princes of England; they are, however, usually called, by the English, *Pretenders* : but I may, perhaps, say more of them in some other letter.

Queen Anne was thirty-eight years of age when she came to the throne.

I told you that the greater part of the last king's reign was taken up in wars; because the king was himself a great soldier: but we shall see that, even in the reign of Anne, there was a great deal of fighting too. The queen herself, it is true, could not fight well; but she had a great general, the duke of Marlborough, and he fought a great many battles against the French, and generally beat them. The French king, Louis the Fourteenth, thought, that when our king William was dead, and England was governed by a woman, he should have nothing to fear; but he soon found that he was deceived in holding this opinion; for the queen was determined to keep up the character of the country for bravery, and her friend the duchess of Marlborough encouraged her in this, and the duke fought for her, so that things were, perhaps, never carried on with more spirit in England than in the reign of queen Anne. Many battles were won, and many towns on the Continent were taken, and a great deal of honour was gained to the general and the soldiers, and the nation; but whether any real advantage was got by these wars, or any addition to the nation's real prosperity or happiness, is a matter which I shall not pretend to determine.

The greatest battle which the duke of Marlborough fought was the battle of Blenheim. It was so called, because it was fought in the neighbourhood of the village of Blenheim, near the river Danube, in Germany. The duke gained a complete victory. The queen and the people were filled with joy at this success. The duke had a grant given him of the manor of Woodstock, near Oxford, with a noble park. A splendid house was likewise built for him in the park; which belongs to the family now, and is called *Blenheim,* in honour of the duke's great victory.

But, whilst we are speaking of this great English general, and the brave English soldiers, we must not forget to mention the brave admirals and sailors too. At the beginning of queen Anne's reign, indeed, we were not so successful by sea as we have been since: I cannot, however, help telling you of the brave admiral Benbow; he fought like any English admiral of our own days; but his officers treated him most cruelly, and behaved quite in a different manner from what any of our naval captains would do now.

Admiral Benbow was placed near the West Indies with a fleet of ten ships, to annoy the enemy's trade, and he was informed that the French admiral was in those seas, with a force equal to his own. He presently found the enemy's ships, and immediately formed the line of battle, and began the attack, but he soon saw that he was left almost alone to bear the whole fire of the enemy. The admiral, however, kept fighting on till night, and he determined to resume the attack the next day. In the morning, he found, to his great dismay, that all his ships, but one, had fallen back. Still, however, this brave admiral, with only one ship to assist him, continued to pursue and engage the enemy, for four days. The last day's battle was more furious than the rest, and in this, his leg was taken off by a cannon ball. He then ordered that they should place him in a cradle on the quarter-deck, and he continued to give his orders till his ship was so completely disabled that he could go on no longer.

When one of his lieutenants, during the fight, expressed his sorrow for the loss of the admiral's leg, " Yes," said Benbow, " I am sorry for it too; but I had rather have lost both my legs than have seen the dishonour of this day. But, do you hear ! if another shot should take me off, behave like men, and fight it out." The admiral soon died of his wounds; and the officers who had deserted him were severely punished. Two of them were shot, by the sentence of a courtmartial at Plymouth.

I must not forget to tell you, too, that it was in queen Anne's reign that Gibraltar was taken. This is a town, as you will see in your map, at the very bottom (or south) of Spain. It was taken from the Spaniards by Sir George Rooke; you may be sure that this was not done without severe fighting, as the place is defended, perhaps, more strongly than any place in the world. The English, however, took it, and they have kept it ever since; and, as you see that it is just at the straits, or narrow sea, by which the Mediterranean is entered, it gives us great power and command in that sea.

There are so many things to write about in this reign, that it is impossible to give you an account of them all, in my short letters; and, if I were to attempt to describe all the battles that were fought, and all the politics of the day, and the changes of ministers, and the Whigs and the Tories, and other things of this nature, you would not, at present, perhaps, take much interest in such things. I must not, however, forget to tell you, that it was in this reign that the union of Scotland and England was made. You know that James the First of England was also king of Scotland. He was lawful heir to both kingdoms: and, since that time, the two kingdoms were governed by the same king; but still they were separate kingdoms, and had different parliaments. It was, however, thought likely to be an advantage to them both to have them united under one government; and this, after much debating and delay, was at last agreed upon. The greater part of the nation seemed to approve of the measure, and it appears to have answered their expectations, and to have been a great benefit to both countries.

In queen Anne's reign an act was passed for building fifty new churches in and about London. This was an excellent measure; for London kept increasing in size, and, therefore, there was not sufficient room to accommodate those who might wish to worship in the Established Church. It was, therefore, highly necessary to remedy this evil. When people neglect religious worship, they generally become forgetful of all religious duty, and are then led into the practice of any crime to which they may be tempted. Church room should be provided for all, the poor as well as the rich, that they may attend if they please. If they then neglect the *duty* of religious worship,—or rather, I should say, give up so great a *privilege*,—then they are themselves to answer for it, the fault will be their own, not that of the government.

A few only of these churches were, however, then built; and there has been a general complaint of want of church-room in the neighbourhood of London ever since; and it has been particularly felt in our own day, since so much has been added to the size of London within the last few years. Happily, however, many new churches have been lately built; so that we will now hope that no one need be absent from church for want of room: what a happiness it would be if no one were absent for want of desire to worship God, to hear his word, and to learn his will!

I must, however, bring my letter to a conclusion. The poor queen, notwithstanding all the victories, and the prosperity of the nation, was harassed and tormented by the quarrels and jealousies and changes of her ministers : first one party was in favour, then another; then she found that those whom she considered as her best friends, were accused of laying plots and snares to oppose her wishes; and, during all these perplexities, her health began to give way, and she had not strength to bear the fatigues and difficulties of state affairs. She sunk into a sort of insensible and indifferent state of mind; and all that the physicians could do seemed to be of very little use.

"On the 13th of July, 1714, she seemed somewhat relieved by medicines; she rose from her bed about eight o'clock, and walked a little. After some time, casting her eyes on a clock that stood in her chamber, she continued to gaze at it for some minutes. One of the ladies in waiting asked her what she saw there more than usual; to which the queen only answered by turning her eyes upon her with a dying look. She was presently afterwards seized with a fit of apoplexy, from which, however, she was somewhat recovered by the assistance of Dr. Mead. She continued all night in a state of stupefaction. She gave some signs of life between twelve and one the next day; put expired the following morning in the forty-ninth year of her age, after a reign of twelve years."

Queen Anne was married to prince George of Denmark; but we do not consider her husband as king of England, because the crown came to queen Anne in her own right, and not in her husband's; and, therefore, she became reigning queen; her husband having nothing to with the nation, in the character of a king.

Anne died without children; she had had several, but they all died : it, therefore, became necessary to inquire who should reign after her. This question had already caused a good deal of debate during her reign; some people wished for the male descendants of James the Second; but those who were against the Papists, chose rather to look to another branch of the royal family who were Protestants; and these last were in favour of the elector of Hanover.

The first sort were called Jacobites, which means followers of James*, and the others were called Hanoverians, because they were in favour of the house of Hanover. There were many quarrels between these two parties, of which I need not speak just now. The nation, however, for the most part, were for the elector of Hanover, very wisely choosing to have a Protestant king. This king was George the First, of whom I intend io write to you in my next letter.

◆

QUESTIONS.

In what year did queen Anne come to the throne?
Whose daughter was she?
Why was not the son of James the Second allowed to be king?
Were any attempts made in favour of the son of James?
Did the Papists consider this person to be the rightful king?
What do we generally call him?
How old was queen Anne when she began to reign?
Was queen Anne much engaged in war?
Who was her principal general?
Who was king of France at that time?
Which is considered to be the greatest of all the many battles which the duke of Marlborough fought?
How did the queen reward the services of the duke of Marlborough?
What is the mansion called where the duke of Marlborough resides?
Where is it?
What admiral is much celebrated in the reign of queen Anne?
What is related of him, during a sea engagement near the West Indies?
Where is Gibraltar?
When was it taken?
Who took it?
Was there much party spirit in this reign, between the Whigs and the Tories?
What do you mean by the *union* between England and Scotland, and during whose reign was this made?
Was any thing done towards accommodating the people with church-room?
What was it?
Was the queen much disturbed by the disputes of her ministers?

---

* *Jacob* is the old name of James.

Can you relate the circumstances of her death, and tell me in what year it happened ?
Who was the queen's husband?
Was he considered as king?
Why not ?
Did she leave any children ?
Who succeeded her ?
What do you mean by Jacobites ?

પતર• ૩૦

માહારા• પૈઆરા• છોકરા•

માહારું•ગીઉં•પતર•જે•મે•તમને•લખું•હતું•તેહેમાં•મે•તમને•કહું•હતું•જે•બીજા•જેમશે•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનું• રાજ• છોડી•દીધું• તેપછે• તેહેને• ઠેકાંણે•ઉલીઅંમને•પાદશાહ• બનાવેઆ* હું• ધારૂચ• કે• મે•તમને•કહું •હતું જે• ઉલીઅંમની•બઈરિ• મેરી•રાંણી •બીંજા• જેમશની• છોકરી•હતી*હવે• મૈરીને• પોતાનેજ•રાંણી •બનાવતે તો•કશી• અડચંન•હતી •નહી•કાંઈજે• તે• પોતાનાં•બાપની•માફક• કાંઈ• પેપીંશટ•હતી•નહી• તેણીઈ•પરોટેશટેનટનો• ધરંમ• કબુલ•કીધો•હતો*જેમશ•પાદશાહની•બીજીબી• છોકરી•હતી• તેહેનું •નાંમ આંન•હતું •અને• તેબી• પરોટેશટેનટ•હતી•માંટે• ઉલીઅંમનાં•મરંણ• પછે•તેહેને•રાંણી• ઠેડવી•શાથી• જે• ઉલીઅંમને• પેટે•કાંઈ• છોકરાં•હતાં•નહી• તેવાંહાંજીઆજ•મરી•ગીઆ•હતો*જેમશનાં•બીજાં• છોકરાંવો• પોપનો• ધરંમ•પાલતાં•હતાં•માંટે• તેવોને•શ્રી• ઈંગલંડમાં•રાજ•કરવા•દીધાં•નહી* તેવોઈ• કેટલીઈક•વખત•ઈ •રાજ• લેવાની •તજવીજ•કીધી• પંણ•પ• તેહે•થાઈ• નહી•કાંઈજે•શઘલા• લોકોને પરોટેશટેનટ• લોકોનો•કરીશટીઆંન• ધરંમ• ઘણોજ• ઉતમ•નજર • આવેઓ•માંટે•ધારાથી•હેવું•મુકરર•કીધું - જે•કોઈ•રોમન• કેથોલીકનો•ધરંમ•રાખતો•હોઈ•તે• ધણી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનો• પાદશાહ• થાઈ • નહી*જેમશ• પાદશાહની•ઓલાદનાં• છોકરાવો• પોતાને• પાદશાહવો તથા• શેહેજાદાવો•કરી•કેહેતા•હતા•પંણ• તેવોને•ઈંગાલીશ• લોકો• બાંહાંનું •કરનારાવો•કરીને• કેહેતા•હતા•પંણ•કદાચ• હું •બીજાં • કોઈ•પતરમા• તેવો•વીશે•વધારે•કહીશ*

આંન•રાંણી•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠી•તેવારે•તેહેની•આડતીશ•વરશની•ઉમર•હતી*

મેં•તમને•કહું•હતું•જે•પાછલા•પાદશાહનાં•વખતમાં•ધણીખરી•લડાઇઓ•થાઇ•કેટલા•વાશતે•જે•પાદશાહ•પોતે•મોહોટો•શિપાહ•હતો•પંણ•આપણ•જોઈશું•જે•આંનનાં•રાજમાંબી•ધણી•લડાઈ•થાઈ*ખરૂ•છેકે•રાંણી•પોતે•શારી•પેઠે•લડી•શકતી•નહી•હતી•પંણ•તેહેનો•શ્રી•માલબરોનો•ડીઉક•હેવે•નાંમનો•કે•મોહોટો•શરદાર•હતો•તેણે•ફરેંચ•લોકો•શંગાથે•ધણીકે•લડાઇ•કીધી•અને•તેવોને•હરાવેઆ*શ્રી•ફરાંશનાં•રાજા•ચઉદમાં•લુઈશે•વીચારેઉં•જે•આપણો•પાદશાહ•ઉલીઅંમ•મરંણ••પાંમેઓ•અને•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમાં•અશતરી•રાજ•ચલાવેચ•માંટે•હવે•કશી•વાતની•બીહીક•નથી—પંણ•તેહેને•તરતજ•માલંમ•પડેઉં•જે•હેવો•વીચાર•કીધાથી•તે•પોતે•ઠગાઓ•કાંકે•જે•રાંણીએ•પોતાનાં•દેશની•બાહાદુરીનું•નાંમ•તપારી•રાખવાનું•ઠેડવેઉં•અને•રાંણીની•શઈ•શ્રી•માલબરોનાં•ડીઉકની•બહાદરે•રાંણીને•દીલાશો•આપેઓ•અને•ડીઉક•રાંણીને•વાશતે•લડેઓ•માંટે•જેહેવી•હીમતથી•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડમાં•આંન•રાંણીનાં•વખતમાં•કાંમ•ચાલેઆં•તેમ•બીજા•કોઈના•વખતમાં•ચાલેઆતાં•નહી*ધણીકે•લડાઇઓમાં•ફતેહે•થાઈ•તથા•(શ્રી•યુઉરોપનાં•)•ખંડમાં•ધણાંકે•શેહેરો•લીધાંમાં•આવેઆં•અને•લશકરી•વડા•શરદારને•તથા•શીપાઇઓને•તથા•શઘલી•પરજાને•ધણીજ•આબરૂ•મલી—પંણ•કે•લડાઇઓથી•કાંઇ•ખરો•લાભ•થાઓ•અથવા•તેથી•પરજાનું•ખરૂ•શુખ•તથા•આબાદી•વધારે•થાઇ•ઇઆ•નહી•કે•વાત•હું•ચાકશ•કેહેતો•નથી*

શ્રી•માલબરોનો•ડીઉક•શરવેથી•મોહોટી•લડાઇ•લડેઓ•તેહેનું•નાંમ•શ્રી•બલેનહીમની•લડાઇ*તેને•બલેનહીમની•લડાઇ•કરી•કેટલાશ•રૂં•કેહેતા•હતા•જે•શ્રી•જરમનીનાં•દેશમાં•ડેનીઉબ•નદીની•પરોશમાં•બલેનહીમનાં•ગાંમ•આગલ•કે•લડાઇ•થાઇ•હતી*હેમાં•ડીઉક•બીલકુલ•ફતેહે•પાંમેઓ*હેની•ફતેહે•થાઇ•તેથી•રાંણી•તથા•પરજા•ખુશીથાઆં*શ્રી•આકશફરડ•શેહેરની•પાશે•ઉડશટા

કનાં•ગાંમની જાગીર•તથા•તે•શાથે•એક•મોહોટો•બાગ•પંણ•એ•ડીઉકને•આપેઓ*તે•બાગમાં•હેને•વાશતે•એક•મોતબર•ઘેર•બંધાવી•આપેઉં•તે•હવડાંબી•હેનાં•ખાંનદાંનનું જ છે•અને•એ•ડીઉક•મોહોટી•ફતેહે•પાંમેઓ•એટલા•શારૂં•એ•ઘેરને•બલેનહીમ•કરીને•કેહે છે*

એ•મોહોટા•ઈંગલીશનાં•શરદાર•તથા•ઈંગલીશનાં•બાહાદુર•શીપાઈઓ•વીશે•આપણે•બોલીએ•તેવારે•દરીઆઈ•ફોજનાં•બાહાદુર•અમલદારો•તથા•લડનારાઓ•વીશે•કેહેવાને•વીશરવું•જોઈએ•નહી*આંજ•રાંણીનું•રાજ•શરુ•થતાંમાં•આપરે•ઘણી•ફતેહે•પાંમેઆ•નહી•પંણ•તેપછે•ત્યારે•ફતેહે•પાંમેઆ•તોબી•બેનબો•નાંમનાં•બાહાદુર•દરીઆઈ•અમલદાર•વીશે•માહારે•તમને•કેહેવું•જોઈએ—આપરા•વખતનાં•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•દરીઆઈ•અમલદારની•માફક•તે•લડેઓ•પંણ•તેહેનાં•હાથ•હેઠલના•હોદેદારોએ•હેનાં•ઉપર•ત્યારે•ઘાત•કીધી•અને•હવડાંનાં•દરીઆઈ•હોદેદારો•ચાલે છે•તેથી•બીલકુલ•ઉલટી•રીતે•ચાલેઆ*

બેનબોને•દશ•વાંહાંણોની•ફોજ•લેઈને•પશચમ•ઈનડીઆની•તરફ•શતરૂનાં•વેહેપારને•હરખત•પોહોચાડવા•શારૂ•મોકલેઓ•હતો•અને•હેને•ખબર•આપી•હતી•જે•શ્રી•ફરાંશનો•દરીઆઈ•અમલદાર•પંણ•તેહેનાં•જેટલી•ફોજ•લેઈને•તે•શમુદરમાં•હતો*તેહેને•શતરૂનાં•વાંહાંણો•તરત•મલેઆં•અને•જે•વખત•તેણે•લડાઈની•શફ•બેચી•અને•હોમલો•શરૂં•કીદો•પંણ•તેહેને•વેહેલું જ•માલંમ•પડેઉં જે•તેહેને•એખલાનેજ•શતરૂનો•મારો•ખાવો•પડેઓ*પંણ•રાત•પડી•તાંહાંસુધી•એ•અમલદાર•લડેઆ•કીધો•અને•બીજે•દીવશે•પાછો•ફરીથી•હોમલો•કરવાનું•ઠેડવેઉ*પંણ•શહવારનાં•તેહેને•માલંમ•પડેઉં જે•એક•હેનાં•વાંહાંણ•શીવાએ•બીજાં•શઘલાં•જતાં•રહાંતાં*તોપંણ•એ•જોરાવર•અમલદાર•એક•વાંહાંણની•મદતથી•ચાર•દાહાડાશુધી•શતરૂની•પછવાડે•લાગો•તથા•લડાઈ•કીધી*બીજા•દાહાડાઓ•કરતાંને•ચોથે•દાહાડેની•લડાઈ•ઘણીજ•જબરી•થાઈ•અને•તેહેમાં•તોપનાં•ગોલાથી•હેનો•પગ•ઉડી•ગીઓ*તેવારે

તેણે•ફરમાવેઉં જે• ઓરીમાં• મુકીને•મહને•વાહાંણનાં•તખતા•ઉપર લઈજાઈ•અને•તાંહાંથી•તે•હોકંમ•આપતો•રહો• જાંહાંશુધી•કે• હેનાં •વાહાંણે•હેવો તો•મારો•ખાધો•અને•ભાગી•ગીઉં જે•તેહેનાંથી•વધારેવાર•શુધી•લડાઈ•થાઈ•શકી•નહી*

લડાઈને•વખત•હેનાં•ઈક•શરદારે•ઈ•વડા•અમલદારનો•પગ•ભાગો•તેવીશે•પોતાની•દલગીરી•જણાંવી•તેવારે•બેનબો•બોલેઓ•“હા•કુબી•તેટલાશારુ•દલગીર છેઉં•પંણ•આજની•ફતેતી•થાઆને•ખદલે.અગરજો.માહારા.બંધે.પગો.જતારહા.હતે તોશારુ.થતે*પંણ.શાભલ•કે•અગરજો•બીજા•ગોલાથી•હું મરી•જાંઉ તો• તમે•મરદાની•પૈડે•ચાલજો•અને•લડાઈ•શારી•પખે•કરજો*” બેનબો•અમદલારને•જખમ•લાગા•હતા•તેથી•તે•વેહેલો•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ•અને•જે•શરદારો•હેને•મુકીને•જતા• રહાહતા• તેવોને•ભારી•શજા• આપી*તેહેમાંનાં•બે•શખશોનો• શ્રી•પલીમથમાં•નેઆવ•કરીને•તેવોને•ગોલીથી•મારી•નાંખેઆ*

હું•તમને•કેહવાને•વીશરૂ•નહી•કે•આંન•રાંણીનાં•વખતમાં•' શ્રી•જીબરાલટરનો•કીલો•લીધો*તમે• પોતાનાં•નકશામાં•જોશો તો•માલુમ•પડશે• જે•ઈ•શેહેર•શ્રી•ઈશપેનની• છેક•હેઠલ•(ઈઆને•દખણ) ની•બાજુઈ છે*શર•જારજ•રૂકે•ઈશપેનીઆરડ•લોકો•પાશેથી•ઈશેહેર લીધું•તમે•ખચીત•કરીને•જાંણજો•કે•ઘણુંકરિ•લડેઆ•વીનાં•ઈ•લેવાઉં•નહી• શાથીજે•દુનીઆંમાં•બીજી•જગો•કરતાં•ઈ•શેહેરનો•ઘણોજ•મજબુત•કીલો છે*તોબી•ઈંગલીશ•લોકોઈ•તે•જગો•લીધી•અને•તેવારપછે•આજશુધી• પોતાનાં•હાતમાં•રાખીચ — અને•તમે•જોશો•કે જે•જલ•મારગે•અથવા• શાંકરી•ખાડીમાં•થાઈને• મેડીટરેનીઅનનાં•શમુદરમાં•જવાઈ છે•તાંહાંજ•ઈ•કીલો•બાંધેલો છે•હેને• લીધે•આપણને•તે•શમુદરમાં•ભારે•બલ•અને•હુકમત છે*

ઈ•રાંણીનાં•વખતમાં•ઈટલીબધી•ચીજો•લખવાની છે•કે•તે•શરવે•માહારાં•દુકાં•પતરોમાં•માહારેથી•તમોને•લખાઈ• શકાઈ•નહી•અને•જેજે•શાધલી•લડાઈઓ થઈ• તે•તથા• તે•વખતનાં•રાજધાંનીનાં•

બીચારો•તથા •પરધાંનોની•બદલી•તથા•વીગ•અને•ટોરી† ઓ•તથા કેવીજ•બીજી•ઘણીએક•ચીજોકું નું•શરવેનું•હું•તમને•બઆંન •કહું તો હવડાં•તે કેવી •વાતો•તમને•કદાચીત•ગમશે•નહી* તોબી•હું •તમને કેહેવાને•વીશરનાર•નહીકે•એ•રાંણીનાં•વખતમાં•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલેંડ•તથાઈ•ગલંડનાં•બંધે રાજ•એકઠાં•થાઆં*તે•જાંણીયકે•શ્રી•ઇંગલંડનો પાદશાહ•પેહેલો•જેમશ•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલેંડનોબી•રાજા •હતો* તેધણી બંધે•મુલકનો•હકદાર•વારશ•હતો•અને•તેહેનાં•વખતથી•એ•બંધે•મુલકો•એકજ•પાદશાહનાં•તાબામાં•હતાં•તોપંણ•તેવો•બંધે•જુદાંજ•હતાં•અને•તેવોની•જુદી•જુદી•પારલેમેનટ•હતી*પંણ•હેવું•ધારેઆમાં•આવતું•હતું•જે•અગરજો•એ•બંધે•રાજ•એકઠાં•હતે તો•તેહેમાં બંધેને•નફો•થાતે•માંટે•ઘણીએકે•રદબદલ•કીધા•પછે•તથા •વાર•લગાડેઆ•પછે•અંતે•હેવું•ઠેડવેઉં*ઘણાં•ખરા•લોકો•એ•કાંમને•પશંદ•કરતા•હતા•અને•તેવોની•મરજી•પરમાંણે•થાએઉં• હેવું•દીશેય•અને•તેથી•બંધે•દેશોને•મોહોટો•નફો•થઓ*

આંજ•રાંણીનાં•રાજમાં•એક•કાએદો•બનાવેઓ•જે•શ્રી•લંડનમાં•તથા•તેહેની•આશપાશ•પચાશ•નવાં•દેવલો•બાંધે*એ•ઘણુંજ•ઓતંમ•કાંમ•શાથી•જે•શ્રી•લંડનનું•શેહેર•મોહોટું•થતું•ગીઉં•માંટે•જે•લોકો•મુકરર•કીધેલાં•દેવલમાં•બંદગી•કરવા•શારૂં•જવા માંગે•તેવોને•બરાબાએ•એટલી•જગો•નહી•હતી*માંટે•કેનો•ઉપા એ•કરવો•ઘણોજ•જરુર•હતો*જેવારે લોકો•ધરંમની•પુજા•પરતી •એ લેય•તેવારે•તેવો•પોતાનાં•ધરંમનાં•કાંમ•ઘણું•કરીને•વીશારી•જાએય•અને•લલચાઈને•હરેક•કોઈ•ગુનાહ•કરેય*ગરીબ•અને તવંગર•શરવેને•વાશતે•દેવલમાં•જગો•કીધી•જોઈએ•કે•તેવોની•મરજી•હોએતો•તેવો•તાંહાં•આવી•હાજર•થાએ*અગરજો•તેવો•ધરંમની•પુજાનું•કાંમ પડતું•મેલે•ઈઆ•એ•મોહોટી•હાજતને•રેહવા•દીએતો•તેવોને•તેહેનો

---

†વીગ•અને•ટોરી•લોકોની•બે•જુદી•ટોલકી•થાએય•તેહેમાં•વીગ•લોકોનું•મત•એમ•હોએય•કે•હરેક•વશતુને•અગાઉનાં•કરતાંને•ફેરફાર•કરવી•અને•સુધારવી—ને•ટોરીઓનું•મત•એ•હોએય•કે•હરેકચીજ•અગાઉની•માફક•રેહેવા•દેવી*

જવાબ•દેવો•જોઈએ•કાંઈ જે•તકશીર•તેવણીની છે•અને•શરકારની•નથી*

પણ•તે•વેલા•થોડાંજ•હેવાં•દેવલો•બાંધેઆં•અને•તે•દીન•પછે•શ્રી•લંડનની•પરોશમાં•દેવલમાં•જગો•નથી•હેવી•શરવ•કોઈ•ફરીઆદ•કરેચ•અને•આપણાં•વખતમાંબી•હેવુંજ છે•શાથીજે•થોડાં કે•વરશમાં•શ્રી•લંડનનું•શેહેર•ઘણુંજ•વધેઉંચ*લાઈઆગ•આરાં•તેથી•હવડાં•ઘણાંકે•નવાં•દેવલો•બંધાઈઆંચ•માંટે•આપણને•આશા છે•જે•દેવલમાં•જગોને•લીધે•કોઈજે•ગેર•હાજર•રેહેવું•પડશે•નહી—અને•આગારજો•ઈશવરને•પુજવા•તથા•તેહેની•વહી•શાંભલવા•તથા•તેહેની•મરજી•શીખવાનું•શરવ•કોઈનું•મેંન•હોઈ•અને•કોઈ•ગેર•હાજર•રેહે•નહીતો•કેહેવું•શારૂં*

પણ•માહારે•આઈ•માહારાં•પતરનું•શેવટ•લાવવું•જોઈએ*કેટલીબધી•ફતેહે•થાઈ•અને•લોકો•શૂખી•હતા•તોબી•પરધાંનોનાં•કજીઆ•તથા•તેવોની•અદેખાઈ•તથા•બદલીચી•બીચારી•રાંણીને•દુખ•અને•દરદ•થઉ—પેહેલાં•કે•ટાલકી•ઉપર•કોરપા•રાખી•અને•પછે•બીજી•ઉપર•રાખી•પછે•રાંણીને•માલંમ•પડેઉં•કે•જેવોને•પોતાનાં•શરવેથી•શારા•દોશત•કરીને•જાંણતી•હતી•તેવો•રાંણીની•મરજીને•શાંમને•થાવા•શારૂં•છુપા•મંનશૂબા•કરતા•હતા•તથા•ફાંદો•નાંખતા•હતા•અને•હેવા•ઘબરાટમાં•તેહેની•શૂખાકારી•જતી•રેહેવા•લાગી•અને•રાજનુ•કાંમ•ચલાવાની•મેહેનત•તથા•મુશીબત•રાંણીથી•ખમાઈ•શકાઈ•નહી*તેહેનું•દેલ•હેવી•રીતે•બેશૂદ•અને•ગારેલ•થાઈ•ગીઉં•જે•વઈદ•લોકોથીબી•કાંઈ•ફાઈદો•થાઈઓ•નહી*

૧૭૧૪ નાં•શાલમાં•તારીખ•૧૩ મી•જુલાઈને•દીને•દવાઈથી•રાંણીને•જરા•ફાઈદો•થાઈઓ•હેવું•માલમ•પડેઉં–રાંણી•પોતાનાં•પલગ•ઉપરથી•આશરે•આઠ•વાગતે•ઉઠી•અને•થોડુંકે•શૂધી•ફરી*કાંઈ•વખત•પછે•ઓરડામાં•કે•ઘડીઆલ•હતું•તે•ઉપર•થોડીકે•મીનીટ•શૂધી•જોઈઆ•કીધું*જે•દાશી•તેહેની•ચાકરીમાં•હાજર•હતી•તેણે•રાંણીને•પુછેઉ•જે•હમેશાંને•કરતાં•તેહેમાં•વધારે•

સૂં•દીસેચ•તેવારે•રાંણીઈ•તેહેની•તરફ•આંખ•ફેરવીને•મરવાની•નીશાંની•બતલાવી•બીજો•કશો•ઉતર•આપેઓ•નહી* પછે•તરતજ•મગજે•લોહી•ચડેઉં•તેથી•રાંણી•બેશૂદ•થાઈ•ગેઈ•પંણ•તે•દાક્તર•મીડગી•મહેતથી•થોડીઈક•શારી•થાઈ*તે•આખી•રાત•બેશૂદ•પડીરહી*બીજે•દીને•બાર અને•ઈક•વાગાતે•તેહેનાંમાં•કાંઈ•પરાંણ•નજર•આવેઓ•પંણ•તે•પછે•આવતી•શવારનાં•ઓગણપચાશ•વરશની•વઈમાં•અને•બાર•વરશ•સૂધી•રાજ•કીધા•પછે•મરંણ•પાંમી*

આંન•રાંણી•શ્રી•ડેનમારકનાં•શાહાજાદા•જારજ•શંગાથે•પરણી•હતી•પણ•તેહેનાં•માંટીને•આપરે•આં•ઈંગલેંનડનો•પાહાદશા•કરી•કેહેતા•નહી•કાંઈજે•આંણ•રાંણીને•પોતાના•હકથી•તખત•મલેઉં•તેહેના•ખાવંદનાં•હકથી•મલેઉજ•નહી•હતુ•ઈટલાશારું•તેજ•પોતે•હુકુંમત•કરનારી•રાંણી•થાઈ•તેહેનાં•માંટીને•લોકો•શગાથે•કશી•ગારજ•નહી•કાંઈજે•તેકાંઈ•પાહાદશા•હતો•નહી*

આંન•મરણ•પાંમી•તેવારે•તેહેનાં•કાંઈ•છોકરાં•હતાં•નહી—હેને•પેટે•થોડાંઈક•છોકરાં•થાઈઆં•હતાં•પણ•તે•શઘલાં•મરીગીઆ•માંટે•તેહેનાં•પછે•તખત•ઉપર•કોણ•બેશે•તેહેની•શોધ•કાહાડવી•જરૂર•પડી* આંન•રાંણી•જીવતી•હતી•તેવારે•ઈ•બાબત•વીશે•ઘણી•રદ•બદલ•થાઉ•હતી•કોઈ•લોકો•બીજા•જેમશની•ઓલાદનાં•છોકરાંઓ•માંથી•વડાને•તખત•આપવા•માંગતા•હતા•પણ•જેઓ•રોમન•કેથોલીક•લોકોનાં•શતરુ•હતા•તેવો•પાહાદશાનાં•ખાનદાનમાં•જેકોઈ•પરોટેશટેનટ•હોઈ•તેવોમાંથી•જેહેને•ઘટે•તેહેને•તખત•આપવા•માંગતા•હતા•માંટે•તેવો•શ્રી•હાંનોવરનાં•રાજાને•પાહાદશા•કરવા•ચાહાતાહતા*

પેહેલી•તરેહેનાં•લોકોને•જેંકોબાઈટશ•ઈઆને•જેમશ•†ની•તરફનાં•કરી•કેહેતા•હતા•અને•બીજાઓને•હાંનોવરીઆંન•કરી•કેહેતા•હતા•કાંઈજે•તેવો•શ્રી•હાંનોવરનાં•ખાંનદાંનનો•તરફ•હતા* ઈ•બંને•તરફ•વાલા•લોકોમાં•ઘણીઈક•કજીઆ•થાઈઆ•તેવીશે•હું•હવડાં•બોલવાનો•નથી*પણ•વાંણી•ખરી•પરજા•શ્રી•હાંનોવરનાં•રાજાને•ચા

---

† જેકાબ•જેમશનું•આશલનુ•નાંમ•છે*

હાતી•હતી•કાંઈજે•તેવોઈ•ડાહાપણથી•પરોટેશટેનટનો•ધરમ•પાલનારો•પાહાદશા•પશદ•કીધો*ઈ•પાહાદશાનું•નાંમ•પેહેલો•જારજ•હતુ•તેહેનાં•વીશે•હું•તમને•માહારાં•હવે•પછેનાં•પતરમાં•લખી•મોકલવા•માંગુય*

શવાલો*

આંન•રાંણી•કીઆ•વરશમાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠી*

તે•કોણની•છોકરી•હતી*

બીજા•જેમશના•છોકરાને•શાવાશતે•પાહાદશા•કીધો•નહી*

જેમશના•છોકરાને•તખત•ઉપર•બેશાડવાને•વાશતે•કોઈએ•તજવીજ•કીધીકે•નહી*

પેપીશટ•લોકો•હેને•હકદાર•પાહાદશા•કરી•જાંણતા•હતાકે•નહી*

આપરે•તેહેને•શું•ખેતાબ•આપીઉં*

જેવારે•આંન•રાંણી•રાજ•કરવા•લાગી•તેવારે•તેહેની•કેટલા•વરશની•ઉમર•હતી*

આંન•રાંણી•લડાઈમાં•ઘણી•ગુતેલી•હતી•કેશું*

રાંણીનો•મોહોટો•શરદાર•કોણ•હતો*

તે•વખત•શ્રી•ફરાંશનો•રાજા•કોણ•હતો*

શ્રી•માલબરોનાં•ડીઉકે•ઘણીઈક•લડાઈ•જે•કીધી•તેહેમાં•શરવેથી•મોહોટી•કેઈ•લડાઈ•કીધી*

શ્રી•માલબરોના•ડીઉકે•ચાકરી•કીધી•તેહેને•બદલે•રાંણીઈ•તેહેને•શું•ઈનાંમ•બખશેઉ*

જાંહાં•શ્રી•માલબરોનો•ડીઉક•રેહેય•તે•ઈમારતનું•નાંમ•શું*

તે•કાંહાંછે*

આંન•રાંણીનાં•વખતમાં•કીઆ•નામીચા•દરીઆઈ•અમલદાર•થાઈગીઆ*

પરાચમ•ઈંનડીઆની•આગલ•શમુદરમાં•લડાઈ•થાઈ•તેહેમાં•ઈણે•શું•કીધું•તેહેની•વાત•શી•તરેહથી•કેહેછે*

શ્રી•જીબરાલટરનો•કીલો•કાંહાંછે*

તે•કીલો•કેઈ•વખતે•લીધો*

તે•કોણે•લીધો*

ફિ•રાજમાં•વીગ•તથા•ટોરી•લોકો•વચે•ઘણી•કજીઆ•થાઆકે•શૂ*
શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડ•તથા•ઈશકાટલેંનડનાં•રાજ•ફિખટાં•થાઈઆં•તેહેનો•
અરથ•શૂં•અને•કોણનાં•વખતમાં•ફિ•મુલકો•ફિખટાં•થાશાં*
લોકોની•દેવલમાં•જગો•કરવાને•વાશતે•કાંઈ•વેતરણ•કીધીકે•નહી*
તે•શૂં•વેતરણ•કીધી*
પરધાંનોનાં•કજીઆથી•રાંણીને•ઘણું•દુખ•થઉંકે•શૂં*
રાંણીનાં•મરણની•શરવે•બીના•કહો•અને•તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરણ•પાંમી•તે•કહો*
રાંણીનો•માંટી•કોણ•હતો*
તેહેને•પાદશા•કરી•કેહેતા•હતા•કે•નહી*
કાંઈ•નહી*
રાંણીનાં•કાંઈ•છોકરાં•જીવતાં•હતાંકે•નહી*
તેહેનાં•પછે•તખત•ઉપર•કોણ•બેઠુ*
જેકોબાઈટશનો•માઈનો•શૂં*

LETTER XXXI.

MY DEAR BOY,

After the death of queen Anne, George the First became king of England. He was a Germam, but is mother was a grand-daughter of James the First; and this relationship to the royal family of England was the great reason why he was fixed upon to be king: but, besides this, he was a Protestant, and an act of parliament was therefore passed to make him king, the family of James the Second being excluded because they were Papists. George the First was fifty-four years of age when he became king of England; and this mature age gave the people great confidence in him, and he was joyfully received by the greater part of the nation. Kings, however, as well as their subjects, have their troubles; and the disputes among the ministers, and the quarrels about Whigs and Tories, and Jacobites and Hanoverians, were at this time a great tor-

ment to the king, and to all the country. Some of the people were still friendly to the son of king James the Second, who, as I have already told you, was called the Pretender; and many attempts were made to get the kingdom out of the hands of king George, and to give it to *him*. Many of the principal lords and great people were concerned in a conspiracy to restore the Pretender, and especially the Scotch lords, who still clung to the Popish religion, and did all they could to oppose king George and his government. The earl of Mar raised an army in Scotland in support of the Pretender, and he was assisted by lord Lovat, and other powerful people; but his friends forsook him, and the duke of Argyle was sent with an army to oppose him, and there was quickly an end of this attempt. After this, the rebels, under the earl of Derwentwater, made an attempt in the north of England, and were joined by the Scotch, and got as far as Kendal, in Westmoreland, and took possession of the town, but they were soon driven from this place; and, in short, all the attempts of the Pretender and his friends seemed to come to nothing. This is what is called the rebellion of seventeen hundred and *fifteen*. There was one afterwards, in the time of George the Second, in favour of the Pretender, headed by prince Charles, his son, which is called the rebellion of *forty-five*; but I may, perhaps, speak about that another time: I only mention it here, that you may not confuse the two together. The Pretender's attempts in this rebellion of *fifteen* all failed, and many of the principal leaders were taken. They were brought to trial: and lord Derwentwater and several others were condemned to death, and beheaded on Tower-hill; and many more were hanged, drawn, and quartered, at Tyburn; several were executed at Preston and Manchester; and a vast number were transported to North America.

It was in the year seventeen hundred and twenty that a grand plan was set about, called the *South Sea* scheme, which was to make every body rich that engaged in it; but, instead of that, great numbers were ruined by it: but this is an affair that I shall not trouble you about just now. We may observe, however, that there is always some scheme or other going forward which professes to make men rich; but, after all, plain honest industry and prudence are the best, and most frequently succeed; they will generally supply a man with what is sufficient, and they lead to no risks and desperate losses. Wherever there is any thing like gambling, it generally leads to ruin; or, if some few have got rich by it, I have observed that their riches seldom do them any good. And the truth is, that the moneymaking schemes in George the First's time, indeed, in many instances, introduced riches into the country; but these riches led to extravagance or covetousness, and a great deal of profligacy and wickedness.

As the king was elector of Hanover, as well as king of England, he felt it is duty sometimes to visit that country: and, whilst he was making a journey thither, he was taken ill. He had crossed the sea, and was travelling forward in his carriage. He had supped heartily one night, and appeared in perfect health: he went to bed, and set off early in the morning to pursue his journey. Between eight and nine, he ordered his coach to stop. It was soon perceived that he had lost the use of one of his arms. A gentleman who was with him attempted to quicken the circulation by rubbing it between his hands. But this seemed to do no good; and the surgeon, who followed on horseback, was then called, and he rubbed it with spirits. Soon afterwards, the king's tongue began to swell, and he had just strength enough to bid them hasten to the next town. He expired about eleven o'clock the next morning, in the sixty-eighth year of his age, and the thirteenth of his reign. This was in the year seventeen hundred and twenty-seven.

◆

QUESTIONS.

Who reigned in England next to queen Anne?

What countryman was George the First?

How was he connected with the royal family of England?
For what reason was he made king of England, and the son of James the Second excluded?
What age was he when he came to the throne?
Was his reign free from troubles?
Were attempts made, during his reign, to restore the Pretender?
Who were the persons principally concerned in this attempt?
Who raised an army in Scotland in behalf of the Pretender?
Who commanded the English army, in opposition to him?
Who afterwards led an army into England; and how far did they advance?
In what year was this rebellion?
Were any of the rebels executed?
In what year were great losses sustained in consequence of the South Sea scheme?
Had the king any dominions in Germany, as well as in England?
Did he ever visit his Hanoverian dominions?
What occurred during one of his journeys to Hanover?
In what year did king George the First die?
How long had he reigned?
How old was he when he died?

પતર• ૩૧

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

આંન•રાંણીનાં•મરણ•પછે•પેહેલો•જારજ•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડનો•પાહાદશા•થાઓ*એ•ધણી•શ્રી•જરમની•દેશનો•વતની•હતો•પણ•હેની•માએ•પેહેલા•જેમશની•છોકરીની•છોકરી•હતી•અને•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડનાં•પાહાદશાઈ•ખાંનદાન•શંગાથે•એ•શગાઈ•હતી•એટલાશારું•હેને•પાહાદશા•ઠેરવેઓ—પણ•એ•શીવાએ•એ•ધણી•પોતે•પરોટેશટેનટ•હતો•અને•પારલેમેંનટે•હેને•પાહાદશા•કરવા•શારું•એક•કાએદો•બનાવેઓ•કાંએ•જે•જેમશનાં•કુટંમબવાલાં•રોમનકેથોલીક•હતાં•માંટે•તેવોહોડથી•ઈંગલેંડનાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેશાએ•નહી*પેહેલો•જારજ•જેવારે•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડનાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો•તેવારે•તેહેની•ચોપન•વરશની•ઉમર•હતી•અને•એ•પકી•ઉમરને•લીધે•લોકો•હેનાં•ઉપર•જારે•વીશવાશ•કરવા•લાગા•અને•ઘણી•ખરી•રઈએત•હેને•ગાહોટી•ખુશી•થી•માંન•આપેઉં*પાહાદશા•નેબી•રઈએતની•પેઠે•મેહેનત•પડે•છે•અને•પરધાંનો•વચે•કજીઆ•થાઆ•અને•વીગ•તથા•ટોરી•લોકો•તથા•

જેકોબાઈટ•તથા•હાંનોવરીઆંન• લોકો•વચે•કજીઆ •ટંટા•થાઆ•તેથી•ઈ•વખતમાં•પાહદશાને•તથા•શઘલા•દેશને•ઘણું•દુખ•લાગું*કેટલાઈક• લોકો•હજુર•શુધી•બીજા•જેમશનાં•છોકરાની •તરફ•હતા•તે•છોકરાને•જુડો•દાવો•કરનાર•હેવું•નાંમ•આપેઉં•હતું•તે•મેં •તમને•આગાઉથી•કહું•હતું •અને•જારજ•પાહદશાનાં•હાથમાંથી•તખત• છીનવી•લેઈને•તેને•અપાવવા•શારૂં•ઘણી•તજવીજ• થાઈ* ઘણાં•ખરા•મોહોટા• મોહોટા•અમીર• લોકો•તથા• મોહોટાં•માંણસો•તેને•તખત•ઉપર•બેશાડવાનાં•મનસૂબામાં•શાંમેલ•હતા• તેહેમાં•ઘણું•કરીને•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલેંડનાં•અમીરો•શાંમેલ•હતા•કાંઈજે•તેવો• પોપનાં•ધરમમાં•હજુર•શુધી•હતા•અને•તેવો•જારજ•પાહદશાને• તથા•તેહેની•હકુમતને•શાંમએ•થાતા•હતા* ઈ•દાવો•કરનારને•મદત•કરવા•શારું•શ્રી•મારનાં•અરલે•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલેંડમાં• ઈક•ફોજ•ઈકઠી•કીધી•અને•તેહેને•લારડ• લોવાટ•તથા•બીજા•હકુમત•વાલા લોકોઈ મદત •કીધી•પણ•તેનાં•મીતરોઈ•તેને•છોડી• દીધો•અને• શ્રી• આરગાઈલનાં•ડીઉકને•ઈક• ફોજ•લેઈને• તેહેની•શાંમએ•થાવા•શારું• મોકલાવેઆ•અને•ઈ•કાંમનું•તરતજ• સેવટ•આવેઉં*પછે• શ્રી •ડરવેનટવાટરનાં•અરલનાં•હાથ•હેઠલ•ફીશાદ•કરનારા•લોકોઈ• શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડની•ઓતરની•તરફ•અજમાઈશ• કીધી•અને•ઈશકાચ• લોકો•તેવોને•આવી•મલેઆ•અને•તેવો•શરવે•ઈકઠા•થાઈને•શ્રી• વેશટમોરલેડનાં• પરાંતમાં•શ્રી•કેનડાલનાં• સેહેર• શુધી•જઈ• પોંહોચેઆ• અને•તે• શેહેર•લીધું •પણ•તેવોને•જલદીથી•ઈ•જગોમાંથી•હાંકી• મેલેઆ• અને•ઈ• દાવો•કરનારની•તથા• તેનાં• મીતરોની•શઘલી• મેહેનતથી•કાંઈ•વલેઉં•નહી*તેને•શાતરસોને•પનદરનાં•શાલનો•ફીશાદ• કરીને• કેહે છે*ઈ• પછે•બીજા•જારજનાં•વખતમાં•જુડો•દાવો•કરનારની•તરફથી•ઈક•ફીશાદ•થાઈઓ• તેહેમાં•તેનો•છોકરો•ચારલસ•વડો•હતો• તેહેને• શને •પીશતાલીશનો•ફીશાદ•કરી•કેહે છે•પણ• તે• વીશે• હું •બીજી• વખત• બોલશ•હું •તેહેને•ઈટલા•શારૂ •હીઆં•લખી•જણાંઉચ•કે• ઈ• બંનેનો•તમને•ગુચવણ•પડે•નહી*શને•પનદરનાં• શાલમાં• ઈ•દાવો•કરનારે•જે•કાંઈ• કોશેશ•કીધી• તે• શઘલી• ફોકટ• ગઈ• અને•ઘણાંઈક•મોટા•શરદારો•પકરાઈઆ*તેવોનો•નેઆવ•થાઈઓ•અને•લારડ• ડરવેનટવાટ

૨•તથા•બીજા•કેટલાએક•લોકોને•મારી•નાંખવાની• શજા•આપી• અને• તેવોને•ટાવરહીલ•નાંમની•જગો•આગલ•ગારદંન• મારેઆ•બીજા•ઘણાંએક•લોકોને•શ્રી•ટાઈબરન• આગલ•ફાંશી•દીધા•તથા•કાપીને•કકડા•કીધા — બીજા•કેટલાએક•લોકોને•શ્રી•પરેશટન•તથા•શ્રી•મેનચેશટર•આગલ•ગારદંન•મારેઆ•અને•બેશૂમાર•લોકોને•તરીપાર• કરીને ઓતર•એમેરીકાનાં•દેશમાં• મોકલાવેઆ*

શતરશો•વીશનાં•વરશમાં•એક•મોહોટો•મનશૂબો•કીધો• તેહેને•દખણ•શમુદરનો•મનશૂબો•કરી•કેહેતા•હતા•તેહેમાં•જે •કોઈ• શાંમેલ•થાએ• તે•તાલેવાંન•થાએ•હેવું•કેહેતા•હતા•પંણ• તેહેને•બદલે•ઘણાંએક•લોકોની•ખરાબી•થાઈ•પંણ•એ•બાબત•વીશે•હું• તમને• હવડાં• મેહેનત•આપીશ•નહી*આપંણને• જાંણવું• જોઈએ•કે•હમેશાં•કાંઈબી•મનશૂબો•ઉઠી•ઉભો•થાએ•તેથી•આદમીઓ• પઈશા•વાલાં•થાએ•હેવું•લોકો•કેહેય•પંણ•તે•શરવ•કરતાંને•શાદા•અને•વાજબી•ઉદેઓગ•અને•બુધી•શારી•હોએછે•અને• તેથી•ઘણી• વેલા•લાભ•થાએછે•અને• તેથી•મનુશને•જે•કાંઈ•જરૂરછે•તે•તેહેને•પુરૂ•પડેય અને•હમેશાં•કશૂં•નુંકશાંન•અથવા• મોહોટો•ટોટો• થાતો•નથી* જાંહાં•કાંઈ•ચીજ•જુગારનાં•જેહેવી•હોએછે તાંહાં•નાશ• થાએછે•અને•અગારજો•તેથી•કાંઈએક•લોકો• તાલેવંન•થાએતો•હુંએ•જોઉય•જે તેવોની•દોલત•તેવોને•કાંઈ• ફાએદો•કરતી•નથી* અને• ખરેખરી• વાત•એછેજે• પેહેલા•જારજનાં•વખતમાં• દોલત• મેલવવાનાં•મનશૂબાથી•ઘણી•રીતે•એ•દેશમાં•દોલત•આવી•પંણ•એ•દોલતથી•ઘણો•ખરચ•અથવા• લોભ•તથા•ઘણીએક•લુછાઈ•અને•પાપ•થાએઓ*

પાહાદશા•શ્રી•હાંનોવરનો• માલેક•હતો•અને•શ્રી• ઈંગલેંડનો બી•પાહાદશા•હતો•માંટે• તેહેને•કોઈ•વેલા•હાંનોવરનાં• દેશમાં•જવું• પડેઉં •અને•તાંહાં•જતો•હતો•એટલામાં• તે• આજારી• પડેઓ*તે• શમુદર•પાર•ઉતરીને•ગાડીમાં•બેશીને• આગલ•ચાલતો•હતો*એક•રાતે• તેણે•ઘણૂંજ• પેટ•ભરીને•ખાંણૂં•ખાધું•હતુ •અને•તે•શારી•પેઠે•તનદરોશત•દેખાઓ — તે•શૂતો•અને•બીજે•દીને•શહવારનાં•શફર•કરવા•નીકલેઓ*આશરે•આઠ•નવ•વાગતે• તેણે• પોતાની•રથ•ઉ

ળી•રખાવી*તુરત•માલંમ•પડેઉજે• હેનો•એક•હાથ•કાંમથી•રદ•થાઇ ગીઓ*હેની•શંગાથે•એક•શખશ•હતો•તેણે• હેનો•હાથ• પોતાનાં• હાથમાં•લેઇને•મશરેઓ•જે•તેથી•લોહી•દોડીને• ફરીવલે* પંણ•તેથી•કાંઇ•શારૂં•થાઉં•નહી• તેવારે•વઇદ•જે•પછવાડે•ઘોડા•ઉપર• આવતો•હતો• તેહેને•બોલાવેઓ•અને•તેણે• તે•ઉપર• દારૂ•મશરેઓ*પછે•જલદીથી•પાહાદશાની• જીભ•શૂજવા•લાગી•અને• પાહાદશાઈ પોતાને• પાશેનાં•શેહેરમાં•જલદીથી•લઇ•જવાનો• હોકંમ•આપેઓ• એટલીજ•તાકાત• તેહેનાં•આંગામાં•રહી• હતી* તે•બીજે•દીને•શહવારનાં•આશરે• અગીઆર•વાગતે•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ• તેવારે• તેહેની•અરશઠ•વરશની•ઉમર•હતી•અને• તેણે• તેર•વરશ•રાજ•ચલાવેઉં*હેનું મરંણ•શતરશેને•શતાલીશનાં•વરશમાં•થાઉં*

શવાલો*

આંન•રાંણીની•પછે•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાં• કોણે• પાહાદશાઇ•કીધી*

પેહેલો•જારજ•કીઆ• મુલકનો•વતની• હતો*

શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં• પાહાદશાઇ• ખાંનદાંન• શંગાથે• હેની• શીતરેહેની• શગાઇ• હતી*

શાવાશતે• તેહેને•શ્રી• ઈંગલંડનો•પાહાદશા•બનાવેઓ• અને• બીજા• જેમશનાં• છોકરાને• પરતો•મેલેઓ*

એ•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો• તેવારે• હેની• કેટલા•લરશની• ઉમર•હતી*

હેનાં•વખતમાં•લડાઇઓ•થાઈ•નહી•કે•શૂં*

હેનાં•વખતમાં•દાવો•ઉઠાવનારને•તખત•ઉપર•બેશાડવાની• કોઈએ•તજવીજ•કીધીકે•શૂં*

એ• તજવીજ•કીધામાં•કોંણ• લોકો•ઘણાંખરાં•શાંમેલ•હતાં*

દાવો•ઉઠાવનારની•તરફથી•શ્રી•શ્કાટલંડમાં•ફોજ•કોણે•એકઠીકીધી*

ઈંગલીશ•લોકોની •ફોજ•જે• તેહેની• શાંમને•થાઈ• તેહનો•શરદાર• કોણ•હતો*

તે•પછે• કોંણ•શરદાર•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાં• ફોજ•લઇ•આવેઓ•અને•તે ફોજ•કાંહાં•શૂધી•વધી*

એ•ફરીશાદ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•થાઓ*

•ફીશાદ•કરનારાઓમાંથી•કોઈને•ગારદંન•મારેઆકે•શું*

દખંણ•શમુદરનાં•મનશૂબાઆમાં•લારેનું•કશાંન•થાઉ•તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•થાઈઉં*

પાહ્દશાનું•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડમાંબી•મુલક•હતું•અને•શ્રી•જરમનીમાંબી હતું•કે•શું*

શ્રી•હાંનોવરનાં•પોતાનાં•રાજમાં•જવા•શારૂં•પાહ્દશા•નીકલેઆ•હતોકે•શું*

શ્રી•હાંનોવરની•મુશાફરી•કરતી•વેલા•શું•થાઈઉં*

પેહેલો•જારજ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ*

તેણે•કેટલા•વરશ•શુધી•રાજ•કીધું*

તે•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•તે•વખતે•તેહેની•કેટલા•વરશની•ઉમર•હતી*

LETTER XXXII.

MY DEAR BOY,

As I find you pay great attention to what I write to you, I must go on with my short History of England; though, now we come so near to our own times, and have therefore accounts so much more particular of all that is going on, I hardly know what to fix upon for your amusement that will come within the short compass of one of my letters.

George II., the son of George I., came to the throne in year 1727. He took Sir Robert Walpole for his principal minister, who had, indeed, been a leading character in the two former reigns. But I must not pretend to enter into the histories, or disputes, of the ministers and politicians of that day.

It was not long after George the Second began his reign, that war was declared against the Spaniards, which was chiefly carried on in their settlements in America. Then there was war with France, about which I do not now intend to enter into a particular account. Bu I must tell you of the rebellion of the year *forty-five*, when prince Charles, (the son of the old

Pretender,) assisted by the king of France, landed in Scotland, and endeavoured to excite a rebellion against the government of king George, and to get his own family restored to the throne. At one time, indeed, there seemed to be some chance of his success; and the country was in a state of great agitation. As soon as it was known that the young Pretender had landed, the king's troops were sent to oppose him: they met at Preston Pans, not far from Edinburgh; and the young Pretender, and his fierce highlanders, who had joined him, attacked the king's troops with such fury, that they soon put them to flight. The young adventurer was then received at Edinburgh, as if he had really been the heir to the throne. He continued there for some time, and lost, in idle show, the advantage which he had gained by the battle of Preston Pans. However, he at length consulted with his officers, and it was agreed that they should march into England; and, accordingly, they did march forward, the prince and his followers in highland dresses, till they actually got as far as Derby. When I was young, I remember to have conversed with several people who recollected the coming of prince Charles to Derby quite well, and the alarm that many people were in, to think that the rebels had got within little more than a hundred miles of London.

The young Pretender, however, entirely failed in this expedition. In truth, the officers in his army did little else but quarrel amongst themselves, and the prince could not keep them together: he was disappointed in his hopes of having others to join him, so that his affairs were reduced to a desperate condition, and he was obliged to march back again to Scotland, to do the best he could with his wild and discontented troops.

The duke of Cumberland, the king's son, was then sent in pursuit of him, but he did not overtake him till he got to a place called Culloden, in Scotland: here they came to an engagement. In the battle of Culloden, the duke of Cumberland gained a most complete victory over the rebels, slaughtering them in a most dreadful manner; and thus ended all the hopes of the young prince. After this, he wandered about the country, and was almost starved to death, for want of food and clothes; but he had many friends, who would not betray him, though they might have got very large sums for delivering him up to his enemies. At length he escaped, in a vessel, to France. He was dressed in a short coat of black frieze, threadbare, over which was a common highland plaid, girt round with a belt, from which hung a pistol and a dagger. He had not changed his linen for many weeks; his eyes were hollow, his face pale, and his constitution greatly injured by hunger and fatigue. Several of the rebel lords and officers were executed; some of them were beheaded on Tower-hill, in London; others were hanged, drawn, and quartered, on Kennington-common; and some at York and Carlisle; and so ended this rebellion. Among the most distinguished of the noblemen who suffered, were lord Kilmarnock, lord Balmarino, lord Lovat, and lord Cromarty.

There was war during almost all the remainder of this king's reign. It was carried on against the French possessions in America, as well as in Europe. The French made an attack on the island of Minorca, in the Mediterranean sea. Admiral Byng was sent with a fleet to the relief of the place, and whilst he was considering how he could assist the English, the French fleet appeared; and the admiral seemed to be in great difficulties to know how to act. Whenever an enemy's fleet appears, the English, you Know, generally are able to give a good account of it. It was not so here, however: the Admiral let the French fleet escape from him. He was afterwards tried by a court martial, and was shot on board a man of war, at Portsmouth, for not having done his utmost to destroy the enemy.

I must tell you about the *black-hole*, at Calcutta. One of the Indian chiefs made an attack upon the town of Calcutta, in the East Indies, which belonged to the English. He took the garrison, consisting of a hundred and forty-six men, prisoners.

These poor creatures, instead of receiving the usual treatment of prisoners, were all crowded together in a narrow prison, called the black hole, only about eighteen feet square; and this was in the burning climate of the East, so that the greater part of them died of suffocation; for, out of the hundred and forty-six which were shut up at night, there were only twenty-three found alive in the morning; and the greater part of these soon afterwards died of putrid fevers. The English, however, quickly regained possession of Calcutta, and made many other additions to their possessions in India.

You have heard of the death of Genergl Wolfe. This happened in America. The young general, who was only thirty-five, was carrying on a most desperate attack against the town of Quebec; and, after having overcome many dreadful difficulties, he received a shot in the wrist. He did not, however, leave his post, but wrapped his hand in his handkerchief, and went on, giving his orders as if nothing had happened; and, whilst leading forward his grenadiers with their bayonets fixed, another shot came and entered his breast. He fell, and, struggling in the agonies of death, and just expiring, he heard a voice cry, "They run!" upon which he seemed, for a momen, to revive; and, asking "who ran," was informed "the French:" he then sunk on the breast of the soldier who supported him: and his last words were, "I die happy:" words expressive of the deep interest which a general feels as to the success of his endeavours to benefit his country.

On the 25th of October, in the year 1760, the king was found by one of his servants, dying in his chamber, at Kensington Palace. He had risen at his usual hour, and had taken a walk, with some of his attendants, in Kensington Gardens. In a few minutes after his return, when he was alone in his room, he was heard to fall down upon the floor. The noise of this brought a servant into the apartment,—and the king died a few minutes afterwards. This was in the thirty-third year of his reign, and in the seventy-seventh of his age.

QUESTIONS.

In what year did George the Second come to the throne?

Whom did he take for his prime minister?

Had sir Robert Walpole been in power during any of the preceding reigns?

Were there any wars during the reign of George the Second?

Against whom?

What is meant by the rebellion in the year *forty-five*?

What battle was fought in which the young Pretender was successful?

How was he received at Edinburgh?

What was resolved upon, in a council of war, as to the prince's future plans?

Did the prince and the Scotch rebels come into England?

How far did they advance?

Were there disputes and dissensions among the highland chiefs and officers who marched with the prince?

Did many people join him?

Did he march back to Scotland?

Who was then sent to oppose him?

What great battle did the duke of Cumberland fight, and which side was victorious?

What became of prince Charles after the battle of Culloden?

Can you relate the circumstances of his escape?

Did any of the Scotch lords suffer for joining in this rebellion?

Do you remember their names?

Did foreign wars continue during this reign?

What island in the Mediterranean sea did the French attack?

What English admiral was sent to the relief of this island?

Relate what you know about admiral Byng.

Can you remember the circumstances of the sufferings of the English soldiers in the black hole at Calcutta?

Where was general Wolfe killed?

What do you remember of the circumstances of his death?

In what year did king George the Second die?

Where did this occur, and what were the circumstances attending his death?

How long had he reigned?

What was his age?

પતર• ૩૨

માહારા• પેઆરા• છોકરા•

મહને• માલંમ• પડેયછે• હું• જે• તમને• લખી• મોકલુચ• તેઉપર• તમે ઘણું• પેઆંન• ધેરોચ• માંટે• હું• માહારી• શ્રી• ઇંગલંડ• દેશની• સુખતેશ

ર•વારતા•આગલ•ચલાંઉચ•અને•હવે•આપરે• પોતાનાં•વખતની•પાશે•આવેઆય•અને•તેટલાશારૂ•શવલી•બીનાનાં•ચોકશ• હેવાલોછે• તોબી•માહારાં•એ• પતરની•ટુકરી•જગોમાં•તમીરૂ•મંન•મનાવા•શારૂં•શું•ચોકશ•લખુ•તે•મહને•માલંમ•પરતું•નથી*

પેહેલા•જારજનો•છોકરો•બીજો• જારજ• ૧૭૨૭ નાં•વરશરમો•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો*હેને• શર•રાબરટ•વાલપોલને • પોતાનો•પરધાંન•બનાવેઓ•એ•ધણી•આગાઉનાં•બંધે•રાજનાં• વખતમાં•મુખીઅશખશ•હતો*પણ•તેવખતનાં• મશલતીઆવો•તથા•પરધાંનોની•વારતા•અથવા•તેવોનાં•કજીઆ•ટંટા•વીશે•માહારે•બોલવું•ઘટેનહી*

બીજો•જારજ•રાજ•કરવા•લાગો• તેપછે•થોડેક•દીવશે•ઈશરેનીઆરડ•લોકો•શંગાથે• લડાઈ•કરવાનો•ઇકરાર•કીધો•તે•લડાઈ ઘણૂ•કરીને•શ્રી•એમેરીકામાં• તેવોનાં•વશાવેલાં•મુલકમાં•ચાલી*તેપછે શ્રી•ફ્રાંનશ•શંગાથે•લડાઈ•થાઈ• તેવીશેનો• ચોકશ•હેવાલ•હુ•હવડાં• કેહીશ•નહી*પંણ•પીશતાલીશનાં•શનેનાં•ફીશાદવીશે•માહરે•તમને•કેહવું•જોઈએ—તે•વરશમાં•આગલા•દાવાદારનો•છોકરો•ચારલશ•શ્રી•ફ્રાંનશનાં•રાજાની•મદદથી•આવીને•ઇશકાટલેંડમાં•ઉતરેઓ અને•તેણે•જારજ•પાહાદશાની•હુકુમતને•નહી•માંનીને•લોકો•પાશે•ફીશાદ•કરાવેઓ•અને•પોતે•તખત•ઉપર•બેશવાની•કોશેશ•કીધી* એ•વેલા• હેવીબી•આશા•થાઈજે•કદાચ•હેને પોતાનાં•કાંમમાં•ફતેહ થાશે•અને•આખાંદેશમાં•ઘલરાટ• પેદાથાઓ*એ•જુવાંન•દાવો•કરનાર•આવી•ઉતરેઓ• હેવું•માલંમ•પડતાંજ•પાહાદશાની•ફૌજ•તેહેની શાંમને•થાવાશારૂ•મોકલાવી•એ•બંધે• ફૌજ•શ્રી•એડીનબરોની•પાશે•પરેશટન•પાંનશ•નાંમની•જગો•આગાલ•એકઠી•થાઈ•અને•જુવાંન•દાવાદારે•તથા•તેહેનાં•દેશનાં•જોરાવર•પાહાડમાં•રેહેનારા•લોકો•જેવો હેને•આવી•મલેઆ•હતા•તેવોએ•પાદશાહની•ફૌજ•ઉપર•હેવો•તો•જોરથી• હોમલો•કીધોજે•તેવોને•તુરત•નહશારી•મેલેઆ*પછે•જાણે કે•એ•જવાંન•દાવાદાર• પોતેજ•તખતનો•ખરો•વારશ•હોએ• તેમ•હેને શ્રી•એડીનબરોમાં•લીધો*એ•ધણી•થોડીએ• મુદત•શુધી•તાંહાંજ•રહો•અને•પરેશટન•પાંનશ• વાલી•લડાઈથી•જેહેને•નરે• થાઓ•હ

તો•તે•ઈણે•ફ્રોકટ•દખદખામાં•ખોઆ* પંણ•અંતે•તેણે•પોતાનાં શરદારોની•મશલત•લીધી•અને•હેવું•ઠેડવેઉજે•તેવોને•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડ માં•જાવું•માંટે•તેવો•આગલ•ચાલેઆ•શાહાજાદાઈ•તથા•તેહેનાં•લોકો ઈ•પાહાડનાં•રેહેનારા•લોકોનો•પોશાક•પેહેરેલો•હતો•અંતે•તેવો શરવે•છેક•શ્રી•ડરબી•શુધી•આવી•પોહોચેઆ* જેવારે•હું•જવાંન• હતો•તેવારે•મહને•ઈઆદછેજે•મે•કેટલાઈક•લોકો•શંગાથે•વાત•કીધી•હતી•અને•ચારલશ•શાહાજાદો•શ્રી•ડરબીમાં•આવેઆ•તેવાત• તેવોને•શારીપખે•ઈઆદ•હતી•અને•શ્રી•લંડનની•ઈકશોથી•થોડાઈક•વધતા•માઈલ•છે•તાંહાં•શુધી•ઈલશકર•આવી•પોહોચેઉ•તે•જોઈને•ઘણાંઈક•લોકો•ચલરાતાં•હતાં*

પણ•ઈ•જવાંન•દાવાદાર•ઈ•લડાઈમાં•બીલકુલ•હારેઆ*ખરેખર•હેની•ફોજનાં•અમલદારોઈ•પોતપોતામાં•કજીઆ•કીધા•શીવાઈ•બીજુ•કાંઈ•કીધુ•નહી•અને•શાહા•જાદાથી•તેવોને•ઈકમત•રખાઈ•શકાઆ•નહી•બીજા•(અમલદારો•)હેને•આવી•મલે•હેવી•ઈણે•આશારાખીહતી•તેવો•આવેઆ•નહી•તેથી•હેનુંકાંમ•નાઉમેદ•થાઈગીઉ•અને•હેને•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલેંડમાં•પાછું•જવું•પડેઉકે•પોતાની•જંગાલી•તથા•નારાજ•થાઈલી•ફોજમાં•જેકાંઈ•શારૂ•થાઈ•તે•કરે*

પાહાદશાનો•છોકરો•શ્રી•કંમબરલેંડનો•ડીઉક•હતો•તેહેને• હેને•પકરવાશારૂ•હેની•પછવાડે•મોકલેઆ• પંણ•શ્રી•ઈશકાટલેંડમાં•શ્રી•કલોડન•નાંમની•જગોછે•તાંહાં•જઈપોહોચેઆ•તાંહાં•શુધી•તે•મલેઆ•નહી*ઈ•જગોઆગલ•તેવોવચે•ઈક•લડાઈ•થાઈ*શ્રી•કલોડનની•લડાઈમાં•શ્રી•કમબરલેંડનો•ડીઉક•શતરૂ•ઉપર•ફતેહપાંમેઆ•અને•તેવોને•ઘણીજ•ભઈઅંકાર•રીતે•કાપી•નાંખેઆ•અને•તે•જવાંન•શાહાજાદાની•શઘલી•આશા•હેવી•રીતે•નશટ•થાઈ•ગઈ*ઈપછે તે•શાહાજાદો•મુલકમાં•ભટકતો•ફરેઆ•અને• ખોરાકી•તથા•પોશાકી•નહી•મલેઆને•લીધે•ભુખે•નજદીક• મરીજવાપર•આવેઆ•હતો• પણ• તેહેનાં•ઘણાંઈક•દોશદારો•હતા•જેવો•હેને•દગો•દેવાને•ચાહાતા•નહી•હતા•જોકે•અગરજો•તેવોઈ•હેને•હેનાં•દુશમનોને•હવાલે•કીધો•હતેતો•તેટલાશારૂ•તેવોને•ઘણાંજ•પઈશા•મલતે*અંતે•ઈક•

વાંહાંણમાં•બેશીને• તે•શ્રી•ફરાંનશ•દેશમાં•નાહાશીગીઆ*એણે•એક કારી•કાંમરીનો•ઘશાઈગીએલો• ટુકો•ડગલો•પેહેરેઓ•હતો• તે•ઉપર•એક•હલકો•પાહાડનો•પેહેરવાશ•હતો•તેઉપર•એક•કમરબદ•બાંધેલો•હતો•અને• તે•કમરબંદનીશાથે•એક•પીશટોલ•તથા•કટાર•લટકતી•હતી * એણે•ઘણાંએક•અઠવાડીઆં• થઆં•પોતાનાં•કપડાં•બદલેઆં•નહી•હતાં• હેની•આંખ•માંહે• પેશીગએલી•હતી• તથા•હેનો•ચેહેરો•ફીકો•થાઈ•ગીઓ•હતો•અને•ભુખ•તથા• થાકને•લીધે• હેનાં•શરીરને•ઘણીજ•હાંણી• પોહોચી•હતી*કેટલાએક• બલવો•કરનારા•અમીરો•તથા•અમલદારોને• મારી•નાંખેઆ•તેહેમાંનાં• કેટલાએક•શખશોને•શ્રી•લંડનમાં•ટાવરહીલ•નાંમની•જગો•ઉપર• ગારદન•મારેઆ•બીજાવોને• કેનીગટનનાં• મેદાંન•ઉપર•તથા• શ્રી• ઈઆરકમાં•તથા•શ્રી• કારલાઈલમાં• શૂલી•દીધા•અને•કાપીને•કકડા•કીધા• હેવી•રીતે•એ•બલવાનું •શેવટ•આવેઉં *નાંમીચા•અમીરો•ગારદંન•મારેઆગીઆ•તેહેમાં•લારડ•કીલમારનાક• તથા•લારડ•બાલમેરીનો•તથા•લારડ• લોવાટ•તથા•લારડ•કલોમારટી•નાંમનાં•શખશો•હતા*

એ•પાહાદશાનાં•બાકીનાં•આખાં• રાજમાંબી•લડાઈ•ચાલી*તેલડાઈ• શ્રી•એમેરીકામાં•ફરેંચ•લોકોનાં• દેશહતાં•તાંહાં• •તથા•શ્રી•ઈઉરોપમાં•થાઈ* મેડીટરેનીઅનનાં•શમુદરમાં•શ્રી•મીનોરકાનો•ટાપુછે• તેઉપર•ફરેંચ•લોકોએ•હોમલોકીધો*તે•ટાપુને•મદત•કરવા•શારુ•બીંગ•નાંમનાં•દરીઆઈ•અમલદારને•વાંહાંણોની•ફોજ• લઈને• મોકલેઓ• અને•ઈગલીશ• લોકોને•શીતરેહે•મદત•કરવી• તેહેનો•એ•ધાણી વીચાર•કરતો•હતો•એટલામાં ફરેંચ• લોકોની•દરીઆઈ•ફોજ•આવી• પોંહોચી• અને• તે•અમલદાર•ઘભરાઓ• કે•હવે• કેમ•કરવુ *તમે•જાંણોચ• કે•જેવારે• કોઈ•શતરુની• દરીઆઈ•ફોજ•આવીને•ઉભી• રહેચ તેવારે•ઈગલીશ•લોકો•તેહેને•હમેશાં•શારો•જવાબ• દેઈ•શકેચ*પણ•એ•વખતે•તેમ•થઉ•નહી — પેલા•દરીઆઈ•અમલદારે•ફરેંચ•લોકોની•ફોજને• પોતાનાં•હાતમાંથી•જવાદીધી*પછે• આદાલતની•શજા•તરીને•તેહેનો•ઈનશાફ•કીધો•અને• તેણે•દુશમનને•મારવાની•મેહેનત•લીધી•નહી•એટલા•શારું • તેહેને• શ્રી• પોરટશમાઉથનાં•બંદરમાં•એક•મનવા†ર•ઉપર•ગોલાથી•મારી•નાંખેઓ*

†એટલેજે•લડાઈનું•વાંહાંણ*

શ્રી•કલકતાની•અનધારી•ઓરડી•વીશે•હુંતમને•કહુચ*શ્રી•હીનદોશતાંનનાં•એક•શરદારે•ઉગામેંણ•હીનદોશતાંનમાં•શ્રી•કલકતા•ઉપર•હોમલો•કીધો•તે•શેહેર•ઈંગલીશ•લોકોનું•હતું*એ•શેહેરજારવવાને•વાશતે•હેમાં•એકશો•છેતાલી•આદમી•હતાં•તેવોને•કેદ•પકડી•લીધા*એ•બીચારા•આદમીઓને•બંધવાઓની•પેઠે•રાખેઆને•બદલે•તેવોને•શઘલાવોને•એક•શાંકરી•અને•આશરે•અઢાર•ફુટ•ચોરશ•ગુરંગા•હતી•જેહેને•અનધારી•ઓરડી•કરીને•કેહેછે•તેહેમાં•મુકેઆ•અને•એ•જગો•ઉગામેંણ•પરાંતની•બપુરાની•રૂતમાં•હતી•તેથી•ઘણાંખરા•બંધવા•ગુગારાઈને•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•કાંએજે•એકશો•છેતાલીશ•શખશોને•રાતને•વખત•કેદ•કીધા•હતા•તેહેમાં•શવાર•શૂધી•તેવીશ•શખશો•જીવતા•રહ્યા• તેહેમાંથીબી•ઘણાંખરા•તાપ•આવેઆથી•વેહેલાજ•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•તોપંણ•ઈંગલીશ•લોકોએ•શ્રી•કલકતુ•તુરત•પાછુ•લીધું•અને•હીનદોશતાંનમાં•પોતાનાં•મુલકોને•ઘણાંજ•વધારેઆં*

ઉલપ•નાંમનાં•શરદારનાં•મરંણ•વીશે•તમોએ•શાંભલેઉંચ*એ•ધણી•શ્રી•એમેરીકામાં•ગુજરેઆ*એ•જવાંન•શરદાર•પાંતરીશ•વરશની•ઉમરનો થાઓ•હતો•અને•શ્રી•કીઉબેકનાં•શેહેર•ઉપર•તારે•ગોહોટો•હોમલો•કરતો•હતો•અને•ઘણીએક•મુશકેલીઅત•પાર•કીધાપછે•તેહેને•હાથનાં•પોહોચામાં•ગોલી•વાગી*તોપંણ•તેણે•પોતાની•જગો•છોડી•દીધી•નહી•પણ•તેણે•પોતાનાં•હાથ•ઉપર•રૂમાલ•વીટારીને•જાંણે•કે•કાંઈ•વાગું•નહી•હોએ•તેમ•હોકમ•આપેઓ•ગીઓ•અને•જેવારે•પોતાનાં•કશાએલા•ઉનચા•શીપાઈઓને•બાગનેટ•ચડાવેલી•બંનદુકો•શૂધાં•આગલ•ચલાવતો•હતો•એટલામાં•બીજી•ગોલી•આવીને•તેહેની•છાતીમાં•લાગી*તે•પડેઓ•અને•મરવા•લાગો•તેવારે મરતી•વખત•તેણે•એક•આવાજ•શાંભલેઓ•કે•“તેવો•નાહાશેચ•” અને•તેણે•પુછેઉંજે•“કોણ •નાહાશેચ” તેવારે•તેહેને•ખબર•આપીજે• “ફ્રેંચ•લો”કો•નાહાશેચ•પછે•તેહેને•જે•શાપાઈ•ધરી•રહેઓ•હતો•તેહેનાં•આંગા•ઉપર•પડી•ગીઓ• અને•તે•મરા•વેલા•છેલા•એ•શબદો બોલેઓ•જે•“હું•શૂખી•થાઈને•મરુચ”—

હરેક•શરદાર•પોતાનાં•દેશનું•શારૂ•કરવાને•કેહેવો•ચાહેય•તે•એ•શબદોથી•જણાઇ•આવેય*

શ્રી•કેનશીંગટનનાં•મેહેલમાં•પાદશાહને•હેનાં•એક•ચાકરે•૧૭૬૦•નાં•વરશમાં•તારીખ• ૨૫ મી•અકટોબરને•દીને• મરતાં•જોઇઓ*પાદશાહ•પોતાને•હમેશાંને•વખતે•ઉઠેઓ•હતો•અને•પોતાનાં•ચાકરો•શાથે•શી•કેનશીગટનનાં•બાગોમાં•ફરેઓ*તાંહાંથી•પાછો•આવેઆની•થોડીક•મીનીટ•પછે•પોતાનાં•ઓરડામાં•એકલો•હતો•તેવારે•પાદશાહને•ભોંય•ઉપર•ટુટી•પડેઆનો•આવાજ•શાંભરાઓ* તે•ધમકારો•શાંભડેઆથી•તે•ઓરડામાં•એક•ચાકર•આવેઓ•અને•પછે•થોડીક•મીનીટે•પાદશાહ•મરંણ•પાંમેઓ* એણે•તેવીશ•વરશ•શુધી•રાજ•કીધું•અને•હેની•શીતોતેર•વરશની•ઉમર•હતી•તેવારે•એ(માઠો•)બનાવ•બનેઓ*

શવાલો*

બીજો•જારજ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો*

તેણે•કોણને•પોતાનો•વડો•પરધાંન•બનાવેઓ*

આગાઉનાં•કોઇ•પાદશાહનાં•વખતમાં•રાબરટ• વાલપોલને•પરધાંનપણું•મલું•હતું•કે•શું*

બીજા•જારજનાં•વખતમાં•કાંઇ•લડાઇઓ•થાઇ•કે•શું*

કોણની•શંગાથે•થાઇ*

પીશતાલીશનાં•શનેનાં•બલવાનો•અરથ•શું•થાએય*

કેઇ•લડાઇ•થાઇકે•જેહેમાં•તે•જુવાંન•દાવાદાર•ફતેહે•પાંમેઓ*

તેહેને•શ્રી•એડીનબરોમાં•શી•તરેહે•લીધો*

શાહા•જાદાનાં•હવે•પછેનાં•મનશૂબા•વીશે•લડાઇની.શભામાં•શું•ઠડવેઉં*

શાહાજાદો•તથા•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલેંડનાં•બલવો•કરનારા•લોકો•શ્રી•ઇંગલેંડમાં•આવેઆકે•શું*

તેવો•કાંહાં•શુધી•આગલ•ચાલેઆં*

એ•શાહાજાદાની•શંગાથે•પાહાડનાં•શરદારો•તથા•અમલદારો•

ને•હતા•તેવોમાં•કજીઆ•ટંટા•થાઆકે•શૂં*

ઘણાં•લોકો•શાહાજાદાને•આવી•મલેઆકે•શૂં*

શાહાજાદો•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલેંનડમાં•પાછો•ગીઓકે•નહી*

તેવેલા•હેની•શાંમને•થાવા•શારું•કોણને•મોકલેઆ*

શ્રી•કંમબરલેંડનાં•ડીઉકે•કેઇ•લડાઇ•કીધી•અને•કોણ•જીહીતેઉ*

શ્રી•કલોડનની•લડાઇ•થાઆ•પછે•ચારલશ•શાહાજાદાનું•શૂં•થાઉ*

એ•ધાણી•નાહાઠો•તેહેની•ખીના•કેહો*

એ•બલવામાં•શ્રી•ઇશકાટલેંડનાં•અમીરો•શાંમેલ•થાઆ•તેટલા•શારું•તેવોને•મારેઆકે•શૂં*

તેવોનાં•નાંમ•તમને•ઇઆદ•છેકે•નહી*

એ•પાહાદશાનાં•વખતમાં•પરદેશમાંબી•લડાઇઓ•ચાલીકે•શૂં*

ગેડીટરેનીઅંનનાં•શમુદર•મધેનાં•કીઆ•ટાપુ•ઉપર•ફરેંચ•લોકોએ•હોમલો•કીધો*

એ•ટાપુને•મદત•કરવા•શારું•કીઆ•ઇંગલીશ•દરીઆઇ•અમલદારને•મોકલેઓ*

બીંગ•નાંમનાં•દરીઆઇ•અમલદાર•વીશે•તમે•જે•કાંઇ•જાંણતા•હોએ•તે•કેહો*

શ્રી•કલકતા•મધેનાં•હંનધારી•ઓરડીમાં•કેદ•કીધેલા•ઇંગલીશનાં•શીપાઇઓની•વીપતની•ખીનાં•તમને•ઇઆદછેકે•શૂં*

ઉલફ•નાંમનો•શરદાર•કાંહાં•મારેઓ•ગીઓ*

તેહેનાં•મરણની•હકીગત•તમને•ઇઆદછેકે•શું*

બીજો•જારજ•પાહાદશા•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરણ•પાંમેઓ*

કીએ•ઠેકાંણે•એ•બનાવ•બનેઓ•અને•હેનાં•મરણની•બીના•શૂં છે*

તેણે•કેટલાં•વરશ•શૂધી•રાજ•કીધું*

તેહેની•ઉમર•કેટલા•વરશની•હતી*

LETTER XXXIII.

MY DEAR BOY,

In our last letter we proceeded as far as the death of George the Second, and we must now come to the reign of George the Third. The reign of this good king was the longest we read of in our history; he came to the throne in the year 1760, and continued, as you know, till the year 1820. I am old enough to remember a good deal of what happened in the early part of George the Third's reign; and most of us remember his latter days. The great length of this reign, and the knowledge which we have of all the particulars, would make a regular account of it a great deal too long for one of my letters to you; I must therefore be content with sending you such portions as seem most worthy of your notice.

You must temember that George the Third was not the *son* of George the Second, but the *grandson;* his father, Frederick prince of Wales, having died before the old king. George the Third was married, on the 8th of September, 1761, to a German princess. This was the excellent queen Charlotte, who lived to a great age, and died, as we all remember, but a little while before the king. But I must now consider what are the principal subjects which I must attempt to touch upon.

It was about the year 1766, that the power of the English in the East Indies began to increase in a wonderful manner under lord Clive.

About the year 1768, we hear of the commotions excited by the election of John Wilkes for Middlesex; he seems to have been an unsettled violent sort of man, and to have had great pleasure in raising disturbances.

In the same year, the Royal Academy in London was established by the king, to encourage skill and diligence among artists; and there is still an exhibition of pictures every year, in London, at Somerset House.

You have often heard of captain Cook; it was in this year that he set out on his voyage round the world. You know that the world is round—like an orange—so that if a person sets off in one direction, and goes straight forward, he will come, in time, to the place from which he set off. Captain Cook finished his voyage round the world in about three years.

In 1772 he made another voyage, and returned in 1775. About this time the American war broke out; and the first battle was fought between the English and the Americans. By this war we lost much of our power in America. I believe, however, we are quite as well without it. In the year 1776, the Americans declared themselves independent of the crown of England. General Washington was the great commander of the American army. In the year 1778, the French joined the Americans against the English. About this time died the earl of Chatham, who had been for many years a man of great weight and importance in the state. He was the father of Mr. Pitt, whom we all so well remember.

About the year 1779 the Spaniards acknowledged the independence of America, and joined them against us, so that we had to fight against France, and Spain, and America, all at the same time. In this year captain Cook, in his third voyage, was killed by the native savages of Owhyhee, an island in the Pacific Ocean. Look for this place in your map; and, indeed, for all the places you read of, if you do not know where they are,—and even if you *think* you do.

You have often heard me speak of the riots in the year 1780. The mob was supposed to have been collected together and encouraged by lord George Gordon, in opposition to the parliament, for having granted some indulgences to the Roman Catholics. This mob pulled down all the Romish chapels in and about London; tney also burned the prisons of Newgate, the Fleet, and the King's Bench, and many private houses besides; and they would probably have demolished the Bank, if they had not been stopped by the volunteers of the city of

London, and some regular troops which were called in. bout two hundred of the rioters were killed or wounded. Lord George Gordon was tried for this, but was acquitted, as it could not be proved that he had encouraged the mob to any of their savage violence.

In the year 1782, admiral Rodney greatly distinguished himself; he gained a signal victory over the French by sea, and was raised to the peerage, as a reward for his courage and success. In America things went on very unfavourably for us.

I have already mentioned to you the situation of Gibraltar, and told you when it was taken by us; you therefore know that it lies just at the south point of Spain, and that it has long been in possession of the English. The Spaniards, you may be sure, were most unwilling that we should have possession of this place, and, about the time we are writing of, they tried to take it from us; but they could not succeed, for general Elliot, the governor, with his boldness and his red-hot balls, put an end to all their attempts.

In the year 1783, peace was made with America. All parties seemed weary of this long war; and, as we were not likely to get any real advantage from it, the wisest and best thing we could do was to make peace.

The time of peace is the truly *happy* time for a nation; but it is accounts of wars and battles that fill our books of history, and perhaps make them the most *interesting*. There are many things, however, which excited great interest at the time they occurred, though you perhaps will not think them much worth your notice now. However, I will send you a few of them.

In 1784 there was a strong contest about the Westminster election, between Sir Cecil Wray and Mr. Fox.

I believe that Sunday-schools were first opened in the same year. The first of these was at Gloucester, established by an excellent gentleman, Mr. Raikes.

In 1786, a mad woman, named Margaret Nicholson, attempted to stab the king with a knife, as he was getting out of his carriage. This unhappy creature was confined in Bedlam, where she died only a few years ago.

About this time began the trial of Mr. Hastings, for supposed ill-conduct as gevernor of India. This trial lasted about nine years, and at last ended in his favour.

In the year 1788, the king was seized with a serious illness, so that he could not attend to the affairs of the nation. Happily, however, whilst arrangements were making about appointing the prince of Wales as regent, his Majesty recovered. There were rejoicings and a general thanksgiving for this good news all over the kingdom; and the king, like a pious Christian, went to St. Paul's Church to return thanks to the Almighty for having restored him to his family and his subjects. This was on the 23d of April, 1789.

About this time, the Revolution in France began. You have heard of the miseries which this occasioned and the dreadful cruelties which were practised. The people talked much of liberty and equality, and held some strange and dangerous opinions. The people in France, it is true, had not the liberty which we have in England; but the methods by which they attempted to better themselves only reduced them to a much worse state. There seemed to be nothing but force and violence; the government of a furious mob, at one time; and, at another, the dreadful cruelties of their National Assemblies. These things went on for several years, with first one man at their head and then another: but almost all of them were monsters of cruelty. At length they made Buonaparte first consul: they gave him the title of *consul*, because they did not like the name of *king*. Afterwards he was made *Emperor;* so that, with all their complaints against arbitrary power, and all their opposition to their king, and all their bloodshed, they were now under a more tyrannical government than ever they had been before the Revolution. There is a great deal to write about, during all the troubles in France; but, as these do not properly belong to English history, we need not attempt particularly to describe them. All nations, however, seemed so much interested in these things at the time, that we listened to the accounts which came over to us, as much as if they had belonged to our own country. You know that they beheaded their king, Louis the Sixteenth; this was in the year 1793. Soon afterwards, they also beheaded the queen, as well as other members of the royal family: and, in short, they pursued their dreadful work, as if their only object was cruelty and bloodshed. When these things began in France, there were people in England who seemed as if they wished to have a revolution here too; the miseries, however, which were experienced in France, taught us to be thankful for the blessings we enjoyed, instead of bringing troubles and distresses on ourselves for no purpose. I think we have quite as much liberty as is good for us: we have full liberty to do all that is right; and I am sure we ought not to wish for liberty to do wrong. And, as to equality, which during the French Revolution was so much spoken of, people are now grown wise enough to see that there can be no such thing. If we were all equal to-day, if all the property in the country were to be equally divided amongst us, we should not be all equal to-morrow. In a twelvemonth, an idle careless person would be in gaol, and a careful one would have doubled his property; so that there would presently be inequality again; there would presently be gentlemen, and there would be beggars.

You are aware that the nations of Europe did not look quietly on, and witness all the cruelties which were practised in France. They could not help seeing that their own states were in danger from the violence of the French, and the bad principles which they encouraged and spread abroad. The Austrians and the Prussians went to war with the French; and, about the year 1793, the English joined them. Since that time, till within the last few years, we have had nothing but war. It continued more than twenty years. There was, indeed, a short peace about the year 1802, which, however, lasted but a very short time, for Buonaparte was too ambitious to be long at peace. During this war, the French overran almost all Europe: however, Buonaparte was at length completely beaten by the duke of Wellington, at the battle of Waterloo, in the year 1815. If I were not afraid of making my letter too long, I could tell you about the great battles that were fought at sea, when the British sailors showed that, if they ever fought, they made sure of conquering. There was a great victory gained by Lord Howe, in the year 1794; and another, in the year 1797, by sir John Jervis, who was, in consequence of his bravery and skill, made lord St. Vincent. Then lord Duncan gained a grand victory over the Dutch fleet, in the same year; and in 1798, lord Nelson won the great battle of the Nile; and the same great and noble admiral lost his life, in 1805, at the battle of Trafalgar, after having completely beaten the French fleet. I could tell you of many more of our gallant sailors who fought like true Englishmen during this long war; but I must be short. Our soldiers, too, showed themselves equally brave: and, when you grow older, you will read in a larger history of England, of all that they did in the battles in Spain and other parts of the world; and we all know how nobly they fought at Waterloo. I must, however, end my letter.

Our excellent king, George the Third, died in the year 1820, after a long illness, during which his late gracious Majesty, George the Fourth, then prince of Wales, acted as regent. I think I must now conclude my history, as you know what happened during the late and present king's reign as well as I do. I think you have tried to remember what I have written; and my letters will serve as an introduction to any larger history that you may meet with hereafter.

I am, your affectionate Father.

QUESTIONS.

In what year did king George the Third come to the throne of England?

Whose son was George the Third?

Was his father ever king of England?

Whom did he marry?

In what year?

About what time did lord Clive add greatly to the power of the English in India?

Who was John Wilkes; and about what time was it that the country was agitated by commotions on his account?

In what year was the Royal Academy instituted in London?

In what year did captain Cook make his first voyage round the world?

How long was he in doing this?

Did he make a second voyage?

In what year?

How long was he absent?

About what time did the American war break out?

In what year did the Americans declare themselves independent of England?

Who was the great commander of the American armies?

What nations were opposed to us in the American war?

Did Captain Cook undertake a third voyage?

Did he ever return home?

Can you remember the circumstances of his death, and where he was killed?

In what year were the riots in London?

On what account?

Who was supposed to be principally concerned in these riots; and what steps were taken on the occasion?

In what year did lord Rodney gain a great victory over the French at sea?

Was an attempt made to take Gibraltar from the English?

Who was governor of Gibraltar at the time?

Was it taken from us?

In what year was peace made with America?

In what year was the contest between sir Cecil Wray and Mr. Fox for the representation of Westminster?

About what time were Sunday schools established; and by whom, and where?

In what year was the king's life attempted, by a mad woman; and What was her name?

When did the trial of Mr. Hastings begin; and how long did it last; and for what was he tried; and what was the result?

In what year was the king's illness?

About what time did the French Revolution begin?

In what year was Louis the Sixteenth, king of France, beheaded?

Did any of the nations of Europe go to war against the French; and which of them?

Can you remember who gained the principal naval victories during the war; and in what years?

When was the battle of Waterloo?

In what year did George the Third die?

પતર• ૩૩

મ્હારા•પેઆરા•છોકરા•

મ્હારાં•ગીઆં•પતરમાં•બીજા•જારજનાં•મરણ•શુધીની•બીનાં•મેં•કહી•હતી•અને•હવે•તરીજા•જારજની•બીના•મ્હારે•તમને•કેહેવી•જોઈએ* આપણાં•દેશની•વારતામાં•એ•શારા•પાહદશાએ•શઘલા•કરતાંને•લાંમબી•મુદત•શુધી•રાજ•કીધું—એ•પાહદશા• ૧૭૬૦ નાં•વરશમાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો•અને•એણે• ૧૮૨૦ નાં•વરશ•શુધી•રાજ•કીધું* તરીજા•જારજનાં•વખતમાં•પેહેલાંથી•શું•થાએઉં•તે•મ્હારી•મોહોટી•ઉમરને•લીધે•મહને•ઈઆદ છે•અને•એ•પાહદશાનાં•આખરનાં•વખતની•વાતબી•હમુને•ઘણાંએકને•ઈઆદ છે* હેનું•લાંમબી•મુદત•શુધી•રાજ•ચાલેઉં•અને•શઘલી•બીનાંની•આપણને•ખબર છે•તેથી•મ્હારાં•એક•પતરમાં•તે•શઘલી•બીનાં•લખું તો•ઘણું•લંબાંણ•થાએ•માંટે•જે•જે•વાતો•તમારા•જાંણવા•જોગ છે•તેજ•માતરે•હું•તમને•લખી•મોકલીશ*

તમને•ઈઆદ•રાખવું•જોઈએ•કે•તરીજો•જારજ•બીજા•જારજનો•છોકરો•હતો•નહી•પણ•તેહેનાં•છોકરાનો•છોકરો•હતો•અને•હેનો•બાપ•ફરેડરીક•નાંમનો•શ્રી•વેલશનો•શાહજાદો•પોતાનાં•બુઢ્ઢ પાહદશાની•આગમચ•થીજ•મરણ•પાંમેઓ•હતો* તરીજો•જારજ ૧૭૬૧ નાં•વરશમાં•તારીખ• ૮ મી•શપટેમબરે•શ્રી•જરમની દેશની•એક•શાહજાદી•શંગાથે•પરણેઓ* એ•ઓતાંમ•રાંણીનું•નાંમ•ચારલટ•હતું•અને•તે•ઘણીજ•મોહોટી•થાઈ•તાંહાં•શુધી•જીવતી•રહી•અને•આપણને•શરવેને•ઈઆદ છે•જે•પાહદશાની•થોડું•એક•આગમચ•તે•મરણ•પાંમી* પણ•કેઈ•કેઈ•મુખીઆ•બાબતો•વીશે•બોલવુંચ•તે•હેનો•મ્હારે•વીચાર•કીધો•જોઈએ*

આશરે• ૧૭૬૬ નાં•વરશમાં•ઉગમણ•હીનદોશતાંનમાં•ઈંગલીશ•લોકોની•હકુમત•લારડ•કલાઈવે•ઘણીજ•આગરત•જેહેવી•રીતે•વધારવા•લાગો*

આશરે• ૧૭૬૮ નાં•વરશમાં•શ્રી• મીડલશેકશનાં•પરાંતનો• રીતીજંદી•જાંનવીલકશ•નાંમનાં•ધણીને•ઠેડવેઓ•તેથી•લારે• ગુપ

ન•થાએઉ—હેવું•નજર•આવેચકે•એધણી•ઘણોજ•નઠારા•શલાવનો•હતો•અને•ગુફાંન•કરાવેઆમાં•ઘણો•ખુશી•થાતો•હતો*

તેજ•વરશમાં•પાહાદશાએ•કારીગર•લોકોનાં•ઉદેઓગને•આશરો•આપવાશારું•રોઆલ•એકાડેમી•નાંમની•પાહાદશાઈ•મદરેશા•બનાવી•અને•શાંમરશેટ•નાંમનાં•ઘરમાં•હવડાંબી•તશવીરો•દેખાડેઆમાં આવેચ*

તમે•કપતાંન•કુક•વીશે•ઘણીવાર•શાંભલેઉંચ—એ•વરશમાં•એ•ધણી•દુનીઆંની•આશ•પાશ•ફરવાની•શફર•કરવા•શારું•નીકલેઓ* તમે•જાંણોચકે•દુનીઆં•નારંગીની•માફક•ગોલછે•માંટે•અગરજો•કોઈ•શખશ•એક•તરફ•શીધો•ચાલેઓ• જાએતો•જે•જગોથી•નીકલેઓ•તાંહાં•પાછો•આવશે*કપતાંન•કુકે•આશરે•તરણ•વરશમાં•આખી દુનીઆંની•મુશાફરી•કીધી*

૧૭૭૨ નાં•શાલમાં•તેણે•બીજી•શફર•કીધી•અને• ૧૭૭૫ નાં•વરશમાં•પાછો•આવેઓ* એ•વખતે•શ્રી•એમેરીકામાં•લડાઈ•થાઇ•અને•ઇંગલીશ•તથા•એમેરીકાંન•લોકો•વચે•શરવેથી•પેહેલી•લડાઇ•થાઇ* એ•લડાઇને•લીધે•આપણી•ઓમેરીકામાં•ઘણી•એક•હકુમત•હતી•તે•જતી•રહી* તોપણ•હુંધારૂંચકે•તે•હકુમત•ગઇતો•શારૂં•થઉં* ૧૭૭૬ નાં•વરશમાં•શ્રી•એમેરીકાનાં•લોકો•શ્રી•ઇંગલેંડનાં•પાહાદશાનાં•તાબા•માંથી•છુટા•થાઆ* શ્રી•એમેરીકાની•ફોજનો•વાશીંગટન•નાંમનો•મોહોટો•શરદાર•હતો* ૧૭૭૮ નાં•વરશમાં•ફરેંચ•લોકો•શ્રી•એમેરીકાનાં•લોકોને•જઇ•મલેઆ•અને•ઇંગલીશ•લોકોની•શાંમે•થાઆ*એ•વખતે•શ્રી•ચાટાંમનો•અરલ•જે•ધણી•આએ•રાજમાં•ઘણું•વજન•તથા•કાબુ•ધરાવતો•હતો•તે•મરણ•પાંમેઓ* મીશતર•પીટ•જેહેને•આપરે•શઘલા•શારી•પેઠે•ઓલખીએચ•તેહેનો•એ•ધણી•બાપ•થાતો•હતો*

આશરે• ૧૭૭૯ નાં•વરશમાં•શ્રી•ઇશપેનનાં•લોકોએ•એમેરીકાને•આપ•અખતીઆર•દેશ•કબુલ•કીધું•અને•તે•દેશનાં•લોકોની•શંગાથે•મલીગીઆ અને•આપણી•શાંમે•થાએઆ• તેથી•આપણને•શ્રી•ફરાંનશ•તથા•ઈશપેન•તથા•શ્રી•એમેરીકાની•શરવેની•શંગાથે•એકેદમ•લડાઇ•

કરવી•પડી*ઈ•વરશમાં•પેશી•ફ્રીકનાં•માહા•શમુદર•મધ્યેનાં• શ્રી• ઓવાહી• નાંમનાં•ટાપુનાં• રેહનારા•જંગલી• લોકોઈ•કપતાંન•કુકને •ફરીઆની•તરીજ•શફર•કરતી•વેલાઈ મારી•નાંખેઓ*ઈ•જગોને •તમારા નકશામાં• શોધો• અને•તમે•જેકાંઇ•જગોનાં•વીશે• વાંચો•તે• શરવે• કાંહાં છે• તે•તમે•જાંણતા•નહી•હોઈ•અને• અગર•જો•તમે•શૂમારે • જાણતા•હોવો તો• તે•શરવે•જગો•તમારા•નકશામાંથી •ઢુંડીકાહાડો*

૧૭૮૦ નાં•વરશમાં બલવા•થાઈઆ• તેવીશેની•વાત•કરતાં • તમે•માહારેથી•ઘણી•વેલા•શાંભલીય*ઈ• લોકો• જે•ઈકઠા•થાઈઆ• તે ઈમ•ધારેઆ મે• આવેચજે•લારડ•જારજ• ગારડનનાં• ઉશકેરેઆથી•ઈખટાં•થાઈઆં•તે•પારલેમેનટે•રોમનકેથોલીક•લોકોને•કાંઇ•છુટ •આપી•ઈટલાશારૂં •તે•શભાની•શાંમને•થાવા•શારૂ•ઈખટાં• કીધાં• હતાં*ઈ શઘલા• લોકોઈ•શ્રી•લંનડંન•મધ્યેનાં •તથા•ઈ•શેહેરની•આશપાશનાં• શઘલાં• રોમંન•કેથોલીક• લોકોનાં• દેવલો• જે• હતાં• તે•ભાંગી• નાંખેઆં•અને• તેવોઈ•શ્રી•નીઊગેટની•તુરંગ• તથા •વાંહાંણોની•ફોજ•તથા પાદશાહી•ઈનશાફની• અદાલત•તથા• બીજાં•ઘણાંઈક•લોકોને•રેહવાનાં• ઘેરો• બાલી•નાંખેઆં•અને• અગર• જો•શ્રી•લંડન• શેહેરનાં•હીમત•વાલા•લોકોઈ• તથા•કાંઇઈક•ફોજ•બોલાવી• મંગાવી•હતે નહીતો• તેવોઈ•માંડવીનેબી•નાશકીધો•હતે*આશરે•બશો•બલવો •કરનારાઓ•મારેગા•ગીઆ• તથા• ઘાઈલ•થાઆ*ઈ હેને•વાશતે•લારડ•જારજ•ગારડનનો•નેઆવ•થાઈઓ•પંણ•તેહેનાં•ઉપર• તકશીર• ઠેડવી•નહી•શાથીજે• હેવું•શાબેત•થાઈ•શકેઉ•નહી• જે• તેણેઈ•તોફાંન•કરનારા• લોકો•પાશે• હેવો•ઘાતકી •જુલંમ•તથા• તોફાંન•કરાવેઉં*

૧૭૮૨ નાં• વરશમાં•રાડલી•નાંમનાં•દરીઆઈ• અમલદારે•મોહોટાં•નાંમીયાં•કાંમ•કીધાં—દરીઆમે.તેણે•ફરંચ• લોકોને•બીલકુલ•હરાવેઆ•અને• હેની• બાહાદુરી •તથા•ફતેહેનાં• ઈનાંમમાં• હેને અમીરનો •દરજો•બખશેઓ*શ્રી•ઈમેરીકામાં•આપણાં•હકમાં•ઘણું જ•નરશ•થાઈઉં*

શ્રી•જીબરાલટર•કીઈ.ઠેકાંણું છે.તે•મે •તમને•કહેઉંચ•અને•તે•આપરે•કેઈ•વખતે•લીધુ•તેબી• મે•કહેલું છે •માંટે•તમે•જાંણો છોજે• તે

કીલો• શ્રી•ઇશપેન• દેશની•દખણની•તરફ છે• અને•ઘણી• મુદત•થાઈ તે•ઇંગલીશ• લોકોનાં• હાથમાંછે*તમે• ખચીત• કરીને• જાંણજોજે•થી ઈશપેનનાં• લોકો•ચાહાતા•નહી•હતા•જે•એ•જગો•આપરા• હાતમાં•રેહે• અને•હું•જે•વખતની•વારતા• લખુંચ• તે•વખત• તેવોએ•આપરી• પાશેથી• તે•કીલો• લેવા•માંગેઆ•પણ• તેવો•તે•લેઇ•શકેઆ•નહી•કાંજે એલીઅટ•નાંમનો•શરદાર•તાંહાં•હાકેમ• હતો•તેણે• પોતાની•બાહાદુરીથી•તથા• અતશનાં•ગોલા•મારીને•તેવોને• હરાવેઆ•તેવોની• શરવે• મેહેનત• વેરથ•ગેઇ*

૧૭૮૩ નાં• વરશમાં•એમેરીકા• શંગાથે•શુલેહ•થાઈ*એ• દેશ• શંગાથેની•લાંમબી• લડાઇથી•શઘલાવો•થાકી• ગીઆ• અને•તેથી •આપણને•કશો•નફો• થાએ• હેવું•હતુ•નહી•માંટે•શરવેથી•શારું•એજ•હતુ• જે• શલાહ•કરવી*

શુલેહનો•વખત•રઇએતનાં•હકમાં• ઘણોજ•શારોછે•પણ• લડાઇઓ• તથા• કજીઆનાં•એહેવાલથી આપણી•વારતાની• કેતાબો•ભરાએછે•અને• તે•રલીઆંમણી•લાગેછે*તોપણ•બીજી• ઘણીએક• ચીજોછે •જે•તે•વખત• લોકોને•ઘણીજ•ગમી•પણ• કદાચ• તે• તમને• હવડાં• જાંણવા• જોગ•નથી• હેવું •તમે• ધારશો*તોપણ• તેહેમાંની•કાંઇએક•બીનાં• હું•તમને•લખી• મોકલુચ*

૧૭૮૪ માં•શર•શીશીલરાઇ•તથા•મીશતર• ફાકશને• શ્રી• વેશટમીનીશટરનાં• પરાંતનો•પરીતીનીદી• (એટલેજે• વકીલ•કરી• પારલેમેનટમાં•)મોકલવા•શારૂ•ઘણોજ• કજીઆ•થાએઆ*

હું•ધારુચકે•એજ•વરશમાં• રવીવારની• નીશાલો •પેહેલ• વેહેલી કાહાડી*તેમાં•શરવેથી• પેહેલી•નીશાલ•મીશતર• રેકશ•નાંમનાં•એક શારા•ધણીએ•શ્રી•ગલાશટરમાં•કાહાડી*

૧૭૮૬ નાં•વરશમાં•મારગારેટ•નીકોલશન•નાંમની•એક• ઘેલી• અશતરીએ• પાદશાહ•પોતાની•ગાડી•માંહેથી•બાહાર• નીકલતો• હતો તેવારે• તેહેને•છરી•મારવા•માંગી*એ•કંમબખત•બાઈડીને•શ્રી• બેડલાંમની•તુરંગામાં•કેદ•કીધી•તાંહાં•થોડાએક•વરશ•ઉપર• તે•મરંણ• પાંમી *

એ• વખત• મીશતર• હેશટીગશ•શ્રી• હીનદોશતાંનનો• ગાવરનર•

(હાકેમ•) હતો• તેવારે• તેણે• ખરાબી•કીધી•ઈટલા•શારૂ• તેહેનો નેઆવ•કીધો* હેની•છોડાણ• આશરે• નવ•વરશશૂધી•થાઈ•અને•અંતે• હેનાં• લાભમાં•ચુકાદો•થાઓ*

૧૭૮૮ નાં•વરશમાં•પાદશાહને•ભારે•મોહોટો• આજાર• થાઓ તેથી• તેહેનાંથી• પરજાનું•કાંમ•થાઈ•શકેઉં•નહી*પંણ•ભાઈગા•શારાં• તેથી•જેવારે•શ્રી•વેલશનાં•શાહાજાદા † ને•પાદશાહની•જગોઈ•કાંમ•ચલાવવા•શારૂં•ઠેરવવાનો•બંદોબશત•કરતા• હતા• ઈટલામાં•પાદશાહ•શારો•થાઓ*ઈ•ખુશખબર•શાંભલીને•આખારાજનાં• લોકો•ખુશાલી•તથા•શૂકરાંનાં•કરવા•લાગાં•અને•ઈક•ધરમી• કરીશટીઆંનની માફક•પાદશાહ•બી• પોતે• શેનટ•પાલનાં• દેવલમાં•જઈને• પોતે•ખોદાઈતાલાનાં•શૂકરાંનાં•કીધાં• જે• પાદશાહને• હેનાં•કુટંબ•તથા•રઈતને•વાશતે•જીવતો•રાખેઓ*તારીખ• ૨૩ મી•આપરેલ• ૧૭૮૯ ને દીને• પાદશાહ•શારો•થાઓ*

ઈ•વખતે• શ્રી•ફરાંશમાં•હાદેશો•શરૂ• થાઓ*ઈ•હાદેશાથી• શૂંશૂં•દુખ• અને•કેહેવો•ભયંકાર•જુલમ•થએાય• તે• વીશે•તો•તમે શાંભલેઉંચ*(તે• દેશનાં•) લોકો•છુટાપણાં•વીશે•તથા• બરોબરી• વીશે•ઘણું•બોલતા•હતા•અને• તેવોનાં•કાંઈ•અચરત• જેહેવા•તથા• ભયંકાર•વીચાર• હતા*ખરૂ છેકે•જે•છુટાપણું• આપણને•શ્રી •ઈંગલંડ માંછે• તેહેવું• છુટાપણું •શ્રી•ફરાંશનાં•લોકોને•હતું •નહી•પંણ•જે• પરકારથી•તેવોઈ•પોતાનું •શારૂ• કરવા• માંગેઉં • તે• પરકારથી• તેવોની• નરશી• અવશાતા• થાઈ*(તે•દેશમાં•) જુલંમ• તથા• જબરદશતી•વીનાં• બીજું • કાંઈ• હતું •નહી—કોઈ•વેલા• ગુપ્તાંની•અને• હલકા•લોકો•રાજનો• કારભાર•ચલાવતા• હતા•અને•કોઈ• વખત• તેવોની•પરજાની• શભા• ભારે•જુલંમ•કરતી• હતી*હેવો• કારભાર• કેટલાઈક•વરશશૂધી•ચાલેઓ — કોઈ•વખત•ઈક•શખશ•ઉપરી•થાઈ•અને•પછે•કોઈ•બીજો•શખશ•થાઈ•પંણ• તે•શરવે•જુલંમગાર•દુખ• દે

† પાદશાહનાં•વડા• છોકરાને•ઈંગાલીશ• લોકોઈ•શ્રી• વેલશનાં શાહાજાદાનો•ખેતાબ•આપેઓ છે•જે•દીનથી•ઈંગાલીશ•લોકોઈ•શ્રી•વેલશ•જીહીતી•લીધું•તે•દીનેથી•ઈ• ખેતાબ•આપેઓછે*

નારા•હતા*અંતે•તેવોઈ•બોનાપારટને•વરો•હાકમ•ઠડવેઓ•અને•તેવોઈ•તેહેને•વડા•હાકમનું•નાંમઆપેઉં•શાથીજે•તેવોને•પાદશાહનું•નાંમ•પશંદ•હતું•નહી*પછે•તેહેને• શેહેનશા•બનાવોઓ• માંટે•તેવો જુલંમગારની•હકુમત•વીશે•ફરીઆદ•કરતા•હતા•તથા•પોતાનાં•પાદશાહની•શાંમને•થાતાહતા•ને•ખુનાં•મરકી•કરતાહતા• તેહેને• ઠેકાંણે તેવોનું •હાદેશાની•અગાઉ•જે•રાજ•હતું •તે•કરતાંને•વધારે•જુલંમગાર•રાજ•થાઈઉં*શ્રી•ફરાંશમાં•જેજેહાદેશા• થાઆ• તે•વીશે•લખવાનું તો•ઘણું બી છે•પંણ• તે•બીનાં•કાંઇ•શ્રી•ઇંગાલંડની•વારતાને•લાગતી•નથી•માંટે•તેહેનું •ચોકશ•બઆંન•આપણને•કરવું •જોઇઈ નહી*તોપણ•શઘલી•કોમનાં•લોકો• તે•વખત•ઈ• વાતોને• હેવીતો•ચાહાતાં•હતાં•જે• તે•વાતો•જાંણીકે•આપણાં• પોતાનાં• દેશની• કોઈ તેહેવી•રીતે•આપરે•શાંભલી*તમે•જાંણોછ•કે•તેવોઈ•પોતાનાં•પાદશાહ•શોલમાં•લુઇશને• ૧૭૯૩ નાં• વરશમાં• ગારદન• મારેઆ* તેપછે•તરતજ• તેવોઈ•(ઈટલેજે•ફરેંચ• લોકોઈ•)રાંણીને•તથા•પાદશાહ નાં•પરીવાર•મધેનાં•બીજા•શખસોનેબી•ગારદંન•મારેઆ• અને•ટુકાંમાં કહુંછું જે•તેવો• પોતાનું •દેહેશત•ભરેલું •કાંમ•કરેઆ• ગીઆ• જાંણેકે તેવોની•મતલબ•ઘાત•તથા• ખુંન•કરવાની•હોઈ• તેમ*જેવારે•શ્રી•ફરાંશ•દેશમાં•હેવું•કાંમ•શરૂ•થાઉ• તેવારે• શ્રી•ઇંગાલંડમાં•પંણ•કેટલાઈક•લોકો•હતા•તેવો•અતરે•પંણ•રાજનું •ફેરફાર•કરવા•ચાહાતા•હતા પંણ•શ્રી•ફરાંશમાં• જેજે• ડુઆ•થાઆં• તે• જોઇને•આપણે•અમશકા•પોતાનાં•ઉપર•વીપત•તથા• ડુખ•પાડીઈ•તેહેને•બદલે•આપણ•જેકાંઇ•શૂખ• ભોગવીઈછ• તેહેને•શારૂ•આપણને• શૂકરાંનાં•કીધાં•જોઇઈ*હું•ધારૂછ•કે•જેટલું • છુટાપણું •આંપણાં•હકને•વાશતે•શારૂછે•તેટલી.આપણને•છુટછે•અને•જેકાંઇ•વાજબીછે•તે•શરવે•કરવાની•આપણને• છુટછે• અને•મહને• નીશચેછે•કે•ખોટુ• કરવાની•આપણને•છુટ•માંગવી•જોઇઈ•નહી*અને• શ્રી•ફરાંનશ•દેશનાં•હાદેશાની•વખત•બરોબરી•વીશે• લોકો•ઘણું જ•બોલતા• હતા• તે•બાબતમાં• લોકો•હવડાં•શેઆંણાં•થાઆંછ•તેથી•તેવોને• માલંમ•પડેછકે•હેનું•કાંઇ થાઇ• શકે•નહી* કાંઈજે• અંગારજો• આજે• આંપણે•શરવે ઈક•

બીજાની•બરોબરનાં•હોઇએ•અને•અઠારજો•એ•દેશ•મધ્યેની•શઘલી•માલમતા•આપણ•શરવે•બરોબર•વેહેચી•લીજીએ•તો•કાલે•આપણ•શરવે•એક•બીજાની•બરોબરનાં•રહીએ•નહી*બાર•મહીનાંમાં•કોઇ•આલશૂ•અને•બેપીકર•ઘણી•ગુરંગામાં•પડે•અને•કોઇ•શાખશ•શંભાલ•કરનારો•હોએ•તે•પોતાની•મીલકત•બમણી•કરે•માંટે•તરતજ•પાછી•વધઘટ•થાઇ•જાએ—તરતજ•લોકો•ભલાં•માંણશો•થાએ•અને•ગુરત•ભીખારીબી•થાઇ•જાએ*

તમે•જાંણોચકે•શ્રી•ઇઉરોપનાં•લોકોએ•મુગુમુગુ•જોઆ•કીધુ•નહી•અને•શ્રી•ફરાંશમાં•જેકાંઇ જુલંમ•થાઆ•તે•શઘલો•ચુપકીદા•રહીને•જોઆ•કીધો•નહી*તેવોએ•જોઉં•કે•ફરેંચ•લોકોનાં•જુલમ•તથા•તેવોએ•પરદેશમાં•ખોટી•ચાલ•ચાલવાનો•મારગ•દેખાડેઓ•તેથી•બીજા•લોકોનાં•મુલકને•દેહેશત•પેદા•થાઇ*શ્રી•આશટરીઆનાં•તથા•શ્રી•પરુશીઆ•દેશનાં•લોકોએ•ફરેંચ•લોકો•શંગાથે•લડાઇ•કીધી•અને•આશરે• ૧૭૯૩ નાં•વરશ•મે•ઇંગાલીશ•લોકોએ•તેવોને•(આશટરીઆંન•લોકોને•)મદત•કીધી*તેવખતથી•તે છેક•ગીઆં•થોડાં•વરશ•શૂધી•લડાઇ•શીવાએ•બીજુ•કાંઇ•થઉ•નહી*એ•લડાઇ•વીશથી•વધારે•વરશ•શૂધી•ચાલી* ૧૮૦૨ નાં•વરશમાં•થોડુંએક•શૂધી•શલાહ•રહી•ખરી•પંણ •બોનાપારટ•ઘણોજ•લોભી•હતો•માંટે•તેહેનાંથી•ઘણું•એક•શૂધી•શલેહમાં•રેહેવાઇ•શખાઇઉં•નહી*એ•લડાઇમાં•ફરેંચ•લોકો•શઘલા•શ્રી•ઇઉરોપનાં•ખંડમાં•ફરીવલેઆ•તોપણ•અંતે•વેલીગટનનાં•ડીઉકે•શ્રી•વાટરલોની•લડાઇમાં• ૧૮૧૫ નાં•વરશમાં•બોનાપારટને બીલકુલ•હરાવેઓ*અઠારજો•હું•બીહીતો•હોઉ•નહી•જે•માહારૂ•પતર•ઘણું•લાંમબુ•થાશે•તો•દરીઆમાં•જેજે•મોહોટી•લડાઇઓ•થાઇ•તેહેમાં•દરીઆ•ખેડનારા•ઇંગાલીશ•લોકોએ•હેવી•હીમત•દેખાડી•કે•જાંહાં•લડાઇ•કરે•તાંહાં•ખામખા•જીહીતે•તે•લડાઇઓની•શરવે•બીનાં•હું•તમને•કેહેતે* ૧૭૯૪ નાં•વરશમાં•લારડ•હાઉ•એક•ભારે•મોહોટી•ફતેહ•પાંમેઓ•અને• ૧૭૯૭ નાં•વરશમાં•શર•જાંન•જરવીશ•બીજી•ફતેહ•પાંમેઓ•તેહેની•હીમત•તથા•હોશીઆરીને•લીધે•તેહને•લારડ•શેનટવીનશંટનો•ખેતાબ•આપેઓ*

તેપછે•તેજ•વરશમાં•લારડ •ડંકને•ડચ•(એટલેજે•વલંદા•લોકો•)ની•
દરીઆઈ•ફૌજ•હરાવી•અને•મોહોટી•ફતેહ•પાંમેઆ•અને•૧૭૯૮
નાં•વરશમાં•લારડ•નેલશન•નાઈલ•નદી•આગલ•લડાઈ•જીતેઆ•અ
ને•એજ•મોટા•તથા•નાંમીચો•દરીઆઈ•અમલદાર•૧૮૦૫•નાં•વરશમાં
શ્રી•ટરાફલગારની•લડાઈમાં•ફરેંચ•લોકોને•શારીપખે•હરાવેઆપછે
પૌતે•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ*બીજા•ઘણાંએક•આપણાં•દરીઆનાં•પેડનાં
રાં•માંણશો•જેવો•એ•લાંમબી•લડાઈમાં•ખરા•ઈંગલીશ•લોકોની•માફ
ક•લડેઆ•તેવો•વીરો•હુ•તમને•કેહેતે•પંણ•એહેવાલ•માહારે•મુખ
તેશર•કરવો•જોઈએ*આપણાં•શીપાઈઓએબી•તેજ•પરમાંણે•બાહા
દુરી•દેખાડી•અને•એ•શીપાઈઓએ•શ્રી•ઈશપેનની•તથા•દુનીઆંનાં•
બીજા•દેશો•મધેની•લડાઈઓમો•શૂ•કીધું•તે•જેવારે•તમે•વધારે•
મોહોટા•થાશો•તેવારે•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડની•મોહોટી•વારતામાં•વાંચશો
અને•તેવો•શ્રી•વાટરલુ•આગલ•કેહેવી•બાહાદુરીથી•લડેઆ•તે•આપ
ણ•શરવે•જાંણીએચ*પણ•માહારે•એ•માહારાં•પતરનુ•શેવટ•લાવવુ•
જોઈએ*

આપણો•ઓતમ•પાદશાહ•તરીજો•જારજ•૧૮૨૦•નાં•વરશ
માં•ઘણાં•દીવશ•શૂધી•માંદગી•ભોગવેઆપછે•મરંણ•પાંમેઆ•તેમાં
દગીનાં•વખતમાં•મરનાર•પાહાદશા•ચોથો•જારજ•કેજે•તે•વખતે•શ્રી
વેલશનો•શેહેજાદો•હતો•તેણે•રાજનુ•કાંમ•ચલાવેઉ*હું•ધારૂચ•હ
વે•મહને•આએ•વારતા•પુરી•કીધી•જોઈએ•કાંએજે•મરનાર•પાહાદશા
હનાં•રાજમાં•તથા•હવડાંનાં•પાહાદશાનાં•વખતમાં•શૂં•થાએઉં•તે
તો•તમે•જાંણોચ•જેપરમાંણેકે•હું•જાંણુંચ•તેમ•તમુને•માલમ•છે*
હું•આશા•રાખુચજે•મે•જેકાંઈ•તમને•લખેઉંચ•તે•તમે•ઈઆદ•રા
ખેઉં•હશે•અને•હવેપછે•તમોને•વધારે•મોહોટી•વારતા•મલે•તેહે
નાં•માહારાં•પતરો•જેછે•તે•શારને•ઠેકાંણે•તમને•કાંમ•આવશે*

હુંછું•તમારો•માઆલુ•બાપ*

શવાલો*

તરીજો•જારજ•પાહાદશા•કીઆ•વરશમાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠો*

તરીજો•જારજ•કોણનો•છોકરો•હતો*

જેહેનો•બાપ•કદી•શ્રી•ઇંગલેંડનો•પાદશા•થાઓ•હતોકે•નહી*

તે•કોણની•શાથે•પરણિઓ*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•પરણિઓ*

કીઆ શાલમાં•લારડ•કલાઇવે•ઇંગલીશ•લોકોની•હકુમત•શ્રી•હીન્દોશતાંનમાં•વધારી*

જાંન•વીલકશ•નાંમનો•શખશ•કોણ•હતો•અને•કીઆ•વરશમાં•હેને•લીધે•ઝગારો•ફીશાદ•થાઓ*

શ્રી•લંનડંનમાં•કીઆ•વરશમાં•પાહાદશાહી•મદરેશા•નીકલી*

કપતાંન•કુકે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•દુનીઆંની•આશપાશ•ફરીઆવવાની•શફર•કીધી*

ઈ•કાંમ•કીધામો•તેહેને•કેટલો•વખત•લાગો*

તેણે•બીજી•વખતબી•શફર•કીધીકેશું*

તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•કીધી*

તે•કેટલા•વરશ•શુધી•ગેર•હાજેર•રહો*

આશરે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•શ્રી•ઈમેરીકાની•લડાઇ•શલગી•ઉઠી*

કીઆ•વરશમાં•શ્રી•ઈમેરીકાનાં•લોકો•શ્રી•ઇંગલેંડનાં•તાબામાંથી•છુટા•પડેઆનો•ઈકરાર•કીધો*

ઈમેરીકાંન•લોકોની•ફોજનો•વરો•શરદાર•કોણ•હતો*

શ્રી•ઈમેરીકાની•લડાઈને•વખત•કીઆ•કીઆ•લોકો•આપણી•શાંમણે•થાઈઆ*

કપતાંન•કુકે•તરીજી•વખતબી•દરીઆની•શફર•કીધી•કેશું*

તે•કદી•પાછો•ઘેર•આવેઓકે•નહી*

ઈ•ધાણી•મરણ•પાંમેઓ•તેહેની•બીનાં•તથા•ઈ•કેઈ•જગોઈ•મારેઓ•ગીઓ•તે•તમને•ઈઆદ•છેકે•શું*

કીઆ•વરશમાં•શ્રી•લંનડંનમાં•બલવો•થાઈઓ*

શાંનેવાશતે•થાઈઓ*

જોઆમેલે•કોણ•શખશ•ઈ•બલવામાં•ઘણોખરો•શાંમેલ•હતો•અને•તેવેલાઈ•શું•તજવીજ•કીધી*

કીઆ•વરશમાં•લારડ•રાડની•ફરેંચ•લોકો•શંગાથે•દરીઆની•લડાઈમાં•ફતેહ•પાંમેઓ*

ઈંગલીશલોકોની•પાશેથી•શ્રી•જીબરાલટરનો•કીલો•પાછો•લેવાની•તજવીજ•કોઇએ•કીધીકે•શું*

તે•વખત•શ્રી•જીબરાલટરનો•હાકેમ•કોણ•શાખશ•હતો*

તે•કીલો•આપણી•પાશેથી•છીનવી•લીધોકે•નહી*

શ્રી•એમેરીકાનાં•દેશ•શંગાથે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•શુલેહ•થાઇ*

શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરનાં•પરાંતનો•પીરીતીનીદી•કરી•મોકલાવાશારુ•શર•શીરીલરાઇ•તથા•મીશતર•ફાકશ•વચે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•કજીઆ•થાએઆ*

કીએ•વખતે•આઇતવારની•નીશાલો•કાહડી•તે•કોણે•કાહડી•અને•તે•કાંહાં•કાહડી*

કીઆ•વરશમાં•કીએ•ઘેલી•અશતરીએ•પાહાદશાનો•જાંન•લેવા•માંગેઆ•તે•બઇરીનું•નાંમ•શું*

મીશતર•હેશટીંગશની•છાંડણ•કેવારે•શરૂ•થાઇ•અને•તે•કાંહાંશુધી•ચાલી•અને•શાશારૂ•હેની•છાંડણ•થાઇ•અને•તેહેનો•ચુકાદો•શુ•થાએઆ*

પાહાદશા•કીઆ•વરશમાં•આજારી•પડેઆ*

કીઆ•વરશમાં•શ્રી•ફરાંનશ•દેશનો•હાદેશો•શરૂ•થાએઆ*

શ્રી•ફરાંશદેશનાં•પાહાદશાસોલમાં•લુઇશને•કીઆવરશમાં•ગારદનમારેઆ*

શ્રી•ઇઉરોપનાં•બીજા•કોઇ•લોકોએ•ફરેંચ•લોકો•શગાથે•લડાઇ•કીધી•અને•તેવોનાં•નાંમ•શુ*

તમને•ઇઆદ•છેકે•એ•લડાઇમાં•દરીઆમાં•ઘણીખરી•ફતેહ•કોણે•મેલવી•અને•તે•કીઆ•વરશમાં•ફતેહ•થાઇ*

શ્રી•વાટરલોની•લડાઇ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•થાઇ*

તરીજો•જારજ•કીઆ•વરશમાં•મરણ•પાંમેઆ*

ENGLISH KINGS.

The following list of the kings of England shows that the present King of England is connected, by blood, with William the Conqueror, and that *every* king of England, since the conquest, has been so connected. Our young readers may be glad to see all these kings in one point of view, and may have an opportunity of learning them by heart.

The following is the genealogy of the kings of England, from her present Majesty to William the Conqueror:—Queen Victoria is the niece of William the Fourth, who was the brother of George the Fourth, who was the son of George the Third, who was the grandson of George the Second, who was the son of George the First, who was the cousin of Anne, who was the sister-in-law of William the Third, who was the son-in-law of James the Second, who was the brother of charles the Second, who was the son of Charles the First,who was the son of James the First, who was the cousin ofElizabeth, who was the sister of Mary, who was the sister of Edward the Sixth, who was the son of Henry the Eighth, who was the son of Henry the Seventh, who was the cousin of Richard the Third, who was the uncle of Edward the Fifth, who was the son of Edward the Fourth, who was the cousin of Henry the Sixth, who was the son of Henry the Fifth, who was the son of Henry the Fourth, who was the cousin of Richard the Second, who was the grandson of Edward the Third, who was the son of Edward the Second, who was the son of Edward the First, who was the son of Henry the Third, who was the son of John, who was the brother of Richard the First, who was the son of Henry the Second, who was the cousin of Stephen, who was the cousin of Henry the First, who was the brother of William Rufus, who was the son of William the Conqueror.

શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડ•દેશનાં•પાહાદશાવો*

હેઠલ•લખેલી•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડનાં•પાહાદશાવોની•ટીપથી•માલંમ•પડેછેકે•હવડાંની•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડની•રાંણી•જેછેતે•ઉલીઅંમ•કાંનકરર(ફતેહમંદ)નાં•તોખંમની•(એટલેજે•તેહેની•શગી)થાઈ•અને•શ્રી•ઈંગલેંડની•ફતેહ•થાઈઆ•પછેનાં•શઘલા•પાહાદશાઓ•એજ•પરમાંણે•તેહેનાં•તોખમનાં•હતા*આપણાં•જવાંન•વાંચનારાઓ•એ•શઘલા•પાહાદશાઓનાં•નાંમ•એકદંમ•શાંભલેઆથી•ખુશી•થાશે•અને•તે•નાંમોને•પાઠ•કરશે*

શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•પાહાદશાઓનાં•પેહેડી•દરપેહેડીનાં•નાંમની•ટીપ•હેઠલ•લખીછે•તે•હવડાંની•રાંણીથીતે•છેક•ઉલીઅંમ•કાંનકરર•શુધીનીછે* (શ્રી•ઈંગલંડની•ફતેહ•થઆપછે)•શરવેથી•પેહેલો•પાહાદશાહ•ઉલીઅંમ•કાંનકરર(એટલેજે•ફતેહમંદ)હતો•તેહનાં•પછે•તેહેનો•છોકરો•ઉલીઅંમ•રુફુશ•પાહાદશા•થાઓ•તેપછે•તેહનો•ભાઈ•પેહેલો•હેનરી•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•પીતરાઈ•ઈશટીવન•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•પીતરાઈ•બીજો•હેનરી•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•છોકરો•પેહેલો•રીચરડ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•ભાઈ•જાંન•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•છોકરો•તરીજો•હેનરી•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•છોકરો•પેહેલો•એડવરડ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહનો•છોકરો•બીજો•એડવરડ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•છોકરો•તરીજો•એડવરડ•થાઈઓ•પછે•તેહેનાં•છોકરાનો•છોકરો•બીજો•રીચરડ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•પીતરાઈ•ભાઈ•ચોથો•હેનરી•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•છોકરો•પાંચમો•હેનરી•થાઓ•પછે•તેહનો•છોકરો•છઠો•હેનરી•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•પીતરાઈ•ચોથો•એડવરડ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•છોકરો•પાંચમો•એડવરડ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહનો•કાકો•તરીજો•રીચરડ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•પીતરાઈ•શાતમો•હેનરી•થાઓ•પછે•તેહનો•છોકરો•આઠમો•હેનરી•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•છોકરો•છઠો•એડવરડ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેની•બેહેન•મેરી•રાંણી•થાઈ•પછે•તેહેની•બેહેન•ઈલીજબેથ•થાઈ•પછે•તેહેનો•પીતરાઈ•પેહેલો•જેમશ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•છોકરો•પેહેલો•ચારલશ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•છોકરો•બીજો•ચારલશ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•ભાઈ•બીજો•જેમશ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેનો•જમાઈ•તરીજો•ઉલીઅંમ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેની•શારી•આંન•રાંણી•થાઈ•પછે•તેહનો•પીતરાઈ•પેહેલો•જારજ•પછે•તેહેનો•છોકરો•બીજો•જારજ•પછે•તેહનાં•છોકરાનો•છોકરો•તરીજો•જારજ•પછે•તેહનો•છોકરો•ચોથો•જારજ•પછે•તેહેનો•ભાઈ•ચોથો•ઉલીઅંમ•થાઓ•પછે•તેહેની•ભતરીજી•વીકટોરીઆ•રાંણી•શ્રી•ઈંગલંડનાં•તખત•ઉપર•બેઠી•(તેહવડાં•રાજચલાવેછ*)

A TABLE OF KINGS AND QUEENS OF ENGLAND,

FROM THE CONQUEST.

Kings and Queens.	Born A.D.	Reigns began	Reigned Y. M. D.	Reigns when ended.	Age.	Where buried.
William Conq.	1027	1066 Dec. 25	20 8 15	1087 Sept. 9	60	Caen, Norm.
William Rufus	1057	1087 Sept. 26	12 10 7	1100 Aug. 2	43	Winchester
Henry I......	1068	1100 Aug. 5	35 3 27	1135 Dec. 1	67	Reading
Stephen..	1105	1135 Dec. 26	18 10 0	1154 Oct. 25	49	Feversham
THE SAXON LINE RESTORED.						
Henry II....	1133	1154 Dec. 19	34 6 18	1189 July 6	55	Fontevrault
Richard I....	1156	1189 Sept. 3	9 7 3	1199 April 6	43	Fontevrault
John........	1165	1199 May 27	17 4 23	1216 Oct. 19	60	Worcester
Henry III.....	1207	1216 Oct. 28	56 0 19	1272 Nov. 16	65	Westminster
Edward I....	1239	1272 Nov. 20	37 7 17	1307 July 7	67	Westminster
Edward II....	1284	1307 July 8	19 6 12	1327 Jan. 20	43	Gloucester
Edward III...	1312	1327 Jan. 25	50 4 27	1377 June 21	65	Westminster
Richard II....	1366	1377 June 22	22 3 7	1399 Sept. 29	33	Westminster
THE LINE OF LANCASTER.						
Henry IV....	1367	1399 Sept. 30	13 5 20	1413 Mar. 20	46	Canterbury
Henry V.....	1389	1413 Mar. 21	9 5 10	1422 Aug. 31	33	Westminster
Henry VI....	1421	1422 Sept. 1	38 6 3	1461 Mar. 4	49	Windsor
THE LINE OF YORK.						
Edward IV...	1442	1461 Mar. 4	22 1 5	1483 April 9	41	Windsor
Edward V....	1471	1483 April 9	0 2 16	1483 June 25	12	Unknown
Richard III..	1443	1483 June 26	2 1 26	1485 Aug. 22	42	Leicester
THE FAMILIES UNITED.						
Henry VII....	1456	1485 Aug. 22	23 7 30	1509 April 21	52	Westminster
Henry VIII..	1492	1509 April 22	37 9 6	1547 Jan. 28	55	Windsor
Edward VI...	1537	1547 Jan. 28	6 5 9	1553 July 6	15	Westminster
Queen Mary...	1516	1553 July 6	5 4 11	1558 Nov. 17	42	Westminster
Q. Elizabeth...	1533	1558 Nov. 17	44 4 7	1603 Mar. 24	69	Westminster
THE UNION OF THE ENGLISH AND SCOTCH CROWNS.						
James I...	1566	1603 Mar. 24	22 0 3	1625 Mar. 27	58	Westminster
Charles I....	1600	1625 Mar. 27	23 10 3	1649 Jan. 30	48	Windsor
Charles II....	1630	1649 Jan. 30	36 0 7	1685 Feb. 6	54	Westminster
James II......	1633	1685 Feb. 6	3 10 5	1688 Dec. 11	67	Paris.
Will. & Mary.	—	1689 Feb. 13	13 0 20	1702 Mar. 8	—	Westminster
THE UNION OF THE TWO KINGDOMS.*						
Queen Anne...	1665	1702 Mar. 8	12 4 24	1714 Aug. 1	49	Westminster
George I.....	1660	1714 Aug. 1	12 10 10	1727 June 11	67	Hanover
George II.....	1683	1727 June 11	33 4 14	1760 Oct. 25	77	Westminster
George III...	1738	1760 Oct. 25	59 3 4	1820 Jan. 29	82	Windsor
George IV....	1762	1820 Jan. 29	10 4 28	1830 June 26	68	Windsor
William IV..	1765	1830 June 26	6 11 24	1837 June 20	72	
Q. VICTORIA..	1819	1837 June 20	Whom God preserve.			

---

*Ireland united to these Kingdoms, January, 1801.

શ્રી.ઇંગલંડ.દેશની.ફતેહ.થાઆપછેનાં.

શ્રી.ઇંગલંડનાં.પાદશાહો.તથા.રાંણીઓનાં.નાંમનો.કોઠો*

પાદશાહો•તથા રાંણીઓનાં•નાંમ•	તેવો•પેદાથાઈઆ•તેનો•ઇશવી શને*	તેવો•કેવારે•પાદશાહી કરવા•લાગાં•	તેવોઈ•કેટલી•મુદત•શુધી•રાજ•કીધું			તેવોની•પાદશાહી• કેવારે•તમાંમ•થાઇ*	તેવોની•ઉમરનાં•વરશ	તેવોને•કેઇ•જગોઈ•દફ નાંવેઆ•તેનાં•નાંમ*
			વરશ•	માશ•	દાહડા			
ઉલીઅંમ•કાંનકરર	૧૦૨૭	૨૫ મી•ડીજેમબર ૧૦૬૬	૨૦	૮	૧૫	૯ મી•શપટેમબર ૧૦૮૭	૬૦	શ્રી•નારમંડીનાં•પરાંતમાં શ્રી•કેનમાં•
ઉલીઅંમ• રૂપશ•	૧૦૫૭	૨૬ મી•શપટેમબર ૧૦૮૭	૧૨	૧૦	૭	૨ જી•આગશટ• ૧૧૦૦	૪૩	શ્રી•વીનચેશટરમાં•
પેહેલો• હેનરી•	૧૦૬૮	૫ મી• આગશટ• ૧૧૦૦	૩૫	૩	૨૮	૧ લી•ડીજેમબર ૧૧૩૫	૬૭	શ્રી•રીડીગમાં•
ઇશટીવન••••••	૧૧૦૫	૨૬ મી•ડીજેમબર• ૧૧૩૫	૧૮	૧૦	—	૨૫ મી•અકટોબર ૧૧૫૪	૪૯	શ્રી•ફીવરશાંમમાં•
શાકશન.લોકોની.ઓલાદનાં.પાદશાહ્યો.જે.ફરાંશથી.શ્રી. ઇંગલંડનાં.તખ્ત.ઉપર.બેઠા.તેવોનાં.નાંમ*								
બીજો•હેનરી•••	૧૧૩૩	૧૯ મી•ડીજેમબર ૧૧૫૪	૩૪	૬	૧૮	૬ ઠી•જુલાઇ••• ૧૧૮૯	૫૫	શ્રી•ફાંનટેવરાલટમાં•
પેહેલો•રીચરડ•	૧૧૫૬	૩ જી•શપટેમબર• ૧૧૮૯	૯	૭	૩	૬ ઠી•આપરેલ•• ૧૧૯૯	૪૩	શ્રી•ફાંનટેવરાલટમાં•
જાંન••••••••••	૧૧૬૫	૨૭ મી•મેઈ••••• ૧૧૯૯	૧૭	૪	૨૩	૧૯ મી•અકટોબર ૧૨૧૬	૬૦	થી•ઉરશટરમાં•
તરીજો•હેનરી••	૧૨૦૭	૨૮ મી•અકટોબર ૧૨૧૬	૫૬	૦	૧૯	૧૬ મી•નવેમબર• ૧૨૭૨	૬૫	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
પેહેલો•ઈડવરડ•	૧૨૩૯	૨૦ મી•નવેમબર• ૧૨૭૨	૩૭	૭	૧૭	૭ મી•જુલાઈ•• ૧૩૦૭	૬૭	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
બીજો•ઈડવરડ••	૧૨૮૪	૮ મી•જુલાઇ•• ૧૩૦૭	૧૯	૬	૧૨	૨૦ મી•જાંનેવારી• ૧૩૨૭	૪૩	શ્રી•ગલાશટરમાં•
તરીજો•ઈડવરડ•	૧૩૧૨	૨૫ મી•જાંનેવારી• ૧૩૨૭	૫૦	૪	૨૭	૨૧ મી•જુન••••• ૧૩૭૭	૬૫	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
બીજો•રીચરડ•••	૧૩૬૬	૨૨ મી•જુન•••• ૧૩૭૭	૨૨	૩	૭	૨૯ મી•શપટેમબર ૧૩૯૯	૩૩	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
શ્રી.લાનકેઆશટરનાં.ખાંનદાંનની.ઓલાદનાં*								
ચોથો•હેનરી•••	૧૩૬૭	૩૦ મી•શપટેમબર ૧૩૯૯	૧૩	૫	૨૦	૨૦ મી•મારચ••• ૧૪૧૩	૪૬	શ્રી•કાંનટરબરીમાં•
પાંચમો•હેનરી••	૧૩૮૯	૨૧ મી મારચ••• ૧૪૧૩	૯	૫	૧૦	૩૧ મી•આગશટ• ૧૪૨૨	૩૩	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
છઠો•હેનરી•••••	૧૪૨૧	૧ લી•શપટેમબર ૧૪૨૨	૩૮	૬	૩	૪ થી•મારચ••• ૧૪૬૧	૪૯	શ્રી•વીંડશરમાં•
શ્રી.ઇઆરકનાં.ખાંનદાંનની.ઓલાદનાં*								
ચોથો•ઈડવરડ••	૧૪૪૨	૪ થી•મારચ••• ૧૪૬૧	૨૨	૧	૫	૯ મી•આપરેલ• ૧૪૮૩	૪૧	શ્રી•વીંડશર•મધે•
પાંચમો•ઈડવરડ•	૧૪૭૧	૯ મી•આપરેલ•• ૧૪૮૩	૦	૨	૧૬	૨૫ મી•જુન ••• ૧૪૮૩	૧૨	ડેકાંણું•માલમ•નથી•
તરીજો• રીચરડ•	૧૪૪૩	૨૬ મી•જુન•••• ૧૪૮૩	૨	૧	૨૬	૨૨ મી•આગશટ• ૧૪૮૫	૪૨	શ્રી•લેશટર•મધે•
ઈ.બંયે.ખાંનદાંનો.ઈખઠાં.થઈઆં.તેહની.ઓલાદનાં*								
શાતમો•હેનરી••	૧૪૫૬	૨૨ મી•આગશટ• ૧૪૮૫	૨૩	૭	૩૦	૨૧ મી•આપરેલ• ૧૫૦૯	૫૨	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
આઠમો• હેનરી•	૧૪૯૨	૨૨ મી•આપરેલ• ૧૫૦૯	૩૭	૯	૬	૨૮ મી•જાંનેવારી• ૧૫૪૭	૫૫	શ્રી•વીંડશરમાં•
છઠો•ઈડવરડ•••	૧૫૩૭	૨૮ મી•જાંનેવારી• ૧૫૪૭	૬	૫	૯	૬ ઠી•જુલાઇ•• ૧૫૫૩	૧૫	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
મેરી•રાંણી••••	૧૫૧૬	૬ ઠી•જુલાઇ••• ૧૫૫૩	૫	૪	૧૧	૧૭ મી•નવેમબર• ૧૫૫૮	૪૨	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
ઇલીજેબેથરાંણી•	૧૫૩૩	૧૭ મી•નવેમબર• ૧૫૫૮	૪૪	૪	૭	૨૪ મી•મારચ••• ૧૬૦૩	૬૯	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
શ્રી.ઇંગલેંડનાં.તથા.શ્રી.ઇશકાટલેંડનાં.રાજ.ઈખઠાં.થઈઆં*								
પેહેલો•જેમશ•••	૧૫૬૬	૨૪ મી•મારચ•••• ૧૬૦૩	૨૨	૦	૩	૨૭ મી•મારચ••• ૧૬૨૫	૫૮	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
પેહેલો•ચારલશ••	૧૬૦૦	૨૭ મી•મારચ•••• ૧૬૨૫	૨૩	૧૦	૩	૩૦ મી•જાંનેવારી• ૧૬૪૯	૪૮	શ્રી•વીંડશરમાં••••••
બીજો•ચારલશ••	૧૬૩૦	૩૦ મી•જાંનેવારી• ૧૬૪૯	૩૬	૦	૭	૬ ઠી•ફેબરવારી ૧૬૮૫	૫૪	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં
બીજો•જેમશ•••	૧૬૩૩	૬ ઠી•ફેબરવારી ૧૬૮૫	૩	૧૦	૫	૧૧ મી•ડીજેમબર ૧૬૮૮	૬૭	શ્રી•પેરીશમાં••••••
ઉલીઅંમતથા•મેરી	—	૧૩ મી•ફેબરવારી ૧૬૮૯	૧૩	૦	૨૦	૮ મી•મારચ••• ૧૭૦૨	—	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં
શ્રી.ગરેટ.બરીટેન.†તથા.શ્રી.આઈરલેંડનાં.બંયે.રાજ.ઈખઠાં.થઈઆં*								
આંન•રાંણી••••	૧૬૬૫	૮ મી•મારચ•••• ૧૭૦૨	૧૨	૪	૨૪	૧ લી•આગશટ• ૧૭૧૪	૪૯	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
પેહેલો•જારજ•••	૧૬૬૦	૧ લી•આગશટ• ૧૭૧૪	૧૨	૧૦	૧૦	૧૧ મી•જુન•••• ૧૭૨૭	૬૭	શ્રી•હાંનોવરમાં•
બીજો•જારજ•••	૧૬૮૩	૧૧ મી•જુન••••• ૧૭૨૭	૩૩	૪	૧૪	૨૫ મી•અકટોબર ૧૭૬૦	૭૭	શ્રી•વેશટમીનીશટરમાં•
તરીજો•જારજ•••	૧૭૩૮	૨૫ મી•અકટોબર ૧૭૬૦	૫૯	૩	૪	૨૯ મી•જાંનેવારી• ૧૮૨૦	૮૨	શ્રી•વીંડશરમાં•
ચોથો•જારજ••••	૧૭૬૨	૨૯ મી•જાંનેવારી• ૧૮૨૦	૧૦	૪	૨૮	૨૬ મી•જુન•••• ૧૮૩૦	૬૮	શ્રી• વીંડશરમાં•
ચોથો•ઉલીઅંમ•	૧૭૬૫	૨૬ મી•જુન•••• ૧૮૩૦	૬	૧૧	૨૪	૨૦ મી•જુન•••• ૧૮૩૭	૭૨	
વીકટોરીઆરાંણી	૧૮૧૯	૨૦ મી•જુન•••• ૧૮૩૭	કેને• ખોદાઈ•શલાંમત•રાખે*					

† ઈ•રાજની• શાથે• શ્રી• આઈરલેંડનું•રાજબી•શને• ૧૮૦૧ નાં•જાંનેવારી•મહીનાંમાં•જોડાઈઉં*

ERRATA.

Page.	Line.				
41	8	for	alter	read	altar
92	6		aud		and
150	15		hou		thou
160	6		io		to
161	10		so		to
161	10		contradition		contradiction
162	21		rightul		rightful
168	6		an		all
169	1		os		so
170	9		fforded		afforded
175	23		dia		did
188	10		She		The
202	14		decame		became
208	18		Lnglish		English
223	5		them, them,		them,
226	19		meditaeted		meditated
236	36	after	the,	insert	other
257	19	for	wew	read	new
291	23		put		but
293	1		193		293
301	4		is		his
303	15		is		his
311	21		momen		moment
320	33		tuey		they
323	26		Yon		You
336	3		King		Queen

આ.પુશતકમાં.બાજે.જગોઈ.છાપતી
વેલાઈ.કાંઇક.ચુકો.રહીગઇછે.તે.
શુધારીને.ફેઠલ.પરગટ.કરીછે-*

શાફે*	શતર*	અશુધ*	શુધ*
૭	૭	ફિ.બરટ	ફિબરટ
૭	૨૪	ફિરોપ	ઇઉરોપ
૮	૨૦	શીનારમંડી	કે.શ્રી.નારમંડી
૯	૨૮	શ્રી.કેશટીગાશ	શ્રી.કેશટીગાશ

શફે*	શતર*	અશુધ*	શુધ*
૯	૯	બુતપરશ	બુતપરશાત
૧૦		ઈ•શરૂમાં•નોટ•ગેલીછે•તેહેને• ૯ માં•શરૂની•શેવટે•વાંચવી•	
૧૬	૨૨	તે•ઐઈ	ઐઈ
૧૭	૨૫	તેવો•વધુતો•ઈમ•	વધુતો•ફરી
૧૯	૨	તેહેને	તે
૧૯	૨૨	તેહેને	તેણે
૨૫	૬	ગુદરને	શાગુદરને
૨૫	૧૧	તાંફાંફાંજ	તાંફાંજ
૩૦	૬	લાઈઅકનો•હતો	લાઈક•નહી•હતો
૩૦	૧૮	મેટી લેડા	મેંટીલડા
૩૦	૨૫	દશદી	તશદી
૩૧	૩	ગુમશ્તાંમથી	મુમશ્તાંમથી
૩૧	૧૪	માંડની	માડની
૩૧	૨૬	તે•જેવારે•કે	આ•જેવારે•તેણે
૩૨	૨૫	ઈણે	ઈ
૩૨	૨૮	શલાલો*	શવાબો*
૩૬	૨૨	તેઉરથી	તે ઉપરથી
૩૮	૯	ઈશટીવેનશાંન	ઈશટીવેન•શને
૩૮	૧૨	નીશયેનો•હતો	નાશયે•નહી•હતો
૪૭	૨	કેલું	કેવું
૪૯	૧૩	તેહેને	તેણે
૫૩	૨૧	શ્રી•આશટરીઆંનાં•ડીઉ•ક•	શ્રી•આશટરીઆનો•ડીઉક
૫૩	૨૮	શારંગી•વાલાઈ	શારંગી•વાલો
૫૪	૧	ડીઉ•ક	ડીઉક
૫૪	૪	નીમક•હલાલી	નીમકહલાલ
૫૫	૨૦	શ્રૂં	ઐશ્રૂં*
૫૫	૨૬	દીલશ	દીવશ
૫૫	૨૮	જીરૂગેલમાં	જીરૂશલેમમાં
૬૮	૧૮	શીવાઈ	તે•શીવાઈ
૬૮	૨૦	લોકોનો	લોકોને
૭૧	૮	કોમમ	કોકેમ

પાને*	લીટી*	અશુદ્ધ*	શુદ્ધ*
૭૧	૧૩	ગેલવાં	ગેલવવા
૭૧	૧૪	ગેલવાની	ગેલવવાની
૭૨	૫	વરાનો	વરશનો
૮૯	૧	થતા	તથા
૧૦૧	૧	પગિાજ	ઘગિાજ
૧૦૧	૨૦	દપૂવનાવાનાં	દપૂનાવવાનાં
૧૧૭	૨૩	ધીમી	ઘીમી
૧૧૭	૨૭	ધુમાડાની	ઘુમાડાની
૧૨૬	૧૧	બીજા	બાજાનાં
૧૩૭	૮	બેડપૂરટનાં	બેડપૂરડનાં
૧૪૦	૧૫	શાં કલારેનશાનાં	કલારેનશનાં
૧૪૧	૧	લીધું	રાજ• લીધું
૧૪૧	૨૫	લાંનકેશટરનો	ડ્યારકનો
૧૪૧	૨૯	ડરમાંકનાં	ડ્યારકનાં
૧૪૧	૩૨	ઉકારને•1	ઉડારીને
૧૪૧	૩૩	કરાવા	કરાવવાની
૧૪૬	૨૩	કેનાં	જેકેનાં
૧૪૯	૩	શું	હું
૧૫૫	૨૩	શેકેરમાં	શેકેરનાં
૧૬૪	૧૯	પાદશાહઈ	પાદશાહ કે
૧૬૫	૧૮	કેવડાં	જે• વેલાઈ
૧૮૦	૧૧	પેપીશટી	પીશટ
૧૮૦	૧૩	ઉલશીનાં રાજી	ઉલશાં•નારાજ
૧૮૩	૨૦	પાદશાહગાં•રાજનાં	પાદશાહનાં•રાજમાં
૧૮૩	૨૨	સુરંગમાં	સુરંગ
૧૮૫	૩	કેપછે	પછવાડેથી
૧૮૫	૧૮	વીવે	વાએ
૧૯૨	૬	જેવોઈ	જેવો
૧૯૪	૨૫	કરવોપડે	કરવો પડેઓ
૧૯૭	૩૦	કેવડાં	જે• વેલાઈ
૧૯૮	૧	સાકી	ફીસા

શા઼*	શાતર*	આશૂધ*	શૂધ*
૨૦૫	૧૩	શ્રૂધેરાઈરાની	શ્રૂધરાઈની
૨૧૭	૨૩	ઈશાપેની	ઈશાપેનની
૨૩૯	૧૪	ચુપક્રીધે	ચુપક્રાદો
૨૪૨	૨૮	નેવો	નેવોઈ
૨૬૧	૧૭	ઠાગારા	ડગારા
૨૬૩	૫	લધારવા	વધારવા
૨૬૩	૯	મશાલતાંઆથી	મશાલતીઆ॰શ્રી
૨૬૪	૪	શેટ॰લી	રોટલી
૨૭૬	૭	ખીગાકેઉં	ખીગાડેઉં
૨૮૫	૧	છાડક્રાંપ॰ાછાં	છાડક્રાં॰પાછાં
૨૯૬	૧૦	અમદલારને	અમલદારને
૨૯૭	૨	ચીજોકું નું	ચીજોનું
૨૯૭	૮	ચુલક્રા	ચુલક્રા
૨૯૯	૧૦	આંાગ	આંન
૩૧૩	૩	તમીરૂ	તમારૂં
૩૧૩	૫	વરશારગો	વરશાગો
૩૧૪	૧૦	ચલરાતાં	ધળરાતાં
૩૧૫	૪	ક્રખરચંદનીશાથે	ક્રમરચંદની॰શાથે
૩૧૫	૧૫	ક્રલોઆરટી	ક્રરોઆરટી
૩૧૫	૨૧	ઈગાલીશે	ઈંગાલીશ
૩૧૬	૪	છેતાલી	છેતાલીશ
૩૧૭	૬	શી	શ્રી
૩૨૬	૨૬	ક્લાઈવે	ક્લાઈવ
૩૩૧	૨૫	ખોડુ	ખોડું
૩૩૧	૨૦	અમશાક્રા	અમશાથક્રા
૩૩૧	૨૯	સંગારજો	સગારજો

00035401

Digitized with financial assistance from

H T Parekh
FOUNDATION

An Initiative by
HDFC
WITH YOU, RIGHT THROUGH

on 08 January, 2019